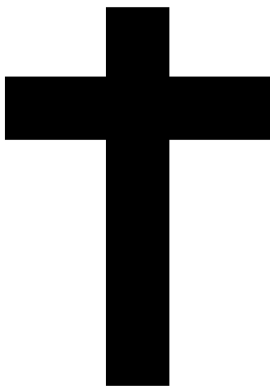


# Wycliffe's Bible with Modern Spelling



English: Wycliffe's Bible Modern Spelling (with  
Deuterocanon)

# Wycliffe's Bible with Modern Spelling

## English: Wycliffe's Bible Modern Spelling (with Deuterocanon)

Copyright © 2001,2010,2011,2012,2013,2015 Terry Noble

Language: English

Dialect: Archaic

Translation by: Terry Noble

Wycliffe's Bible with Modern Spelling, was made in response to requests from readers who wanted my Wycliffe's Old and New Testaments and Apocrypha in one volume. Printing limitations dictated the number of pages available to me and the letter size. In my previous books, Wycliffe's Bible, Wycliffe's Old Testament, Vols. 1 amp 2, Wycliffe's New Testament, and Wycliffe's Apocrypha, I have tens of thousands of rewritten verses, presented in parentheses "( )", to provide help in comprehending the 14th century Middle English vocabulary and grammar. In this present volume, with space at a premium, those "helps" had to be eliminated, to make room for the text of the Apocrypha.

This translation is made available to you under the terms of the Creative Commons Attribution-Noncommercial-No Derivatives license 4.0.

You may share and redistribute this Bible translation or extracts from it in any format, provided that:

You include the above copyright and source information.

You do not sell this work for a profit.

You do not change any of the words or punctuation of the Scriptures.

Pictures included with Scriptures and other documents on this site are licensed just for use with those Scriptures and documents. For other uses, please contact the respective copyright owners.

2019-09-26

---

PDF generated using Haiola and XeLaTeX on 18 Apr 2025 from source files dated 10 Feb 2022

fa03c333-4040-5dde-87a8-77f6fa6fbb72

Contents

MATTHEW . . . . .	1
MARK . . . . .	63
LUKE . . . . .	102
JOHN . . . . .	169
DEEDS OF APOSTLES . . . . .	218
ROMANS . . . . .	281
1ST CORINTHIANS . . . . .	306
2ND CORINTHIANS . . . . .	331
GALATIANS . . . . .	347
EPHESIANS . . . . .	356
PHILIPPIANS . . . . .	364
COLOSSIANS . . . . .	370
1ST THESSALONIANS . . . . .	376
2ND THESSALONIANS . . . . .	381
1ST TIMOTHY . . . . .	384
2ND TIMOTHY . . . . .	391
TITUS . . . . .	396
PHILEMON . . . . .	399
HEBREWS . . . . .	401
JAMES . . . . .	419
1ST PETER . . . . .	426
2ND PETER . . . . .	433
1ST JOHN . . . . .	438
2ND JOHN . . . . .	445
3RD JOHN . . . . .	446
JUDE . . . . .	447
APOCALYPSE of JOHN . . . . .	449

## MATTHEW

<sup>1</sup> The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

<sup>2</sup> Abraham begat Isaac. Isaac begat Jacob. Jacob begat Judah and his brethren.

<sup>3</sup> Judah begat Perez and Zara, of Thamar. Perez begat Esrom. Esrom begat Aram.

<sup>4</sup> Aram begat Amminadab. Ammin-adab begat Naasson. Naasson begat Salmon.

<sup>5</sup> Salmon begat Boaz, of Rachab. Boaz begat Obed, of Ruth. Obed begat Jesse.

<sup>6</sup> Jesse begat David the king. David the king begat Solomon, of her that was Uriah's *wife*.

<sup>7</sup> Solomon begat Rehoboam. Reho-boam begat Abia. Abia begat Asa.

<sup>8</sup> Asa begat Jehoshaphat. Jehosha-phat begat Joram. Joram begat Uzziah.

<sup>9</sup> Uzziah begat Joatham. Joatham begat Ahaz. Ahaz begat Hezekiah.

<sup>10</sup> Hezekiah begat Manasseh. Manas-seh begat Amon. Amon begat Josiah.

<sup>11</sup> Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, into the transmigration of Babylon.

<sup>12</sup> And after the transmigration of Babylon, Jechoniah begat Salathiel. Salathiel begat Zerubbabel.

<sup>13</sup> Zerubbabel begat Abiud. Abiud begat Eliakim. Eliakim begat Azor.

<sup>14</sup> Azor begat Zadok. Zadok begat Achim. Achim begat Elihud.

<sup>15</sup> Elihud begat Eleazar. Eleazar begat Matthan. Matthan begat Jacob.

<sup>16</sup> Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom Jesus was born, that is called Christ.

<sup>17</sup> And so all the generations from Abraham to David *be* fourteen generations, and from David to the transmigration of Babylon *be* fourteen generations, and from the transmigration of Babylon to Christ *be* fourteen generations.

<sup>18</sup> But the generation of Christ was thus. When Mary, the mother of Jesus, was espoused to Joseph, before that they came together, she was found having of the Holy Ghost in the womb.

<sup>19</sup> And Joseph, her husband, for he was rightful [*or a just man*], and would not publish her, he would privily have left her.

<sup>20</sup> But while he thought these things, lo! the angel of the Lord appeared to him in sleep, and said, Joseph, the son of David, do not thou dread to take Mary, thy wife; for that thing that is born in her is of the Holy Ghost.

<sup>21</sup> And she shall bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for he shall make his people safe from their sins.

<sup>22</sup> For all this thing was done, that it should be fulfilled, that was said of the Lord by a prophet, saying,

<sup>23</sup> Lo! a virgin shall have in [*the*] womb, and she shall bear a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, that is to say, God with us.

<sup>24</sup> And Joseph rose [*up*] from sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took *Mary*, his wife;

<sup>25</sup> and he knew her not, till she had born her first begotten son, and he called his name Jesus.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of king Herod, lo! astronomers, [*or kings, or wise men*], came from the east to Jerusalem,

<sup>2</sup> and said, Where is he, that is born [*the*] king of Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and we have come to worship him.

<sup>3</sup> But king Herod heard, and was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

<sup>4</sup> And he gathered together all the princes of priests, and scribes of the people, and inquired of them, where Christ should be born.

<sup>5</sup> And they said to him, In Bethle-hem of Judea; for so it is written by a prophet,

<sup>6</sup> And thou, Bethlehem, the land of Judah, art not the least among the princes of Judah; for of thee a duke shall go out, that shall govern my people Israel.

<sup>7</sup> Then Herod called privily the astronomers, [*or the kings*], and learned busily of them the time of the star that appeared to them.

<sup>8</sup> And he sent them into Bethlehem, and said, Go ye, and ask ye busily of the child, and when ye have found, tell ye it to me, that I also come, and worship him.

<sup>9</sup> And when they had heard the king, they went forth. And lo! the star, that they saw in the east, went before them, till it came, and stood above, where the child was.

<sup>10</sup> And they saw the star, and joyed with a full great joy.

<sup>11</sup> And they entered into the house, and found the child with Mary, his mother; and they felled down, and worshipped him. And when they had opened their treasures, they offered to him gifts, gold, incense, and myrrh.

<sup>12</sup> And when they had taken an answer in sleep, that they should not turn again to Herod, they turned again by another way into their *[own]* country.

<sup>13</sup> And when they were gone, lo! the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in sleep, and said, Rise up, and take the child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there, till that I say to thee; for it is to come, that Herod seek the child, to destroy him.

<sup>14</sup> And Joseph rose *[up]*, and took the child and his mother by night, and went into Egypt,

<sup>15</sup> and he was there till the death of Herod; that it should be fulfilled, that was said of the Lord by the prophet, saying, From Egypt I have called my son.

<sup>16</sup> Then Herod seeing that he was scorned, *either deceived*, of the astronomers, *[or the kings]*, was full wroth; and he sent, and slew all the children, that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years age and within, after the time that he had inquired of the astronomers *[or that he had sought out of the kings]*.

<sup>17</sup> Then it was fulfilled, that was said by Jeremy, the prophet, saying,

<sup>18</sup> A voice was heard on high, weeping and much wailing, Rachel beweeeping her sons, and she would not be comforted, for they be nought *[or they be not]*.

<sup>19</sup> But when Herod was dead, lo! the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in sleep in Egypt,

<sup>20</sup> and said, Rise up, and take the child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they that sought the life of the child be dead.

<sup>21</sup> Joseph rose *[up]*, and took the child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

<sup>22</sup> And he heard that Archelaus reigned in Judea for Herod, his father, and dreaded to go thither. And he was warned in sleep, and went into the parts of Galilee;

<sup>23</sup> and *[he]* came, and dwelt in a city, that is called Nazareth, that it should be fulfilled, that was said by prophets, For he shall be called a Nazarene.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> In those days John Baptist came, and preached in the desert of Judea,

<sup>2</sup> and said, Do ye penance, for the kingdom of heaven shall *[come]* nigh.

<sup>3</sup> For this is he, of whom it is said by Isaiah, the prophet, saying, A voice of a crier in desert, *[or A voice of a man crying in desert]*, Make ye ready the ways of the Lord; make ye right the paths of him.

<sup>4</sup> And this John had clothing *[or a cloth]* of camel's hairs, and a girdle of skin about his loins; and his meat was honeysuckles *[or locusts]*, and honey of the wood.

<sup>5</sup> Then Jerusalem went out to him, and all Judea, and all the country about Jordan;

<sup>6</sup> and they were washed *[or christened]* of him in Jordan, acknowledging their sins.

<sup>7</sup> But he saw many of the Pharisees and of Sadducees coming to his baptism, and said to them, Generation of adders, who showed to you to flee from the wrath that is to come?

<sup>8</sup> Therefore do ye worthy fruits of penance,

<sup>9</sup> and do not ye say within you, We have Abraham to our father *[or We have the father Abraham]*; for I say to you, that God is mighty to raise up of these stones the sons of Abraham.

<sup>10</sup> And now the ax is put to the root of the tree; therefore every tree that maketh not good fruit, shall be cut down, and shall be cast into the fire.

<sup>11</sup> I wash you in water, into penance; but he that shall come after me is stronger than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear; he shall baptize *[or christen]* you in the Holy Ghost, and *[in]* fire.

<sup>12</sup> Whose winnowing cloth, *[or tool, or fan]*, is in his hand, and he shall fully cleanse his cornfloor, and shall gather his wheat into his barn; but the chaff he shall burn with fire that may not be quenched *[or that is unquench-able]*.

<sup>13</sup> Then Jesus came from Galilee into Jordan to John, to be baptized of him.

<sup>14</sup> And John forbade him, and said, I owe to be baptized of thee, and thou comest to me?

<sup>15</sup> But Jesus answered, and said to him, Suffer now, for thus it falleth to us to fulfill all rightwiseness. Then *John* suffered him *[or let him]*.

<sup>16</sup> And when Jesus was baptized, anon he went up from the water; and lo! heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God coming down as a dove, and coming *[up]* on him;

<sup>17</sup> and lo! a voice from heaven, saying, This is my *[be]* loved Son, in which I have well pleased to me.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Then Jesus was led of a spirit into desert, to be tempted of the fiend [*or the devil*].

<sup>2</sup> And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward he hungered.

<sup>3</sup> And the tempter came nigh, and said to him, If thou be God's Son [*or If thou art the Son of God*], say that these stones be made loaves.

<sup>4</sup> Which answered, and said to him, It is written, Not only in bread liveth man, but in each word that cometh forth of God's mouth, [*or A man liveth not in bread alone, but in every word that cometh forth from the mouth of God*].

<sup>5</sup> Then the fiend [*or the devil*] took him into the holy city, and setted him on the pinnacle of the temple,

<sup>6</sup> and said to him, If thou art God's Son, send thee adown, [*or If thou art the Son of God, send thee down*]; for it is written, That to his angels he commanded of thee, and they shall take thee in hands, lest peradventure thou hurt thy foot at a stone.

<sup>7</sup> Again Jesus said to him, It is written, Thou shalt not tempt thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*].

<sup>8</sup> Again the fiend [*or the devil*] took him [*up*] into a full high hill, and showed to him all the realms of the world, and the joy [*or the glory*] of them;

<sup>9</sup> and said to him, All these I shall give to thee, if thou fall down and worship me.

<sup>10</sup> Then Jesus said to him, Go, Satan; for it is written, Thou shalt worship thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*], and to him alone thou shalt serve.

<sup>11</sup> Then the fiend [*or the devil*] left him; and lo! angels came nigh, and served to him.

<sup>12</sup> But when Jesus had heard that John was taken, he went into Galilee.

<sup>13</sup> And he left the city of Nazareth, and came, and dwelt in the city of Capernaum, beside the sea, in the coasts of Zebulun and Naphtali,

<sup>14</sup> that it should be fulfilled, that was said by Isaiah, the prophet, saying,

<sup>15</sup> The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, the way of the sea over Jordan, of Galilee of heathen men,

<sup>16</sup> the people that walked [*or that dwelt*] in darkneses saw great light, and while men sat in the country of [*the*] shadow of death, light arose to them.

<sup>17</sup> From that time Jesus began to preach, and [*to*] say, Do ye penance, for the kingdom of heavens shall come nigh [*or the realm of heaven hath nighed*].



<sup>18</sup> And Jesus walked beside the sea of Galilee, and saw two brethren, Simon, that is called Peter, and Andrew, his brother, casting nets into the sea; for they were fishers.

<sup>19</sup> And he said to them, Come ye after me, and I shall make you to be made fishers of men.

<sup>20</sup> And anon they left their nets, and pursued him.

<sup>21</sup> And he went forth from that place, and saw twain other brethren, James of Zebedee, and John, his brother, in a ship with Zebedee, their father, amending their nets, and he called them.

<sup>22</sup> And anon they left the nets and the father, and pursued him.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in the synagogues of them, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every languor, [*for all sorrow, or ache*], and each sickness among the people.

<sup>24</sup> And his fame went into all Syria; and they brought to him all that were at mal-ease, and that were taken with diverse languors [*or sorrows*], and torments, and them that had fiends [*or devils*], and lunatic men, and men in [*the*] palsy, and he healed them.

<sup>25</sup> And there pursued him much people of Galilee, and of Decapolis, and of Jerusalem, and of Judea, and of beyond Jordan.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus, seeing the people, went up into the hill; and when he was set [*or had sat*], his disciples came to him.

<sup>2</sup> And he opened his mouth, and taught them, and said,

<sup>3</sup> Blessed *be* poor *men* in spirit, for the kingdom of heavens is theirs. [*Blessed be the poor in spirit, for the kingdom of heaven is theirs.*]

<sup>4</sup> Blessed *be* mild *men*, for they shall wield the earth.

<sup>5</sup> Blessed *be* they that mourn, for they shall be comforted.

<sup>6</sup> Blessed *be* they that hunger and thirst rightwiseness, for they shall be fulfilled.

<sup>7</sup> Blessed *be* merciful *men* [*+or Blessed be the merciful*], for they shall get mercy.

<sup>8</sup> Blessed *be* they that be of clean heart, for they shall see God.

<sup>9</sup> Blessed *be* peaceable *men*, for they shall be called God's children. [*+Blessed be the peaceable, for they shall be called the sons of God.*]

<sup>10</sup> Blessed *be* they that suffer persecution for rightwiseness, for the kingdom of heavens [*or the kingdom of heaven*] is theirs.

<sup>11</sup> Blessed be ye, when men shall curse you, and shall pursue you, and shall say all evil against you lying, for me.

<sup>12</sup> Joy ye, and be ye glad, for your meed is plenteous in heavens; for so they have pursued also prophets that were before you.

<sup>13</sup> Ye be salt of the earth; that if the salt vanish away, wherein shall it be salted? To nothing it is worth over, but that it be cast out, and be defouled of men.

<sup>14</sup> Ye be [*the*] light of the world; a city set on an hill may not be hid;

<sup>15</sup> nor men tendeth a lantern, and putteth it under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that it give light to all that be in the house.

<sup>16</sup> So shine your light before men, that they see your good works, and glorify your Father that is in heavens.

<sup>17</sup> Do not ye deem, [*or guess*], that I came to undo [*or to destroy*] the law, or the prophets; I came not to undo [*or to destroy*] the law, but to fulfill.

<sup>18</sup> Forsooth I say to you, till heaven and earth pass, one letter, [*or one i, that is, the least letter*], or one tittle shall not pass from the law, till all things be done.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore he that breaketh one of these least commandments, and teach-eth thus men, shall be called the least in the realm of heavens; but he that doeth, and teacheth, shall be called great in the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>20</sup> And I say to you, that but your rightwiseness be more plenteous than of scribes and of Pharisees, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>21</sup> Ye have heard that it was said to old men, Thou shalt not slay; and he that slayeth, shall be guilty to the doom.

<sup>22</sup> But I say to you, that each man that is wroth to his brother, shall be guilty to doom; and he that saith to his brother, Fie!, [*that is, a word of scorn*], shall be guilty to the council; but he that saith Fool, [*that is, a word of despising*], shall be guilty to the fire of hell.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore if thou offerest thy gift at the altar, and there thou bethinkest, that thy brother hath somewhat [*or something*] against thee,

<sup>24</sup> leave there thy gift before the altar, and go first to be reconciled to thy brother, and then thou shalt come, and shalt offer thy gift.

<sup>25</sup> Be thou consenting to thine adversary soon, while thou art in the way with him, lest peradventure thine adversary take thee to the doomsman [*or the judge*], and the doomsman take thee to the minister, and thou be sent into prison.

26 Truly I say to thee, Thou shalt not go out from thence, till thou yield the last farthing.

27 Ye have heard that it was said to old men, Thou shalt not do lechery.

28 But I say to you, that every man that seeth a woman [*for*] to covet her, hath now done lechery by her in his heart.

29 That if thy right eye cause thee to stumble, pull it out, and cast *it* from thee; for it speedeth to thee, that one of thy members perish, than that all thy body go into hell.

30 And if thy right hand cause thee to stumble, cut it away, and cast [*it*] from thee; for it speedeth to thee, that one of thy members perish, than that all thy body go into hell.

31 And it hath been said, Whoever leaveth his wife, give he to her a libel [*for a little book*] of forsaking.

32 But I say to you, that every man that leaveth his wife, except [*the*] cause of fornication, maketh her to do lechery, and he that weddeth the forsaken *wife*, doeth adultery.

33 Again ye have heard, that it was said to old men, Thou shalt not forswear, but thou shalt yield thine oaths to the Lord.

34 But I say to you, that ye swear not for anything; neither by heaven, for it is the throne of God;

35 neither by the earth, for it is the stool of his feet; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of a great [*for the great*] king;

36 neither thou shalt swear by thine head, for thou mayest not make one hair white, or black;

37 but be your word, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; and that that is more than these, is of evil.

38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth.

39 But I say to you, that ye against-stand not an evil *man*, [*for to not against-stand evil*]; but if any smite thee in the right cheek, show [*for give*] to him also the other;

40 and to him that will strive with thee in doom, and take away thy coat, leave thou to him also thy mantle [*for thine over-cloth*];

41 and whoever constraineth thee a thousand paces, go thou with him other twain.

42 Give thou to him that asketh of thee, and turn thou not away from him that will borrow of thee.

43 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

44 But I say to you, love ye your enemies, do ye well to them that hate you, and pray ye for them that pursue, and slander you;

<sup>45</sup> that ye be the sons of your Father that is in heavens, that maketh his sun to rise upon good and evil men, and raineth on just men and unjust.

<sup>46</sup> For if ye love them that love you, what meed shall ye have? whether [*the*] publicans do not this thing?

<sup>47</sup> And if ye greet your brethren only, what shall ye do more[*over*]? do not heathen men [*or pagans*] this?

<sup>48</sup> Therefore be ye perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Take heed, that ye do not your rightwiseness before men, to be seen of them, else ye shall have no meed at your Father that is in heavens.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore when thou doest alms, do not thou trumpet before thee, as hypocrites do in synagogues and streets, that they be worshipped of men; soothly I say to you, they have received their meed.

<sup>3</sup> But when thou doest alms, know not thy left hand what thy right hand doeth,

<sup>4</sup> that thine alms be in huddles, and thy Father that seeth in huddles, shall requite [*or yield*] to thee.

<sup>5</sup> And when ye pray, ye shall not be as hypocrites, that love to pray standing in synagogues and [*in*] corners of streets, to be seen of men [*or that they be seen of men*]; truly I say to you, they have received their meed.

<sup>6</sup> But when thou shalt pray, enter into thy couch, and when the door is shut, pray thy Father in huddles, and thy Father that seeth in huddles, shall yield to thee.

<sup>7</sup> But in praying do not ye speak much, as heathen men do, for they guess that they be heard in their much speech.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore do not ye be made like to them, for your Father knoweth what is need[*ful*] to you, before that ye ask him.

<sup>9</sup> And thus ye shall pray, Our Father that art in heavens, hallowed be thy name;

<sup>10</sup> thy kingdom come to; be thy will done in earth as it is in heaven [*or thy will be done as in heaven and in earth*];

<sup>11</sup> give to us this day our each day's bread;

<sup>12</sup> and forgive to us our debts, as we forgive to our debtors;

<sup>13</sup> and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. Amen.

<sup>14</sup> For if ye forgive to men their sins, your heavenly Father shall forgive to you your trespasses [*or your sins*].

<sup>15</sup> Soothly if ye forgive not to men [*the sins of them*], neither your Father shall forgive to you your sins.

16 But when ye fast, do not ye be made as hypocrites sorrowful, for they deface themselves, [*or they put their faces out of kindly terms*], to seem fasting to men; truly I say to you, they have received their meed.

17 But when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face,

18 that thou be not seen fasting to men, but to thy Father that is in huddles, and thy Father that seeth in privy [*or in huddles*], shall yield to thee.

19 Do not ye treasure to you treasures [*here*] in earth, where rust and moth destroyeth, and where thieves delve out, and steal;

20 but gather ye to you treasures in heaven, where neither rust nor moth destroyeth, and where thieves delve not out, nor steal.

21 For where thy treasure is, there also thine heart is.

22 The lantern of thy body is thine eye; if thine eye be simple, all thy body shall be light-full;

23 but if thine eye be wayward, all thy body shall be dark-*[full]*. If then the light that is in thee be darknesses, how great shall those darknesses be?

24 No man may serve two lords, for either he shall hate the one, and love the tother; either he shall sustain the one, and despise the other. Ye may not serve God and riches.

25 Therefore I say to you, that ye be not busy to your life, what ye shall eat; nor to your body, with what ye shall be clothed. Whether life is not more than meat, and the body more than the cloth?

26 Behold ye the fowls of the air, for they sow not, neither reap, neither gather into barns; and your Father of heaven feedeth them. Whether ye be not more worthy than they?

27 But who of you thinking may put [*or may add*] to his stature one cubit?

28 And of clothing what be ye busy? Behold ye the lilies of the field, how they wax. They travail not, neither they spin;

29 and I say to you, that Solomon in all his glory was not covered as one of these.

30 And if God clotheth thus the hay of the field, that today is, and tomorrow is cast into an oven [*or is sent into the furnace*], how much more you of little faith?

31 Therefore do not ye be busy, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, With what thing shall we be covered?

32 For heathen men seek all these things; and your Father knoweth, that ye have need to all these things.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his rightwiseness, and all these things shall be cast to you.

<sup>34</sup> Therefore do not ye be busy into the morrow, for the morrow shall be busy to itself; for it sufficeth to the day his own malice.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> Do not ye deem, that ye be not deemed;

<sup>2</sup> for in what doom ye deem, ye shall be deemed, and in what measure ye mete, it shall be meted again to you.

<sup>3</sup> But what seest thou a little mote in the eye of thy brother, and seest not a beam in thine own eye?

<sup>4</sup> Or how sayest thou to thy brother, Brother, suffer [*that*] I shall do out a mote from thine eye, and lo! a beam is in thine own eye?

<sup>5</sup> Hypocrite, first do out the beam of thine eye or do thou out first the beam of thine own eye, and then thou shalt see to do out the mote of the eye of thy brother.

<sup>6</sup> Do not ye give holy thing to hounds, neither cast ye your margarites before swine, lest peradventure they defoul them with their feet, and *the hounds* be turned, and tear you all to pieces.

<sup>7</sup> Ask ye, and it shall be given to you; seek ye, and ye shall find; knock ye, and it shall be opened to you.

<sup>8</sup> For each that asketh, taketh; and he that seeketh, findeth; and it shall be opened to him, that knocketh.

<sup>9</sup> What man of you is, that if his son ask him bread, whether he will take to him a stone?

<sup>10</sup> Or if he ask [*a*] fish, whether he will give [*to*] him an adder?

<sup>11</sup> Therefore if ye, when ye be evil men, know how to give good gifts to your sons, how much more your Father that is in heavens shall give good things to men that ask him?

<sup>12</sup> Therefore all things, whatever things ye will that men do to you, do ye to them, for this is the law and the prophets.

<sup>13</sup> Enter ye by the strait gate; for the gate that leadeth to perdition, [*or to damnation*], is large, and the way is broad, and there be many that enter by it.

<sup>14</sup> How strait is the gate, and narrow the way, that leadeth to life, and there be few that find it.

<sup>15</sup> Be ye ware of false prophets, that come to you in clothings of sheep, but withinforth they be wolves of raven [*or but within they be ravishing wolves*];

<sup>16</sup> of their fruits ye shall know them. Whether men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of briars?

<sup>17</sup> So every good tree maketh good fruits; but an evil tree maketh evil fruits.

<sup>18</sup> A good tree may not make evil fruits, neither an evil tree [*may*] make good fruits.

<sup>19</sup> Every tree that maketh not good fruit, shall be cut down, and shall be cast into the fire.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore of their fruits ye shall know them.

<sup>21</sup> Not every man that saith to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heavens; but he that doeth the will of my Father that is in heavens, he shall enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>22</sup> Many shall say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, whether we have not prophesied in thy name, and have cast out fiends [*or devils*] in thy name, and have done many virtues in thy name?

<sup>23</sup> And then I shall acknowledge to them, That I knew you never; depart away from me, ye that work wicked-ness.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore every man that heareth these my words, and doeth them, shall be made like to a wise man, that hath builded his house on a stone.

<sup>25</sup> And rain came down, and floods came, and winds blew, and rushed into that house; and it felled not down, for it was founded on a stone.

<sup>26</sup> And every man that heareth these my words, and doeth them not, is like a fool, that hath builded his house on gravel [*or on sand*].

<sup>27</sup> And rain came down, and floods came, and winds blew, and hurled against that house; and it felled down, and the falling down thereof was great.

<sup>28</sup> And it was done, when Jesus had ended these words, the people wondered on his teaching;

<sup>29</sup> for he taught them, as he that had power, and not as the scribes and the Pharisees.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But when Jesus was come down from the hill, much people pursued him [*or many companies followed him*].

<sup>2</sup> And lo! a leprous man came, and worshipped him, and said, Lord, if thou wilt, thou mayest make me clean.

<sup>3</sup> And Jesus held forth the hand, and touched him, and said, I will, be thou made clean. And anon the leprosy of him was cleansed.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus said to him, See, say thou to no man; but go, show thee to the priests, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, in witnessing to them.

<sup>5</sup> And when he had entered into Capernaum, the centurion nighed to him, and prayed him,

<sup>6</sup> and said, Lord, my child lieth in the house sick on [*or in*] the palsy, and is evil tormented.

<sup>7</sup> And Jesus said to him, I shall come, and shall heal him.

<sup>8</sup> And the centurion answered, and said to him, Lord, I am not worthy, that thou enter under my roof; but only say thou by word, and my child shall be healed.

<sup>9</sup> For why I am a man ordained under power, and have knights under me; and I say to this, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

<sup>10</sup> And Jesus heard these things, and wondered, and said to men that pursued him, Truly I say to you, I found not so great faith in Israel.

<sup>11</sup> And I say to you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall rest with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heavens;

<sup>12</sup> but the sons of the realm shall be cast out into outer-more [*or uttermost*] darknesses; there shall be weeping, and grinding of teeth.

<sup>13</sup> And Jesus said to the centurion, Go, and as thou hast believed, be it done to thee. And the child was healed from that hour.

<sup>14</sup> And when Jesus was come into the house of Simon Peter, he saw his wife's mother lying, and shaken [*or shaking*] with fevers.

<sup>15</sup> And he touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she rose, and served them.

<sup>16</sup> And when it was even, they brought to him many that had devils, and he casted out spirits by word, and healed all that were evil-at-ease [*or having sickness*];

<sup>17</sup> that it were fulfilled, that was said by Isaiah, the prophet, saying, He took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus saw much people about him, and bade [*or commanded*] *his disciples* [*to*] go over the water.

<sup>19</sup> And a scribe nighed, and said to him, Master, I shall pursue thee, whither ever thou shalt go.

<sup>20</sup> And Jesus said to him, Foxes have dens [*or burrows*], and birds of the air *have* nests, but man's Son hath not wherein to rest his head [*or where he shall rest his head*].

<sup>21</sup> Another of his disciples said to him, Lord, suffer me to go first, and bury my father.

<sup>22</sup> But Jesus said to him, Pursue thou me, and let the dead men bury their dead men.

<sup>23</sup> And when he was gone up into a little ship, his disciples pursued him.



<sup>24</sup> And lo! a great stirring was made in the sea, so that the ship was covered with waves; but he slept.

<sup>25</sup> And his disciples came to him, and raised him, and said, Lord, save us; we perish.

<sup>26</sup> And Jesus said to them, What be ye of little faith aghast [*or afeared*]? Then he rose [*up*], and commanded to the winds and the sea, and a great peaceableness was made.

<sup>27</sup> And men wondered, and said, What manner *man* is this, for the winds and the sea obey to him?

<sup>28</sup> And when he was come over the water into the country of men of Gergesenes, two men met him, that had devils, and came out of graves, full mad, [*or going out from burials, full fierce, or wicked*], so that no man might go by that way.

<sup>29</sup> And lo! they cried, and said, What to us and to thee, Jesus, the Son of God? art thou come hither before the time to torment us?

<sup>30</sup> And not far from them was a flock of many swine [*or a drove of many hogs*] pasturing.

<sup>31</sup> And the devils prayed him, and said, If thou castest out us from hence, send us into the drove of swine [*or hogs*].

<sup>32</sup> And he said to them, Go ye. And they went out, and went into the swine [*or the hogs*]; and lo! in a great rush all the drove went headlong into the sea, and they were dead in the waters.

<sup>33</sup> And the herders fled away, and came into the city, and told all these things, and of them that had the fiends [*or the devils*].

<sup>34</sup> And lo! all the city went out to meet Jesus; and when they had seen him, they prayed [*him*], that he would pass from their coasts.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus went up into a boat, and passed over the water, and came into his city.

<sup>2</sup> And lo! they brought to him a man sick in palsy, lying in a bed. And Jesus saw the faith of them, and said to the man sick in palsy, Son, have thou trust; thy sins be forgiven to thee.

<sup>3</sup> And lo! some of the scribes said within themselves, This blasphemeth.

<sup>4</sup> And when Jesus had seen their thoughts, he said, Whereto think ye evil things in your hearts?

<sup>5</sup> What is lighter to say, Thy sins be forgiven to thee, either to say, Rise thou, and walk?

<sup>6</sup> But that ye know that man's Son hath power to forgive sins in earth, then he said to the sick man in palsy [*or the*

*man sick in palsy*], Rise up; take thy bed, and go into thine house.

<sup>7</sup> And he rose, and went into his house.

<sup>8</sup> And the people seeing dreaded, and glorified God, that gave such power to men.

<sup>9</sup> And when Jesus passed from thence, he saw a man, Matthew by name, sitting in a tollbooth. And he said to him, Pursue thou me. And he rose, and followed him.

<sup>10</sup> And it was done, while he sat at the meat in the house, lo! many publicans and sinful men came, and sat at the meat with Jesus and his disciples.

<sup>11</sup> And the Pharisees saw, and said to his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicans and sinful men?

<sup>12</sup> And Jesus heard, and said, A leech is not needful to men that fare well, but to men that be evil-at-ease [*or having evil*].

<sup>13</sup> But go ye, and learn what it is, I will mercy, and not sacrifice; for I came, not to call rightful [*or rightwise*] men, but sinful men *to penance*.

<sup>14</sup> Then the disciples of John came to him, and said, Why we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

<sup>15</sup> And Jesus said to them, Whether the sons of the spouse may mourn [*or wail*] as long as the spouse is with them? But days shall come, when the spouse shall be taken away from them, and then they shall fast.

<sup>16</sup> And no man putteth a patch of rough cloth, [*or of rude, or new, cloth*], into an old clothing; for it doeth away [*or taketh away*] the fullness of the cloth, and a worse breaking is made.

<sup>17</sup> Neither men put new wine into old bottles [*or old wine vessels*], else the bottles [*or wine vessels*] be broken, and destroyed, and the wine shed out. But men put new wine into new bottles [*or into new wine vessels*], and both be kept.

<sup>18</sup> Whiles that Jesus spake these things to them, lo! a prince came, and worshipped him, and said, Lord, my daughter is now dead; but come thou, and put thine hand on her, and she shall live.

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus rose, and his disciples, and pursued him.

<sup>20</sup> And lo! a woman, that had a bloody flux, [*or that suffered the running of blood*], twelve years, nighed behind, and touched the hem of his cloth.

<sup>21</sup> For she said within herself, If I touch only the cloth of him, I shall be safe.

<sup>22</sup> And Jesus turned, and saw her, and said, Daughter, have thou trust; thy faith hath made thee safe. And the woman was [*made*] whole from that hour.

<sup>23</sup> And when Jesus came into the house of the prince, and saw minstrels, and the people making noise,

<sup>24</sup> he said, Go ye away, for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they scorned him.

<sup>25</sup> And when the folk was put out, he went in, and held her hand; and the damsel rose [*up*].

<sup>26</sup> And this fame went out into all that land.

<sup>27</sup> And when Jesus passed from thence, two blind men crying pursued him [*for two blind men pursued him, crying*], and said, Thou son of David, have mercy on us.

<sup>28</sup> And when he came into the house, the blind men came to him; and Jesus said to them, What will ye, that I do to you? And they said, Lord, that our eyes be opened. And Jesus said, Believe ye, that I may do this thing to you? They said to him, Yea, Lord.

<sup>29</sup> Then he touched their eyes, and said, After your faith be it done to you.

<sup>30</sup> And the eyes of them were opened. And Jesus threatened them, and said, See ye, that no man know.

<sup>31</sup> But they went out, and famed him through all that land.

<sup>32</sup> And when they were gone out, lo! they brought to him a dumb man, having a devil.

<sup>33</sup> And when the devil was cast out, the dumb man spake. And the people wondered, and said, It hath not been seen thus in Israel [*for It appeared never so in Israel*].

<sup>34</sup> But the Pharisees said, In the prince of devils he casteth out devils.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus went about all the cities and castles, teaching in the synagogues of them, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every languor [*for all ache*], and every sickness.

<sup>36</sup> And he saw the people, and had ruth on them; for they were travailed, and lying as sheep not having a shepherd.

<sup>37</sup> Then he said to his disciples, Soothly *there is* much ripe corn, but few workmen.

<sup>38</sup> Therefore pray ye the Lord of the ripe corn, that he send workmen into his ripe corn.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> And when his twelve disciples were called together, he gave to them power of unclean spirits, to cast them out *of men*, and to heal every languor [*for all ache*], and [*all*] sickness.

<sup>2</sup> And these be the names of the twelve apostles; the first, Simon, that is called Peter; and Andrew, his brother; James of Zebedee, and John, his brother;

<sup>3</sup> Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew, publican; and James [*of*] Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus;

<sup>4</sup> Simon Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, that betrayed Christ [*or which betrayed him*].

<sup>5</sup> Jesus sent these twelve, and commanded [*to*] them, and said, Go ye not into the way of heathen men, and enter ye not into the cities of Samaritans;

<sup>6</sup> but rather go ye to the sheep of the house of Israel, that have perished.

<sup>7</sup> And go ye, and preach ye, and say, that the kingdom of heavens shall nigh;

<sup>8</sup> heal ye sick men, raise ye dead men, cleanse ye mesels [*or leprous men*], cast ye out devils; freely ye have taken, freely give ye.

<sup>9</sup> Do not ye wield gold, nor silver, nor money in your girdles,

<sup>10</sup> not a scrip in the way, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor a staff [*or a rod*]; for a workman is worthy his meat.

<sup>11</sup> Into whatever city, or castle, ye shall enter, ask ye who therein is worthy, and there dwell ye, till ye go out.

<sup>12</sup> And when ye go into an house, greet ye it, and say, Peace to this house.

<sup>13</sup> And if that house be worthy, your peace shall come on it; but if that house be not worthy, your peace shall turn again to you.

<sup>14</sup> And whoever receiveth not you, nor heareth your words, go ye forth from that house or city, and sprinkle off the dust of your feet [*or smite away the dust from your feet*].

<sup>15</sup> Truly I say to you, it shall be more sufferable to the land of men of Sodom and of Gomorrah in the day of judgement, than to that city.

<sup>16</sup> Lo! I send you as sheep in the middle [*or into the midst*] of wolves; therefore be ye sly, [*or prudent, or wary, or wise*], as serpents, and simple as doves.

<sup>17</sup> But be ye ware of men, for they shall take you in councils, and they shall beat you in their synagogues;

<sup>18</sup> and to mayors, *or to presidents*, and to kings, ye shall be led for me, in witnessing to them, and to heathen men.

<sup>19</sup> But when they take you, do not ye think, how or what thing ye shall speak, for it shall be given to you in that hour, what ye shall speak;

<sup>20</sup> for it be not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father, that speaketh in you.

<sup>21</sup> And the brother shall betake the brother into death, and the father the son, and sons shall rise against *[their]* father and mother, and shall torment them by death *[or to the death]*.

<sup>22</sup> And ye shall be in hate *[or in hatred]* to all men for my name; but he that shall dwell still *[or shall continue]* into the end, shall be made safe.

<sup>23</sup> And when they pursue you in this city, flee ye into another. Truly I say to you, ye shall not end the cities of Israel, before that man's Son come.

<sup>24</sup> The disciple is not above the master *[or above his master]*, nor the servant above his lord;

<sup>25</sup> it is enough to the disciple, that he be as his master, and to the servant as his lord. If they have called the husbandman, *[or the father of the meine]*, Beelzebub, how much more his household meine?

<sup>26</sup> Therefore dread ye not them; for nothing is hid *[or is covered]*, that shall not be showed; and nothing is privy, that shall not be known.

<sup>27</sup> That thing that I say to you in darkneses, say ye in the light; and preach ye on houses *[or upon roofs]*, that thing that ye hear in the ear.

<sup>28</sup> And do not ye dread them that slay the body; for they may not slay the soul; but rather dread ye him, that may lose both soul and body into hell.

<sup>29</sup> Whether two sparrows be not sold for an halfpenny? and one of them shall not fall on the earth without your Father.

<sup>30</sup> And all the hairs of your head be numbered.

<sup>31</sup> Therefore do not ye dread; ye be better than many sparrows.

<sup>32</sup> Therefore every man that shall acknowledge me before men, I shall acknowledge him before my Father that is in heavens.

<sup>33</sup> But he that shall deny me before men, I shall deny him before my Father that is in heavens.

<sup>34</sup> Do not ye deem that I came to send peace into *[the]* earth; I came not to send peace, but sword.

<sup>35</sup> For I came to part a man against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the son's wife against the husband's mother;

<sup>36</sup> and the enemies of a man *be* they, that be at home with him.

<sup>37</sup> He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy to me/is not worthy of me. And he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy to me *[or of me]*.

<sup>38</sup> And he that taketh not his cross, and pursueth me, is not worthy to me [*or of me*].

<sup>39</sup> He that findeth his life, shall lose it; and he that loseth his life for me, shall find it.

<sup>40</sup> He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

<sup>41</sup> He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall take [*or shall receive*] the meed of a prophet. And he that receiveth a just man in the name of a just man, shall take [*or shall receive*] the meed of a just man.

<sup>42</sup> And whoever giveth drink to one of these least, a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, truly I say to you, he shall not lose his meed.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when Jesus had ended, he commanded to his twelve disciples, and passed from thence to teach and preach in the cities of them.

<sup>2</sup> But when John in bonds had heard the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

<sup>3</sup> and said to him, Art thou he that shall come, or we abide another?

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, Go ye, and tell again to John those things that ye have heard and seen.

<sup>5</sup> Blind men see, crooked men go, mesels be made clean, deaf men hear, dead men rise again, poor men be taken to preaching of the gospel.

<sup>6</sup> And he is blessed, that shall not be caused to stumble in me.

<sup>7</sup> And when they were gone away, Jesus began to say of John to the people, What thing went ye out into desert to see? a reed waved with the wind?

<sup>8</sup> Or what thing went ye out to see? a man clothed with soft clothes? Lo! they that be clothed with soft clothes be in the houses of kings.

<sup>9</sup> But what thing went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say to you, and more than a prophet.

<sup>10</sup> For this is he, of whom it is written, Lo! I send mine angel before thy face, that shall make ready thy way before thee.

<sup>11</sup> Truly I say to you, there rose none more [*or none greater*] than John Baptist among the children of women; but he that is less [*or that is the least*] in the kingdom of heavens, is more than he.

<sup>12</sup> And from the days of John Baptist till now the kingdom of heavens suffereth violence, and violent men ravish it.

<sup>13</sup> For all [*the*] prophets and the law till John prophesied;

<sup>14</sup> and if ye will receive, he is Elijah, that is to come.

<sup>15</sup> He that hath ears of hearing, hear he.

<sup>16</sup> But to whom shall I guess this generation like? It is like to children sitting in the chapping, that cry to their peers,

<sup>17</sup> and say, We have sung to you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wailed.

<sup>18</sup> For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

<sup>19</sup> The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Lo! a man a glutton, and a drinker of wine, and a friend of publicans and of sinful men. And wisdom is justified of her sons.

<sup>20</sup> Then Jesus began to say reproof to cities, in which full many virtues of him were done, for they did not penance.

<sup>21</sup> Woe to thee! Chorazin, woe to thee! Bethsaida; for if the virtues that be done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, sometime they had done penance in hair-shirt and ashes.

<sup>22</sup> Nevertheless I say to you, it shall be less pain to Tyre and Sidon in the day of doom, than to you.

<sup>23</sup> And thou, Capernaum, whether thou shalt be araised up into heaven? Thou shalt go down into hell. For if the virtues that be done in thee had been done in Sodom, peradventure they should have dwelled till into this day.

<sup>24</sup> Nevertheless I say to you, that to the land of Sodom it shall be less pain in the day of doom, than to thee.

<sup>25</sup> In that time Jesus answered, and said, I acknowledge to thee, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, for thou hast hid these things from wise men, and ready, [*or wary, or prudent, or sly*], and hast showed them to little children;

<sup>26</sup> so, Father, for so it was pleasing before thee.

<sup>27</sup> All things be given to me of my Father; and no man knew [*or knoweth*] the Son, but the Father, neither any man knew [*or knoweth*] the Father, but the Son, and to whom the Son would show.

<sup>28</sup> All ye that travail, and be charged, come to me, and I shall fulfill [*or shall refresh*] you.

<sup>29</sup> Take ye my yoke on you, and learn ye of me, for I am mild and meek in heart; and ye shall find rest to your souls.

<sup>30</sup> For my yoke is soft [*or sweet*], and my charge is light [*or easy*].

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> In that time Jesus went by corns in [*or on*] the sabbath day; and his disciples hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

<sup>2</sup> And the Pharisees, seeing, said to him, Lo! thy disciples do that thing that is not leaveful to them to do in *[the]* sabbaths.

<sup>3</sup> And he said to them, Whether ye have not read, what David did, when he hungered, and they that were with him?

<sup>4</sup> how he entered into the house of God, and ate loaves of proposition, *[either of setting forth]*, which loaves it was not leaveful to him to eat, neither to them that were with him, but to priests alone?

<sup>5</sup> Or whether ye have not read in the law, that in the sabbaths priests in the temple defoul the sabbaths, and they be without blame?

<sup>6</sup> And I say to you, that here is a greater than the temple.

<sup>7</sup> And if ye knew, what it is, I will mercy, and not sacrifice, ye should never have condemned innocents.

<sup>8</sup> For man's Son is Lord, yea, of the sabbath.

<sup>9</sup> And when he passed from thence, he came into the synagogue of them.

<sup>10</sup> And lo! a man that had a dry hand. And they asked him, and said, Whether it be leaveful to heal in the sabbath? that they should accuse him.

<sup>11</sup> And he said to them, What man of you shall there be, that hath one sheep, and if it fall into a ditch in the sabbaths, whether he shall not hold, and lift it up?

<sup>12</sup> How much more is a man better than a sheep? Therefore it is leaveful to do good in the sabbaths.

<sup>13</sup> Then he said to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched forth; and it was restored to health as the other.

<sup>14</sup> And the Pharisees went out, and made a counsel against him, how they should destroy him.

<sup>15</sup> And Jesus knew it, and went away from thence; and many pursued him, and he healed them all.

<sup>16</sup> And he commanded to them, that they should not make him known;

<sup>17</sup> that that thing were fulfilled, that was said by Isaiah, the prophet, saying,

<sup>18</sup> Lo! my child, whom I have chosen, my darling, in whom it hath well pleased to my soul; I shall put my Spirit on him, and he shall tell doom to heathen men.

<sup>19</sup> He shall not strive, nor cry, neither any man shall hear his voice in streets.

<sup>20</sup> A bruised reed he shall not break *[for He shall not break altogether a shaken reed]*, and he shall not quench smoking flax, till he cast out doom to victory;

<sup>21</sup> and heathen men shall hope in his name.



22 Then a man blind and dumb, that had a fiend [*or a devil*], was brought to him; and he healed him, so that he spake, and saw.

23 And all the people wondered, and said, Whether this be the son of David?

24 But the Pharisees heard, and said, He this casteth not out fiends, but in Beelzebub, prince of fiends [*or prince of devils*].

25 And Jesus, witting their thoughts, said to them, Each kingdom parted against itself, shall be desolated [*or be desolate*], and each city, or house, parted against itself, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan casteth out Satan, he is parted against himself; therefore how shall his kingdom stand?

27 And if I in Beelzebub cast out devils, in whom, [*or by whose might*], your sons cast out? Therefore they shall be your doomsmen.

28 But if I in the Spirit of God cast out fiends, then the kingdom of God is come into you [*or is come among you*].

29 Either how may any man enter into the house of a strong man, and take away his vessels, but he first bind the strong man, and then he shall spoil his house?

30 He that is not with me, is against me; and he that gathereth not together with me, scattereth abroad.

31 Therefore I say to you, all sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men, but [*the*] blasphemy of the Spirit shall not be forgiven.

32 And whoever saith a word against man's Son, it shall be forgiven to him; but who that saith a word against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven to him, neither in this world, nor in the tother.

33 Either make ye the tree good, and his fruit good; either make ye the tree evil and his fruit evil; for a tree is known of his fruit.

34 Ye generation of adders, how may ye speak good things, when ye be evil? For the mouth speaketh of the plenty [*or of the great abundance*] of the heart.

35 A good man bringeth forth good things of good treasure, and an evil man bringeth forth evil things of evil treasure.

36 And I say to you, that of every idle word, that men speak, they shall yield reason thereof in the day of doom;

37 for of thy words thou shalt be justified, and of thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 Then some of the scribes and the Pharisees answered to him, and said, Master, we will see a token of thee.

<sup>39</sup> Which answered, and said to them, An evil kindred and a spouse-breaker [*or adulterous*] seeketh a token, and a token shall not be given to it, but the token of Jonah, the prophet.

<sup>40</sup> For as Jonah was in the womb of a whale three days and three nights, so man's Son shall be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights.

<sup>41</sup> Men of Nineveh shall rise in doom with this generation, and shall condemn it; for they did penance in the preaching of Jonah, and lo! here [*is*] a greater than Jonah.

<sup>42</sup> The queen of the south shall rise in doom with this generation, and shall condemn it; for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and lo! here [*is*] a greater than Solomon.

<sup>43</sup> When an unclean spirit goeth out from a man, he goeth by dry places, seeking rest, and findeth not [*or none*].

<sup>44</sup> Then he saith, I shall turn again into mine house, from whence I went out. And he cometh, and findeth it void, and cleansed with besoms, and made fair.

<sup>45</sup> Then he goeth, and taketh with him seven other spirits worse than himself; and they enter [*in*], and dwell there. And the last things of that man be made worse than the former. So it shall be to this worst generation.

<sup>46</sup> Yet while he spake to the people, lo! his mother and his brethren stood withoutforth, seeking to speak with him.

<sup>47</sup> And a man said to him, Lo! thy mother and thy brethren stand with-outforth, seeking thee.

<sup>48</sup> And he answered to the man, that spake to him, and said, Who is my mother? and who be my brethren?

<sup>49</sup> And he held forth his hand into his disciples, and said, Lo! my mother and my brethren;

<sup>50</sup> for whoever doeth the will of my Father that is in heavens, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> In that day Jesus went out of the house, and sat beside the sea.

<sup>2</sup> And much people was gathered to him, so that he went up into a boat, and sat; and all the people stood on the brink.

<sup>3</sup> And he spake to them many things in parables, and said, Lo! he that soweth, went out to sow his seed.

<sup>4</sup> And while he soweth, some *seeds* felled beside the way, and birds of the air came, and ate them.

<sup>5</sup> But other *seeds* felled into stony places, where they had not much earth; and anon they sprung up, for they had not deepness of earth.

<sup>6</sup> But when the sun was risen, they sweltered [*or they burned for the heat*], and for they had not root, they dried up.

<sup>7</sup> And other *seeds* felled among thorns; and the thorns waxed up, and strangled them.

<sup>8</sup> But other *seeds* felled into good land, and gave fruit; some an hundred-fold, another sixtyfold, another thirty-fold.

<sup>9</sup> He that hath ears of hearing, hear he.

<sup>10</sup> And the disciples came nigh, and said to him, Why speakest thou in parables to them?

<sup>11</sup> And he answered, and said to them, For to you it is given to know the privates [*or mysteries*] of the kingdom of heavens; but it is not given to them.

<sup>12</sup> For it shall be given to him that hath, and he shall have plenty; but if a man hath not, also that thing that he hath shall be taken away from him.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore I speak to them in parables, for they seeing see not, and they hearing hear not, neither under-stand;

<sup>14</sup> that the prophecy of Isaiah saying be fulfilled in them, With hearing ye shall hear, and ye shall not under-stand; and ye seeing shall see, and ye shall not see;

<sup>15</sup> for the heart of this people is greatly fatted, and they heard heavily with ears, and they have closed their eyes, lest sometime they see with eyes, and with ears hear, and under-stand in heart, and they be converted, and I heal them.

<sup>16</sup> But your eyes that see *be* blessed, and your ears that hear.

<sup>17</sup> Forsooth I say to you, that many prophets and just men coveted to see those things that ye see, and they saw not, and to hear those things that ye hear, and they heard not.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore hear ye the parable of the sower.

<sup>19</sup> Each that heareth the word of the realm, and understandeth not, the evil spirit cometh, and ravisheth that that is sown in his heart; this it is [*or this is he*], that is sown beside the way.

<sup>20</sup> But this [*or he*] that is sown on the stony land, this it is [*or is this*], that heareth the word of God, and anon with joy taketh it.

<sup>21</sup> And he hath not root in himself, but is temporal. For when tribulation and persecution is made for the word, anon he is caused to stumble.

<sup>22</sup> But he that is sown in thorns, is this that heareth the word, and the busyness of this world, and the fallacy [*or the falseness*] of riches strangeth the word, and it is made without fruit.

23 But he that is sown into good land, is this that heareth the word, and understandeth, and bringeth forth fruit. And some maketh an hundred-fold, truly another sixtyfold and another thirtyfold.

24 Another parable Jesus put forth to them, and said, The kingdom of heavens is made like to a man, that sowed good seed in his field.

25 And when men slept, his enemy came, and sowed above tares, [*or darnels, or cockles*], in the middle of wheat, and went away.

26 But when the herb was grown, and made fruit, then the tares, [*or the darnels, or cockles*], appeared.

27 And the servants of the husband-man came, and said to him, Lord, whether hast thou not sown good seed in thy field? whereof then hath it tares, [*or darnels, or cockles*]?

28 And he said to them, An enemy hath done this thing. And the servants said to him, Wilt thou that we go, and gather them?

29 And he said, Nay, lest peradventure ye in gathering tares, [*or the darnels, or cockles*], draw up with them [*also*] the wheat by the root.

30 Suffer ye them both to wax into reaping time; and in the time of ripe corn, I shall say to the reapers, First gather ye together the tares, [*or the darnels, or cockles*], and bind them together in knitches, [*or small bundles*], to be burnt, but gather ye the wheat into my barn.

31 Another parable Jesus put forth to them, and said, The kingdom of heavens is like to a corn of sinapi, which a man took, and sowed in his field.

32 Which [*truly*] is the least of all seeds, but when it hath waxen, it is the most of all worts, and is made a tree; so that [*the*] birds of the air come, and dwell in the boughs [*or the branches*] thereof.

33 Another parable Jesus spake to them [*or He spake another parable to them*], The kingdom of heavens is like to sourdough, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till it were all soured.

34 Jesus spake all these things in parables to the people, and he spake not to them without parables,

35 that it should be fulfilled, that is said by the prophet, saying, I shall open my mouth in parables; I shall tell out hid things [*or things hid*] from the making of the world.

36 Then he left the people, and came into an house; and his disciples came to him, and said, Expound to us the parable of the tares, [*or the darnels, or cockles*], of the field.

<sup>37</sup> Which answered, and said, He that soweth good seed is man's Son;

<sup>38</sup> the field is the world; but the good seed, these be the sons of the kingdom, but tares, these be evil children, *[or forsooth darnels, or cockles, these be evil sons or sons of the wicked];*

<sup>39</sup> the enemy that soweth them is the fiend *[or the devil];* and the ripe corn is the ending of the world, the reapers be angels.

<sup>40</sup> Therefore as tares, *[or darnels, or cockles],* be gathered together, and be burnt in *[the]* fire, so it shall be in the ending of the world.

<sup>41</sup> Man's Son shall send his angels, and they shall gather from his realm all causes of stumbling, and them that do wickedness;

<sup>42</sup> and they shall send them into the chimney of fire; there shall be weeping, and beating together of teeth.

<sup>43</sup> Then just men shall shine as the sun, in the realm of their Father. He that hath ears of hearing, hear he.

<sup>44</sup> The kingdom of heavens is like to treasure hid in a field, which a man that findeth, hideth; and for joy of it he goeth, and selleth all things that he hath, and buyeth that field.

<sup>45</sup> Again the kingdom of heavens is like to a merchant, that seeketh good margarites *[or good pearls];*

<sup>46</sup> but when he hath found one precious margarite, he went, and sold all things that he had, and bought it.

<sup>47</sup> Again the kingdom of heavens is like to a net cast into the sea, and that gathereth together of all kinds of fishes;

<sup>48</sup> which when it was full, they drew it up, and sat by the brink, and chose the good into their vessels, but the evil they cast out.

<sup>49</sup> So it shall be in the end of the world. Angels shall go out, and shall separate evil men from the middle *[or the midst]* of just men.

<sup>50</sup> And they shall send them into the chimney of fire; there shall be weeping, and grinding of teeth.

<sup>51</sup> Have ye understood all these things? They say to him, Yea.

<sup>52</sup> He saith to them, Therefore every wise man of *[the]* law *[taught]* in the kingdom of heavens, is like to an husbandman, that bringeth forth of his treasure new things and old.

<sup>53</sup> And it was done, when Jesus had ended these parables, he passed from thence.

<sup>54</sup> And he came into his country, and taught them in their synagogues, so that they wondered, and said, From whence this wisdom and virtues *came* to this? [*or to him?*]

<sup>55</sup> Whether this is not the son of a carpenter? Whether his mother be not said Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas?

<sup>56</sup> and his sisters, whether they all be not among us? From whence then all these things *come or came* to this? [*or to him?*]

<sup>57</sup> And so they were offended in him. But Jesus said to them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and in his own house.

<sup>58</sup> And he did not there many virtues, for the unbelief of them.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> In that time Herod tetrarch, [*that is, prince of the fourth part*], heard the fame of Jesus;

<sup>2</sup> and said to his children, This is John Baptist, he is risen from death, and therefore virtues work in him.

<sup>3</sup> For Herod had holden [*or held*] John, and bound him, and putted him in prison for Herodias, the wife of his brother.

<sup>4</sup> For John said to him, It is not leaveful to thee to have her.

<sup>5</sup> And he willing to slay him, dreaded the people; for they had him as a prophet.

<sup>6</sup> But in the day of Herod's birth, the daughter of Herodias danced in the middle, and pleased Herod.

<sup>7</sup> Wherefore with an oath he promised to give to her, whatever thing she asked of him.

<sup>8</sup> And she before-warned [*or before admonished*] of her mother, said, Give thou to me here the head of John Baptist in a dish.

<sup>9</sup> And the king was sorrowful, but for the oath, and for them that sat together at the meat, he commanded to be given.

<sup>10</sup> And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

<sup>11</sup> And his head was brought in a dish, and it was given to the damsel, and she bare it to her mother.

<sup>12</sup> And his disciples came, and took his body, and buried it; and they came, and told to Jesus.

<sup>13</sup> And when Jesus had heard this thing, he went from thence in a boat, into a desert place beside. And when the people had heard, they followed him on their feet from cities.

14 And Jesus went out, and saw a great people [*or a great multitude*], and had ruth on them, and he healed the sick men of them.

15 But when eventide was come, his disciples came to him, and said, The place is desert, and the time is now passed; let the people go into towns, to buy them meat.

16 Jesus said to them, They have not need [*or no need*] to go; give ye them somewhat to eat.

17 They answered, We have not here, but five loaves and two fishes.

18 And he said to them, Bring ye them hither to me.

19 And when he had commanded the people to sit to [*the*] meat on the hay, he took five loaves and two fishes, and he beheld into heaven, and blessed, and brake, and gave [*loaves*] to his disciples; and the disciples gave to the people.

20 And all ate, and were fulfilled [*or filled*]. And they took the remnants of broken gobbets, twelve coffins full.

21 And the number of men that ate was five thousand of men, without women and little children.

22 And anon Jesus compelled the disciples to go up into a boat, and [*to*] go before him over the sea, while he let go the people.

23 And when the people was let go, he went up alone into an hill to pray. But when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 And the boat in the middle of the sea was shogged [*or thrown*] with waves, for the wind was contrary to them.

25 But in the fourth waking of the night, he came to them walking on the sea.

26 And they, seeing him walking on the sea, were disturbed [*or distroubled*], and said, That it is a phantom; and for dread they cried.

27 And anon Jesus spake to them, and said, Have ye trust, I am; do not ye dread.

28 And Peter answered, and said, Lord, if thou art, command me to come to thee on the waters.

29 And he said, Come thou. And Peter went down from the boat, and walked on the waters to come to Jesus.

30 But he saw the wind strong, and was afeared; and when he began to drench *or drown*, he cried, and said, Lord, make me safe.

31 And anon Jesus held forth his hand, and took *Peter*, [*or caught him*], and said to him, Thou of little faith, why hast thou doubted?

32 And when he had gone [*up*] into the boat, the wind ceased.

<sup>33</sup> And they, that were in the boat, came, and worshipped him, and said, Verily, thou art God's Son.

<sup>34</sup> And when they had passed over the sea, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

<sup>35</sup> And when men of that place had known him, they sent into all that country; and they brought to him all that had sicknesses [*or all having evil*].

<sup>36</sup> And they prayed him, that they should touch the hem of his clothing; and whoever touched were made safe.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> Then the scribes and the Pharisees came to him from Jerusalem, and said,

<sup>2</sup> Why break thy disciples the traditions of elder men? [*or Why thy disciples break the traditions, either the teachings, of elder men?*] for they wash not their hands, when they eat bread.

<sup>3</sup> He answered, and said to them, Why break ye the commandment of God for your tradition[s]?

<sup>4</sup> For God said, Honour thy father and thy mother, and he that curseth father or mother, die he by death.

<sup>5</sup> But ye say, Whoever saith to father or mother, Whatever gift is of me, it shall profit to thee;

<sup>6</sup> and he hath not worshipped [*or not honoured*] his father or his mother; and ye have made the commandment of God void for your tradition[s].

<sup>7</sup> Hypocrites, Isaiah the prophet, prophesied well of you, and said,

<sup>8</sup> This people honoureth me with lips, but their heart is far from me;

<sup>9</sup> and they worship me without cause, teaching the doctrines and the commandments of men.

<sup>10</sup> And when the people were called together to him, he said to them, Hear ye, and understand ye.

<sup>11</sup> That thing that entereth into the mouth, defouleth not a man; but that thing that cometh out of the mouth, defouleth a man.

<sup>12</sup> Then his disciples came, and said to him, Thou knowest [*or Knowest thou*], that, if this word be heard, the Pharisees be offended?

<sup>13</sup> And he answered, and said, Every planting, that my Father of heaven hath not planted, shall be drawn up by the root.

<sup>14</sup> Suffer ye them; they be blind, and leaders of blind men. And if a blind man lead a blind man, both fall into the ditch.

<sup>15</sup> Peter answered, and said to him, Expound to us this parable.



16 And he said, Yet ye be without understanding?

17 Understand ye not, that all thing that entereth into the mouth, goeth into the womb, and is sent out into the going away?

18 But those things that come forth from the mouth, go out from the heart, and those things defoul the man.

19 For of the heart go out evil thoughts [*or For out of the heart cometh evil thoughts*], manslaughterings, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnessings, blasphemies.

20 These things it be that defoul a man; but to eat with hands not washed, defouleth not a man.

21 And Jesus went out from thence, and went into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And lo! a woman of Canaan went out of those coasts, and cried, and said to him, Lord, the son of David, have mercy on me; my daughter is evil travailed of a fiend [*or a devil*].

23 And he answered not to her a word. And his disciples came, and prayed him, and said, Leave thou her, for she crieth after us.

24 He answered, and said, I am not sent, but to the sheep of the house of Israel that have perished.

25 And she came, and worshipped him, and said, Lord, help me.

26 Which answered, and said, It is not good to take the bread of children, and cast [*it*] to hounds.

27 And she said, Yes, Lord; for [*the*] whelps eat of the crumbs, that fall down from the board of their lords.

28 Then Jesus answered, and said to her, A! woman, thy faith is great; be it done to thee, as thou wilt. And her daughter was healed from that hour.

29 And when Jesus had passed from thence, he came beside the sea of Galilee. And he went up into an hill, and sat there.

30 And much people came to him, and had with them dumb men and crooked [*men*], feeble and blind, and many others; and they casted down them [*or cast them down*] at his feet. And he healed them,

31 so that the people wondered, seeing dumb men speaking, and crooked [*men*] going, blind men seeing; and they magnified God of Israel.

32 And Jesus, when his disciples were called together, said to them, I have ruth of the people, for they have abided now three days with me, and have nothing to eat; and I will not leave them fasting, lest they fail in the way.

<sup>33</sup> And the disciples say to him, Whereof then so many loaves among us in desert, to fulfill so great a people? *[And the disciples say to him, Therefore whereof so many loaves to us in desert, that we fill so great a company of people?]*

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus said to them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes *[or a few little fishes]*.

<sup>35</sup> And he commanded to the people, to sit to *[the]* meat on the earth.

<sup>36</sup> And he took the seven loaves and five fishes, and did thankings, and brake *them*, and gave to his disciples; and the disciples gave to the people.

<sup>37</sup> And all ate, and were fulfilled *[or were filled]*, and they took that that was left of *[the]* remnants, seven baskets full.

<sup>38</sup> And they that ate were four thousand of men, without little children and women.

<sup>39</sup> And when he had left the people, he went up into a boat, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> And the Pharisees and the Sadducees came to him tempting *[him]*, and prayed him to show them a token from heaven.

<sup>2</sup> And he answered, and said to them, When the eventide is come, ye say, It shall be clear, for heaven is ruddy *[or red]*;

<sup>3</sup> and the morrowtide, Today tempest, for heaven shineth heavily. Then ye know how to deem *[wisely]* the face of heaven, but ye may not know the tokens of times.

<sup>4</sup> An evil generation and adulterous seeketh a token; and a token shall not be given to it, but the token of Jonah, the prophet. And when he had left them, he went forth *[or went away]*.

<sup>5</sup> And when his disciples came over the sea, they forgot to take loaves.

<sup>6</sup> And he said to them, Behold ye, and beware of the sourdough of Pharisees and of Sadducees.

<sup>7</sup> And they thought among them-*[selves]*, and said, For we have not taken loaves.

<sup>8</sup> But Jesus witting said to them, What think ye among you of little faith, for ye have not taken loaves?

<sup>9</sup> Yet ye understand not, neither have mind, of five loaves into five thousand of men, and how many coffins ye took?

<sup>10</sup> neither of seven loaves into four thousand of men, and how many baskets ye took?

<sup>11</sup> Why understand ye not, for I said not to you of bread, Be ye ware of the sourdough of Pharisees and of Sadducees?

12 Then they understood, that he said not to beware of [*the*] sourdough of loaves, but of the teaching of Pharisees and of Sadducees.

13 And Jesus came into the parts of Caesarea of Philippi, and asked his disciples, and said, Whom say men to be man's Son?

14 And they said, Some John Baptist; others Elijah; and others Jeremy, or one of the prophets.

15 Jesus said to them, But whom say ye me to be?

16 Simon Peter answered, and said, Thou art Christ, the Son of God living [*or the son of quick God*].

17 Jesus answered, and said to him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona; for flesh and blood showed not to thee, but my Father that is in heavens.

18 And I say to thee, that thou art Peter, and on this stone I shall build my church, and the gates of hell shall not have might or power, [*or strength*], against it.

19 And to thee I shall give the keys of the kingdom of heavens; and what-ever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound also in heavens; and whatever thou shalt unbind on earth, shall be unbound also in heavens.

20 Then he commanded to his disciples, that they should say to no man, that he was Jesus Christ.

21 From that time Jesus began to show to his disciples, that it behooved him to go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things, of the elder men [*or the elders*], and of the scribes, and of princes of priests; and be slain, and the third day to rise again.

22 And Peter took him, and began to blame him, and said, Far be it from thee, Lord; this shall not be to thee.

23 And he turned, and said to Peter, Satan, go thou after me; thou art a cause of stumbling to me; for thou savourest [*or understandest*] not those things that be of God, but those things that be of men.

24 Then Jesus said to his disciples, If any man will come after me, deny he himself, and take his cross, and pursue me;

25 for he that will make his life safe, shall lose it; and he that shall lose his life for me, shall find it.

26 For what profiteth it to a man [*or what profiteth to a man*], if he win all the world, and suffer impairing of his soul? or what exchanging shall a man give for his soul?

27 For man's Son shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels, and then he shall yield to every man after his works.

<sup>28</sup> Truly I say to you, there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste death, till they see man's Son coming in his kingdom.

## CHAPTER 17

<sup>1</sup> And after six days Jesus took Peter, and James, and John, his brother, and led them aside into an high hill,

<sup>2</sup> and was transfigured, [*or turned*], into another likeness before them. And his face shone as the sun; and his clothes were made white as snow.

<sup>3</sup> And lo! Moses and Elijah appeared to them, and spake with him.

<sup>4</sup> And Peter answered, and said to Jesus, Lord, it is good us to be here. If thou wilt, make we here three tabernacles; to thee one, to Moses one, and one to Elijah.

<sup>5</sup> Yet while he spake, lo! a bright cloud overshadowed them; and lo! a voice out of the cloud, that said, This is my dearworthy Son, in whom I have well pleased to me; hear ye him.

<sup>6</sup> And the disciples heard, and felled down on their faces, and dreaded greatly.

<sup>7</sup> And Jesus came, and touched them, and said to them, Rise up, and do not ye dread.

<sup>8</sup> And they lifted up their eyes, and saw no man, but Jesus alone.

<sup>9</sup> And as they came down of the hill [*or down from the mountain*], Jesus commanded to them, and said, Say ye to no man the vision, till man's Son rise again from death.

<sup>10</sup> And his disciples asked him, and said, What then say the scribes, that it behooveth that Elijah come first?

<sup>11</sup> He answered, and said to them, Elijah shall come, and he shall restore all things.

<sup>12</sup> And I say to you, that Elijah is now come, and they knew him not, but they did in him whatever things they would; and so man's Son shall suffer of them.

<sup>13</sup> Then the disciples understood, that he said to them of John the Baptist.

<sup>14</sup> And when he came to the people, a man came to him, and felled down on *his* knees before him, and said,

<sup>15</sup> Lord, have mercy on my son; for he is lunatic, and suffereth evil, for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

<sup>16</sup> And I brought him to thy disciples, and they might not heal him.

<sup>17</sup> Jesus answered, and said, A! thou generation unbelievful, [*or out of the faith*], and wayward; how long shall I be

with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring ye him hither to me.

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus blamed him, and the devil went out from him; and the child was healed from that hour.

<sup>19</sup> Then the disciples came to Jesus privily, and said to him, Why might not we cast him out?

<sup>20</sup> Jesus saith to them, For your unbelief. Truly I say to you, if ye have faith, as a corn of sinapi, ye shall say to this hill, Pass thou *[from]* hence, and it shall pass; and nothing shall be impossible to you;

<sup>21</sup> but this kind is not cast out, but by prayer and fasting.

<sup>22</sup> And whiles they were abiding together in Galilee, Jesus said to them, Man's Son shall be betrayed into the hands of men;

<sup>23</sup> and they shall slay him, and the third day he shall rise again to life. And they were *[made]* full sorry *[or were sorrowful greatly]*.

<sup>24</sup> And when they came to Capernaum, they that took tribute, came to Peter, and said to him, Your master payeth not tribute?

<sup>25</sup> And he said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus came before him, and said, Simon, what seemeth to thee? Kings of the earth, of whom take they tribute? of their sons, either of aliens?

<sup>26</sup> And he said, Of aliens. Jesus said to him, Then sons be free.

<sup>27</sup> But that we offend them not, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take that fish that first cometh up; and, when his mouth is opened, thou shalt find a stater, *[that is, a certain of money]*; take it, and give *[to them]* for thee and for me.

## CHAPTER 18

<sup>1</sup> In that hour the disciples came to Jesus, and said, Who, guessest thou, is *[the]* greater in the kingdom of heavens?

<sup>2</sup> And Jesus called a little child, and put him in the middle *[or in the midst]* of them;

<sup>3</sup> and said, I say truth to you *[or Truly I say to you]*, but ye be turned, and *[be]* made as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>4</sup> Therefore whoever meeketh him-*[self]* as this little child, he is greater in the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>5</sup> And he that receiveth one such little child in my name, receiveth me.

<sup>6</sup> But whoso causeth to stumble one of these small *[or these little]*, that believe in me, it speedeth to him, that a

millstone of asses be hanged in his neck, and he be drowned *or drowned* in the deepness of the sea.

<sup>7</sup> Woe to the world, for causes of stumbling; for it is needed, that causes of stumbling come; nevertheless woe to that man by whom a cause of stumbling cometh.

<sup>8</sup> And if thine hand or thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast *it* away from thee. It is better to thee to enter *[in]* to life feeble, either crooked, than having twain hands or two feet to be sent into everlasting fire.

<sup>9</sup> And if thine eye cause thee to stumble, pull it out, and cast *it* away from thee. It is better to thee, with one eye to enter into life, than having twain eyes to be sent into the fire of hell *[or into hellfire]*.

<sup>10</sup> See ye, that ye despise not one of these little. For I say to you *[or Truly I say to you]*, that the angels of them in heavens see evermore the face of my Father that is in heavens.

<sup>11</sup> For man's Son came to save that thing that perished.

<sup>12</sup> What seemeth to you? If there were to a man an hundred sheep, and one of them hath erred, whether he shall not leave ninety and nine in desert *[or in the hills]*, and shall go to seek that that erred?

<sup>13</sup> And if it fall that he find it, truly I say to you, that he shall have joy thereof *[or for he shall joy thereon]*, more than on ninety and nine that erred not.

<sup>14</sup> So it is not the will of your Father that is in heavens *[or in heaven]*, that one of these little perish.

<sup>15</sup> But if thy brother sinneth against thee, go thou, and reprove him, betwixt thee and him alone; if he heareth thee, thou hast won thy brother.

<sup>16</sup> And if he heareth thee not, take with thee one or twain that every word stand in the mouth of twain or three witnesses.

<sup>17</sup> And if he heareth not them, say thou to the church. But if he heareth not the church, be he as a heathen and a publican to thee.

<sup>18</sup> I say to you truly, whatever things ye bind on earth, those shall be bound also in heaven; and whatever things ye unbind on earth, those shall be unbound also in heaven.

<sup>19</sup> Again I say to you, that if twain of you consent on earth, of everything whatever they ask, it shall be done to them of my Father that is in heavens.

<sup>20</sup> For where twain or three be gathered in my name, there I am in the middle of them. *[For where two or three be gathered in my name, there I am in the midst of them.]*

<sup>21</sup> Then Peter came to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I shall forgive him? Whether till seven times?

<sup>22</sup> Jesus saith to him, I say not to thee, till seven times; but till *[or to]* seventy times seven times.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore the kingdom of heavens is likened to a king that would reckon with his servants.

<sup>24</sup> And when he began to reckon, one that owed to him ten thousand talents *[or bezants]*, was brought to him.

<sup>25</sup> And when he had not whereof to yield, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all things that he had, and to be paid.

<sup>26</sup> But that servant felled down, and prayed him, and said, have patience in me, and I shall yield to thee all things.

<sup>27</sup> And the lord had mercy on that servant, and suffered him to go *[or delivered him]*, and forgave him the debt.

<sup>28</sup> But that servant went out, and found one of his even-servants, that owed him an hundred pence; and he held him, and strangled him, and said, Yield that that thou owest.

<sup>29</sup> And his even-servant fell down, and prayed him, and said, have patience in me, and I shall requite all things to thee.

<sup>30</sup> But he would not; but went out, and put *[or sent]* him into prison, till he paid all the debt.

<sup>31</sup> And his even-servants, seeing the things that were done, sorrowed greatly. And they came, and told to their lord all the things that were done.

<sup>32</sup> Then his lord called him, and said to him, Wicked servant, I forgave to thee all the debt, for thou prayedest me.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore whether it behooved not also thee to have mercy on thine even-servant, as I had mercy on thee?

<sup>34</sup> And his lord was wroth, and took him to tormentors, till he paid all the debt.

<sup>35</sup> So my Father of heaven shall do to you, if ye forgive not every man to his brother, of your hearts.

## CHAPTER 19

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when Jesus had ended these words, he passed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea over Jordan.

<sup>2</sup> And much people pursued him, and he healed them there.

<sup>3</sup> And the Pharisees came to him, tempting him, and said, whether it be leaveful to *[or for]* a man to leave *[or forsake]*, his wife, for any cause?

<sup>4</sup> Which answered, and said to them, have ye not read, for he that made men at the beginning, made them male and female?

<sup>5</sup> And he said, for this thing a man shall leave father and mother, and he shall draw [*or cleave*] to his wife; and they shall be twain in one flesh.

<sup>6</sup> And so they be not now twain, but one flesh. Therefore man separate [*or part*] not that thing that God hath joined, [*or knit together*].

<sup>7</sup> They say to him, What then commanded Moses, to give a libel [*or a little book*] of forsaking, and to leave off [*or forsake*]?

<sup>8</sup> And he said to them, For Moses, for the hardness of your heart, suffered you to leave your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.

<sup>9</sup> And I say to you, that whoever leaveth his wife, but for fornication, and weddeth another, doeth lechery [*or adultery*]; and he that weddeth the forsaken wife, doeth lechery [*or adultery*].

<sup>10</sup> His disciples say to him, If the cause of a man with his wife is so, it speedeth not to be wedded.

<sup>11</sup> And he said to them, Not all men take this word; but they to which it is given.

<sup>12</sup> For there be geldings, which be so born of the mother's womb [*or thus born of their mother's womb*]; and there be geldings, that be made of men; and there be geldings, that have gelded themselves, for the kingdom of heavens. He that may take, take he.

<sup>13</sup> Then little children were brought to him, that he should put [*his*] hands to them, and pray. And the disciples blamed them.

<sup>14</sup> But Jesus said to them, Suffer ye that little children come to me, and do not ye forbid them; for of such is the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>15</sup> And when he had put to them hands, he went from thence.

<sup>16</sup> And lo! one came, and said to him, Good master, what good [*thing*] shall I do, that I have everlasting life?

<sup>17</sup> Which saith to him, What askest thou me of good thing? There is one good God. But if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

<sup>18</sup> He saith to him, Which? And Jesus said, Thou shalt not do man-slaying, thou shalt not do adultery, thou shalt not do theft, thou shalt not say false witnessing;

<sup>19</sup> worship [*or honour*] thy father and thy mother, and, thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.



<sup>20</sup> The young man saith to him, I have kept all these things from my youth, what yet faileth to me?

<sup>21</sup> Jesus saith to him, If thou wilt be perfect, go, and sell all things that thou hast, and give to poor men, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, and pursue me.

<sup>22</sup> And when the young man had heard these words, he went away sorrowful, for he had many possessions.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus said to his disciples, I say to you truth, [*or Truly I say to you*], for a rich man of hard shall enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>24</sup> And again I say to you, it is lighter [*or easier*] a camel to pass through a needle's eye [*or the hole of a needle*], than a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>25</sup> When these things were heard, the disciples wondered greatly, and said, Who then may be safe?

<sup>26</sup> Jesus beheld, and said to them, With men this thing is impossible; but with God all things be possible.

<sup>27</sup> Then Peter answered, and said to him, Lo! we have forsaken all things, and we have pursued thee; what then shall be to us?

<sup>28</sup> And Jesus said to them, Truly I say to you, that ye that have forsaken all things, and have pursued me, in the regeneration when man's Son shall sit in the seat of his majesty, [*also*] ye shall sit on twelve seats, deeming the twelve kindreds of Israel.

<sup>29</sup> And every man that forsaketh house, [*or*] brethren or sisters, [*or*] father or mother, [*or*] wife or children, or fields, for my name, he shall take an hundredfold, and shall wield ever-lasting life.

<sup>30</sup> But many shall be, the first the last, and the last the first.

## CHAPTER 20

<sup>1</sup> The kingdom of heavens is like to an husbandman, that went out first by the morrow [*or early*], to hire work-men into his vineyard.

<sup>2</sup> And when the covenant was made with the workmen, of a penny for the day, he sent them into his vineyard.

<sup>3</sup> And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market.

<sup>4</sup> And he said to them, Go ye also into mine vineyard, and that that shall be rightful, I shall give to you. And they went forth.

<sup>5</sup> Again he went out about the sixth hour, and the ninth, and did in like manner.

<sup>6</sup> But about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing; and said to them, What stand ye idle here all day?

<sup>7</sup> They say to him, For no man hath hired us. He saith to them, Go ye also into my vineyard.

<sup>8</sup> And when evening was come, the lord of the vineyard saith to his procurator, Call the workmen, and yield to them their hire, and begin thou at the last till to the first.

<sup>9</sup> And so when they were come, that came about the eleventh hour, also they took every each of them a penny, [*or even-pence, that is, every man a penny*].

<sup>10</sup> But the first came, and deemed, that they should take more, but they [*also*] took each one by themselves a penny [*or even-pence*].

<sup>11</sup> and in the taking, they grutched against the husband-man,

<sup>12</sup> and said, These last wrought one hour, and thou hast made them even to us, that have borne the charge of the day, and [*the*] heat?

<sup>13</sup> And he answered to one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee none wrong [*or no wrong*]; whether thou hast not accorded with me for a penny?

<sup>14</sup> Take thou that that is thine, and go; for I will give to this last *man*, as to thee.

<sup>15</sup> Whether it is not leaveful to me to do that that I will? Whether thine eye is wicked, for I am good?

<sup>16</sup> So the last shall be the first, and the first shall be the last; for many be called, but few *be* chosen.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus went up to Jerusalem, and took his twelve disciples in private, and said to them,

<sup>18</sup> Lo! we go up to Jerusalem, and man's Son shall be betaken to princes of priests, and to scribes; and they shall condemn him to death.

<sup>19</sup> And they shall betake him to heathen men, for to be scorned, and scourged, and crucified; and the third day he shall rise again *to life*.

<sup>20</sup> Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee came to him with her sons, honouring [*or worshipping*], and asking something of him.

<sup>21</sup> And he said to her, What wilt thou? She saith to him, Say that these two my sons sit [*or that these my two sons sit*], one at thy right half, and one at thy left half, in thy kingdom.

<sup>22</sup> Jesus answered, and said, Ye know not what ye ask. May ye drink of the cup that I shall drink of? [*or that I am to drink?*] They say to him, We may.

<sup>23</sup> He saith to them, Ye shall drink my cup; but to sit at my right half or [*at my*] left half, is not mine to give to you; but to whom it is made ready of my Father.

<sup>24</sup> And the ten hearing, had indignation of the two brethren.

<sup>25</sup> But Jesus called them to him, and said, Ye know, that [*the*] princes of heathen men be lords of them, and they that be [*the*] greater [*or more*], use power on them.

<sup>26</sup> It shall not be so among you; but whoever will be made [*the*] greater [*or more*] among you, be he your minister;

<sup>27</sup> and whoever among you will be the first, he shall be your servant.

<sup>28</sup> As man's Son came not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life redemption for many.

<sup>29</sup> And when they went out of Jericho, much people pursued him.

<sup>30</sup> And lo! two blind men sat beside the way, and heard that Jesus passed; and they cried, and said, Lord, the son of David, have mercy on us.

<sup>31</sup> And the people blamed them, that they should be still; and they cried the more, and said, Lord, the son of David, have mercy on us.

<sup>32</sup> And Jesus stood, and called them, and said, What will ye, that I do to you?

<sup>33</sup> They say to him, Lord, that our eyes be opened.

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus had mercy on them, and touched their eyes; and anon they saw, and pursued him.

## CHAPTER 21

<sup>1</sup> And when Jesus came nigh to Jerusalem, and came to Bethphage, at [*or to*] the mount of Olives, then sent he his two disciples [*or then Jesus sent his two disciples*],

<sup>2</sup> and said to them, Go ye into the castle that is against you, and anon ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her; untie ye, and bring to me.

<sup>3</sup> And if any man say to you anything, say ye, that the Lord hath need to them; and anon he shall leave them.

<sup>4</sup> All this was done, that that thing should be fulfilled, that was said by the prophet, saying,

<sup>5</sup> Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Lo! thy king cometh to thee, meek, sitting on an ass, and a foal [*or a colt*] of an ass under yoke.

<sup>6</sup> And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded [*to*] them.

<sup>7</sup> And they brought an ass, and the foal [*or the colt*], and laid their clothes on them, and made him [*to*] sit above.

<sup>8</sup> And full much people spreaded their clothes in the way; others cutted branches of trees, and strewed in the way.

<sup>9</sup> And the people that went before, and that pursued, cried, and said, Hosanna to the son of David; blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in high things [*or in the highest things*].

<sup>10</sup> And when he was entered into Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, and said, Who is this?

<sup>11</sup> But the people said, This is Jesus, the prophet, of Nazareth of Galilee.

<sup>12</sup> And Jesus entered into the temple of God, and cast out of the temple all that bought and sold; and he turned upside-down the boards of changers, and the chairs of men that sold culvers.

<sup>13</sup> And he said to them, It is written, Mine house shall be called an house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

<sup>14</sup> And blind and crooked came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

<sup>15</sup> But the princes of priests, and the scribes, seeing the marvelous [*or the wonderful*] things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David, they had indignation [*or disdain*],

<sup>16</sup> and said to him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus said to them, Yea; whether ye have never read, That of the mouth of young children, and of suckling children, thou hast made perfect praising?

<sup>17</sup> And when he had left them, he went forth out of the city, into Bethany; and there he dwelt, and taught them of the kingdom of God.

<sup>18</sup> But on the morrow, he, turning again into the city, hungered.

<sup>19</sup> And he saw a fig tree beside the way, and came to it, and found nothing therein [*or thereon*], but leaves only. And he said to it, Never fruit come forth of thee [*or Never be fruit born of thee*], into without end. And anon the fig tree was dried up.

<sup>20</sup> And the disciples saw, and wondered, saying, How anon it dried [*or How it dried up anon*].

<sup>21</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, Truly I say to you, if ye have faith, and doubt not, not only ye shall do of the fig tree, but also if ye say to this hill, Take [*away thee*], and cast thee into the sea, it shall be done so [*or it shall be done*].

<sup>22</sup> And all things whatever ye believing shall ask in prayer, ye shall take.

23 And when he came into the temple, the princes of priests, and elder men of the people, came to him that taught, and said, In what power doest thou these things? and who gave [to] thee this power?

24 Jesus answered, and said to them, And I shall ask you one word, the which if ye tell me, I shall say to you, in what power I do these things.

25 Of whence was the baptism of John; of heaven, or of men? And they thought within themselves, saying, If we say of heaven, he shall say to us, Why then believe ye not to him?

26 If we say of men, we dread the people, for all had John as a prophet.

27 And they answered to Jesus, and said, We know not. And he said to them, Neither I say to you, in what power I do these things.

28 But what seemeth to you? A man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work this day in my vineyard.

29 And he answered, and said, I will not; but afterward he repented [*or stirred by penance*], and went forth.

30 But he came to the other, and said in like manner. And he answered, and said, Lord, I go; and he went not.

31 Who of the twain did the father's will? They say to him, The first. Jesus saith to them, Truly I say to you, for publicans and whores shall go before you into the kingdom of God.

32 For John came to you in the way of rightwiseness, and ye believed not to him; but publicans and whores believed to him. But ye saw, and had no repenting after [*or had not penance afterward*], that ye believed to him.

33 Hear ye another parable. There was an husbandman, that planted a vineyard, and hedged it about, and delped a presser therein, and builded a tower, and hired it to earth-tillers, and went far in pilgrimage.

34 And when the time of fruits nighed, he sent his servants to the earth-tillers, to take fruits of it.

35 And the earth-tillers took his servants, and they beat one, they slew another, and stoned another.

36 Again he sent other servants, more than the first, and in like manner they did to them [*or and they did to them in like manner*].

37 And at the last he sent his son to them, and said, They shall dread my son.

<sup>38</sup> But the earth-tillers, seeing the son, said within themselves, This is the heir; come ye, slay we him, and we shall have his heritage.

<sup>39</sup> And they took him, and casted him out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.

<sup>40</sup> Therefore when the lord of the vineyard shall come, what shall he do to those earth-tillers?

<sup>41</sup> They say to him, He shall lose evil, the evil men, and he shall set to hire his vineyard to other earth-tillers, which shall yield to him fruit in their times.

<sup>42</sup> Jesus saith to them, Read ye never in scriptures, The stone which the builders reprov'd, this is made into the head of the corner? Of the Lord this thing is done, and it is marvelous [*or wonderful*] in our eyes.

<sup>43</sup> Therefore I say to you, that the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and [*it*] shall be given to a folk doing [*the*] fruits of it.

<sup>44</sup> And he that shall fall on this stone, shall be broken; but on whom it shall fall, it shall bruise him [*or it shall pound him*] all to pieces.

<sup>45</sup> And when the princes of priests, and [*the*] Pharisees had heard his parables, they knew that he said of them.

<sup>46</sup> And they sought to hold him, but they dreaded the people, for they had him as a prophet.

## CHAPTER 22

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus answered, and spake again in parables to them, and said,

<sup>2</sup> The kingdom of heavens is made like to a king that made weddings to his son.

<sup>3</sup> And he sent his servants to call men that were bidden to the weddings, and they would not come.

<sup>4</sup> Again he sent other servants, and said, Say to the men that be bidden to the feast, Lo! I have made ready my meat, my bulls and my volatiles, [*or my fat beasts*], be slain, and all things be ready; come ye to the weddings.

<sup>5</sup> But they despised, [*or reckoned not*], and went forth, one into his town [*or vineyard*], another to his merchandise.

<sup>6</sup> But others held his servants, and tormented them, and slew [*them*].

<sup>7</sup> But the king, when he had heard, was wroth; and he sent his hosts, and destroyed those man-quellers, and burnt their city.

<sup>8</sup> Then he said to his servants, The weddings be ready, but they that were called to the feast, were not worthy.

<sup>9</sup> Therefore go ye into the ends of ways, and whomever ye find, call ye to the weddings.

<sup>10</sup> And his servants went out into the ways, and gathered together all that they found, good and evil; and the bridal was [*for the weddings be*] full-filled with men sitting at the meat.

<sup>11</sup> And the king entered, to see men sitting at the meat; and he saw there a man not clothed with bride [*for bridal*] clothes.

<sup>12</sup> And he said to him, Friend, how enteredest thou hither without bride clothes? And he was dumb.

<sup>13</sup> Then the king bade [*or said to*] his ministers, Bind him both hands and feet, and send ye him into outer-more [*or uttermore*] darkneses; there shall be weeping, and grinding of teeth.

<sup>14</sup> For many be called, but few *be* chosen.

<sup>15</sup> Then Pharisees went away, and took a counsel [*or took counsel*] to take Jesus in word.

<sup>16</sup> And they send to him their disciples, with Herodians, and said, Master, we know, that thou art soothfast, and thou teachest in truth the way of God, and thou chargest not [*or there is no care to thee*] of any man, for thou beholdest not the person of men.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore say to us, what seemeth to thee. Is it leaveful that tribute be given to the emperor [*or Caesar*], either [*or*] nay?

<sup>18</sup> And when Jesus had known the wickedness of them, he said, Hypocrites, what tempt ye me?

<sup>19</sup> Show ye to me the print of the money. And they brought to him a penny.

<sup>20</sup> And Jesus said to them, Whose is this image, and the writing above?

<sup>21</sup> They say to him, The emperor's [*or Of Caesar*]. Then he said to them, Therefore yield ye to the emperor [*or Caesar*] those things that be the emperor's [*or Caesar's*], and to God those things that be of God.

<sup>22</sup> And they heard, and wondered; and they left him, and went away.

<sup>23</sup> In that day Sadducees, that say there is no rising again *to life*, came to him, and asked him,

<sup>24</sup> and said, Master, Moses said, if any man is dead, not having a son, that his brother wed his wife, and raise seed to his brother.

<sup>25</sup> And there were seven brethren to us; and the first wedded a wife, and is dead. And he had no seed, and left his wife to his brother;

<sup>26</sup> also the second, and the third, till to the seventh.

<sup>27</sup> But the last of all, [*also*] the woman is dead.

<sup>28</sup> Also [*or Therefore*] in the rising again *to life*, whose wife of the seven shall she be? for all had her.

<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered, and said to them, Ye err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the virtue of God.

<sup>30</sup> For in the rising again *to life*, neither they shall wed, neither shall be wedded; but they be as the angels of God in heaven.

<sup>31</sup> And of the rising again of dead men, have ye not read, that [*it*] is said of the Lord, that saith to you,

<sup>32</sup> I am God of Abraham, and God of Isaac, and God of Jacob? he is not God of dead men, but of living men.

<sup>33</sup> And the people hearing, wondered on his teaching.

<sup>34</sup> And the Pharisees heard that he had put silence to Sadducees, and came together.

<sup>35</sup> And one of them, a teacher of the law, asked Jesus, and tempted him,

<sup>36</sup> Master, which is a great command-ment in the law?

<sup>37</sup> Jesus said to him, Thou shalt love thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*], of all thine heart, and in all thy soul, and in all thy mind.

<sup>38</sup> This is the first and the most commandment.

<sup>39</sup> And the second is like to this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>40</sup> In these two commandments hangeth all the law and the prophets.

<sup>41</sup> And when the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

<sup>42</sup> and said, What seemeth to you of Christ, whose son is he? They say to him, Of David.

<sup>43</sup> He saith to them, How then David in spirit calleth him Lord, and saith,

<sup>44</sup> The Lord said to my Lord, Sit [*thou*] on my right half, till I put thine enemies a stool of thy feet?

<sup>45</sup> Then if David calleth him Lord, how is he his son?

<sup>46</sup> And no man might answer a word to him, neither any man was hardy from that day, to ask him more.

## CHAPTER 23

<sup>1</sup> Then Jesus spake to the people, and to his disciples,

<sup>2</sup> and said, On the chair of Moses, scribes and Pharisees have sat.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore keep ye, and do ye all things, whatever things they say to you. But do not ye do after their works; for they say, and do not.



4 And they bind grievous charges, and that may not be borne, and put on *[the]* shoulders of men; but with their finger they will not move them.

5 Therefore they do all their works to be seen of men; for they draw abroad their phylacteries, and magnify *[their]* hems.

6 And they love the first sitting places in *[or at]* suppers, and the first chairs in synagogues;

7 and salutations in *[the]* chapping, and to be called of men, master.

8 But do not ye be called master; for one is your master, and all ye be brethren.

9 And do not ye call to you a father on earth, for one is your Father, that is in heavens.

10 Neither be ye called masters, for one is your master, Christ.

11 He that is greatest among you, shall be your minister.

12 For he that higheth himself, shall be meeked; and he that meeketh himself, shall be enhanced.

13 But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that close the kingdom of heavens *[or the realm of heaven]* before men; and ye enter not, neither suffer other men entering to enter.

14 Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that eat the houses of widows, and pray by long prayer; for this thing ye shall take the more doom.

15 Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that go about the sea and the land, to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him a son of hell, double more than ye be.

16 Woe to you, blind leaders, that say, Whoever sweareth by the temple of God, it is nothing; but he that sweareth in the gold of the temple, is debtor *[or oweth]*.

17 Ye fools and blind, for what is greater, the gold, or the temple that halloweth the gold?

18 And whoever sweareth in the altar, it is nothing; but he that sweareth in the gift that is on the altar, oweth *[or is a debtor]*.

19 Blind men, for what is more, the gift, or the altar that halloweth the gift?

20 Therefore he that sweareth in the altar, sweareth in it, and in all things that be thereon.

21 And he that sweareth in the temple, sweareth in it, and in him that dwelleth in the temple.

22 And he that sweareth in heaven, sweareth in the throne of God, and in him that sitteth thereon.

<sup>23</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that tithe mint, anise, and cumin, and have left those things that be of more charge of the law, doom, and mercy, and faith. And it behooved [*or needed*] to do these things, and not to leave those.

<sup>24</sup> Blind leaders, cleansing a gnat, but swallowing a camel.

<sup>25</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that cleanse the cup and the platter withoutforth; but within ye be full of raven, and uncleanness.

<sup>26</sup> Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the cup and the platter withinforth, that [*also*] that that is withoutforth be made clean.

<sup>27</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that be like to sepulchres whited [*or made white*], which withoutforth seem fair to men; but within they be full of bones of dead men, and of all filth.

<sup>28</sup> So ye withoutforth seem just [*or rightful*] to men; but within ye be full of hypocrisy and wickedness.

<sup>29</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, that build [*the*] sepulchres of prophets, and make fair the burials of just men,

<sup>30</sup> and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not have been their fellows in the blood of prophets.

<sup>31</sup> And so ye be in witnessing to yourselves, that ye be the sons of them that slew the prophets.

<sup>32</sup> And full-fill ye the measure of your fathers.

<sup>33</sup> Ye adders, and adders' brood [*or fruits of adders*], how shall ye flee from the doom of hell?

<sup>34</sup> Therefore lo! I send to you prophets, and wise men, and scribes [*or writers*]; and of them ye shall slay and crucify, and of them ye shall scourge in your synagogues, and shall pursue from city into city [*or from city to city*];

<sup>35</sup> that all the just blood come on you, that was shed on the earth, from the blood of just Abel to the blood of Zechariah, the son of Barachiah, whom ye slew betwixt the temple and the altar.

<sup>36</sup> Truly I say to you, all these things shall come on this generation.

<sup>37</sup> Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that slayest prophets, and stonest them that be sent to thee, how oft would I gather together thy children, as an hen gathereth together her chickens under her wings, and thou wouldest not.

<sup>38</sup> Lo! your house shall be left to you desert [*or forsaken*].

<sup>39</sup> And I say to you, ye shall not see me from henceforth, till ye say, Blessed is *he*, that cometh in the name of the Lord.

## CHAPTER 24

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus went out of the temple; and his disciples came to him, to show him the buildings of the temple.

<sup>2</sup> But he answered, and said to them, See ye all these things? Truly I say to you, a stone shall not be left on a stone, that not it shall be destroyed [*for which shall not be destroyed*].

<sup>3</sup> And when he sat on the mount of Olives, his disciples came to him privily, and said, Say to us, when these things shall be, and what token of thy coming, and of the ending of the world.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, Look [*or See*] ye, that no man deceive you.

<sup>5</sup> For many shall come in my name, and shall say, I am Christ; and they shall deceive many.

<sup>6</sup> For ye shall hear battles, and opinions of battles; see ye that ye be not disturbed [*or distroubled*]; for it behooveth these things to be done, but not yet is the end.

<sup>7</sup> For folk shall rise together against folk, and realm against realm, and pestilences, and hungers, and earth-movings shall be by places;

<sup>8</sup> and all these be beginnings of sorrows.

<sup>9</sup> Then men shall betake you into tribulation, and shall slay you, and ye shall be in hate [*or in hatred*] to all folks for my name.

<sup>10</sup> And then many shall be caused to stumble, and betray each other, and they shall hate each other.

<sup>11</sup> And many false prophets shall rise, and deceive many.

<sup>12</sup> And for wickedness shall be plenteous, the charity of many shall wax cold;

<sup>13</sup> but he that shall dwell still [*or steadfast*] into the end, shall be safe.

<sup>14</sup> And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, in witnessing to all folks; and then the end shall come.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore when ye see the abomination of discomfort, that is said of Daniel, the prophet, standing in the holy place; he that readeth, understand he;

<sup>16</sup> then they that be in Judea, flee to the mountains;

<sup>17</sup> and he that is in the house roof, come not down to take anything of his house;

<sup>18</sup> and he that is in the field, turn not again to take his coat.

<sup>19</sup> But woe to them that be with child, and nourishing [*or nursing*] in those days.

<sup>20</sup> Pray ye, that your flying be not made in winter, or in the sabbath.

<sup>21</sup> For then shall be great tribulation, what manner was not from the beginning of the world to now [*or till now*], neither shall be made.

<sup>22</sup> And but those days had been abridged, each flesh, [*or all flesh, that is, mankind*], should not be made safe; but those days shall be made short, for the chosen men.

<sup>23</sup> Then if any man say to you, Lo! here is Christ, or there, do not ye believe.

<sup>24</sup> For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and they shall give great tokens [*or great signs*] and wonders; so that also the chosen be led into error, if it may be done.

<sup>25</sup> Lo! I have before-said to you.

<sup>26</sup> Therefore if they say to you, Lo! he is in desert, do not ye go out; lo! *he is* in privy places, do not ye believe.

<sup>27</sup> For as lightning goeth out from the east, and appeareth into the west, so shall be also the coming of man's Son.

<sup>28</sup> Wherever the body shall be, also the eagles shall be gathered thither.

<sup>29</sup> And anon after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be made dark, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the virtues of heavens shall be moved [*or stirred*].

<sup>30</sup> And then the token of man's Son shall appear in heaven, and then all the kindreds [*or lineages*] of the earth shall wail; and they shall see man's Son coming in the clouds of heaven, with much virtue, and majesty.

<sup>31</sup> And he shall send his angels with a trumpet, and a great voice; and they shall gather his chosen from four winds, from the highest things of heaven to the ends of them.

<sup>32</sup> And learn ye the parable of the fig tree. When his branch is now tender, and the leaves be sprung, ye know that summer is nigh;

<sup>33</sup> and so ye when ye shall see all these things, know ye that it is nigh, in the gates.

<sup>34</sup> Truly I say to you, for this generation shall not pass, till all things be done;

<sup>35</sup> heaven and earth shall pass, but my words shall not pass.

<sup>36</sup> But of that day and hour no man knoweth, neither [*the*] angels of heaven, but the Father alone.

<sup>37</sup> But as it was in the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of man's Son.

<sup>38</sup> For as in the days before the great flood, they were eating and drinking, wedding and taking to wedding, till that day, that Noah entered into the ship;

<sup>39</sup> and they knew not, till the great flood came, and took all men, so shall be the coming of man's Son.

<sup>40</sup> Then twain shall be in a field, one shall be taken, and the other left;

<sup>41</sup> two *women* shall be grinding in a quern [*or mill*], one shall be taken, and the other left; twain in a bed, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

<sup>42</sup> Therefore wake ye, for ye know not in what hour the Lord shall come.

<sup>43</sup> But know ye this, that if the husbandman knew in what hour the thief were to come, certainly he would wake, and suffer not his house to be undermined.

<sup>44</sup> And therefore be ye ready, for in what hour ye guess not, man's Son shall come.

<sup>45</sup> Who guessest thou is a true [*or a faithful*] servant and prudent, whom his lord ordained on his meine, to give them meat in time?

<sup>46</sup> Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he shall come, shall find so doing.

<sup>47</sup> Truly I say to you, for on all his goods he shall ordain him.

<sup>48</sup> But if that evil servant say in his heart, My lord tarrieth to come,

<sup>49</sup> and beginneth to smite his even-servants, and to eat, and drink with drunken men;

<sup>50</sup> the lord of that servant shall come in the day [*in*] which he hopeth not, and in the hour that he knoweth not,

<sup>51</sup> and shall part him, and put his part with hypocrites; there shall be weeping, and grinding of teeth.

## CHAPTER 25

<sup>1</sup> Then the kingdom of heavens shall be like to ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went out to meet the husband and the wife;

<sup>2</sup> and five of them were fools, and five prudent.

<sup>3</sup> But the five fools took their lamps, and took not oil with them;

<sup>4</sup> but the prudent took oil in their vessels with the lamps.

<sup>5</sup> And whiles the husband tarried, all they napped and slept.

<sup>6</sup> But at midnight a cry was made, Lo! the spouse cometh, go ye out to meet with him [*or to meet him*].

<sup>7</sup> Then all those virgins rose up, and arrayed their lamps.

<sup>8</sup> And the fools said to the wise, Give ye to us of your oil, for our lamps be quenched.

<sup>9</sup> The prudent answered, and said, Lest peradventure it suffice not to us and to you, go ye rather to men that sell, and buy to you.

<sup>10</sup> And while they went to buy, the spouse came; and those that were ready, entered with him to the weddings; and the gate was shut.

<sup>11</sup> And at the last the other virgins came, and said, Lord, lord, open to us.

<sup>12</sup> And he answered, and said, Truly I say to you, I know you not.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore wake ye, for ye know not the day nor the hour.

<sup>14</sup> For as a man that goeth [*far*] in pilgrimage, called his servants, and betook to them his goods;

<sup>15</sup> and to one he gave five bezants or talents, to another twain, and to another one, to each after his own virtue; and he went forth anon.

<sup>16</sup> And he that had five bezants [*or talents*] went forth, and wrought in them, and won other five.

<sup>17</sup> Also and he that had taken twain, won other twain.

<sup>18</sup> But he that had taken one, went forth, and delved in the earth, and hid the money of his lord.

<sup>19</sup> But after long time, the lord of those servants came, and reckoned with them.

<sup>20</sup> And he that had taken five bezants [*or talents*], came, and brought other five, and said, Lord, thou betookest to me five bezants [*or talents*], lo! I have gotten above five others.

<sup>21</sup> His lord said to him, Well be thou, good servant and faithful; for on few things thou hast been true [*or faithful*], I shall ordain thee on many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

<sup>22</sup> And he that had taken two bezants, *or two talents*, came, and said, Lord, thou betookest to me two bezants [*or talents*]; lo! I have won [*or gotten*] over other twain.

<sup>23</sup> His lord said to him, Well be thou, good servant and true [*or faithful*]; for on few things thou hast been true [*or faithful*], I shall ordain thee on many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

<sup>24</sup> But he that had taken one bezant [*or talent*], came, and said, Lord, I know that thou art an hard man; thou reapest where thou hast not sown, and thou gatherest together where thou hast not spread abroad;

<sup>25</sup> and I dreading, went, and hid thy bezant [*or talent*] in the earth; lo! thou hast that that is thine.

26 His lord answered, and said to him, Evil servant and slow, knewest thou that I reap where I sowed not, and gather together where I spreaded not abroad?

27 Therefore it behooved thee to betake my money to exchangers, that when I came, I should have received that that is mine with usuries.

28 Therefore take away from him the bezant [*or talent*], and give to him that hath ten bezants [*or talents*].

29 For to every man that hath me shall give, and he shall increase [*+or For to every man having it shall be given, and he shall have plenty, or increase*]; but from him that hath not, also that that he seemeth to have, shall be taken away from him.

30 And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into outer-more [*or uttermore*] darkneses; there shall be weeping, and grinding of teeth.

31 When man's Son shall come in his majesty, and all his angels with him, then he shall sit on the seat of his majesty;

32 and all folks shall be gathered before him, and he shall separate [*or part*] them atwain, as a shepherd separateth [*or parteth*] sheep from kids;

33 and he shall set the sheep on his right half, and the kids on the [*or his*] left half.

34 Then the king shall say to them, that shall be on his right half, Come ye, the blessed of my Father, take ye in possession the kingdom made ready to you from the making [*or the beginning*] of the world.

35 For I hungered [*or I was hungry*], and ye gave me to eat; I thirsted, and ye gave me to drink; I was harbour-less, and ye harboured me;

36 naked, and ye covered me; sick, and ye visited me; I was in prison, and ye came to me.

37 Then just men shall answer to him, and say, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and we fed thee; thirsty, and we gave to thee [*or we gave thee*] drink?

38 and when saw we thee harbour-less, and we harboured thee [*or we gathered thee to harbour*]; or naked, and we covered thee?

39 or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and we came to thee?

40 And the king answering shall say to them, Truly I say to you, as long as ye did to one of these my least brethren, ye did to me.

41 Then the king shall say also to them, that shall be on his left half, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, that is made ready to the devil and his angels.

<sup>42</sup> For I hungered, and ye gave not *[to]* me to eat; I thirsted, and ye gave not *[to]* me to drink;

<sup>43</sup> I was harbourless, and ye harboured not me *[or ye gathered not me to harbour]*; naked, and ye covered not me; sick, and in prison, and ye visited not me.

<sup>44</sup> Then and they shall answer to him, and shall say, Lord, when saw we thee hungering, or thirsting, or harbourless, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and we served not to thee?

<sup>45</sup> Then he shall answer to them, and say, Truly I say to you, as long as ye did not to one of these least, neither ye did to me *[or ye did not to me]*.

<sup>46</sup> And these shall go into ever-lasting torment; but the just men shall go into everlasting life.

## CHAPTER 26

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when Jesus had ended all these words, he said to his disciples,

<sup>2</sup> Ye know, that after two days pask shall be made, and man's Son shall be betaken to be crucified.

<sup>3</sup> Then the princes of priests, and the elder men of the people were gathered into the hall of the prince of priests, that was said Caiaphas,

<sup>4</sup> and made a counsel to hold Jesus with guile, and slay him;

<sup>5</sup> but they said, Not in the holiday *[or in the feast day]*, lest peradventure noise were made in the people.

<sup>6</sup> And when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leprous,

<sup>7</sup> a woman that had a box of alabaster of precious ointment, came to him, and shedded *it* out on the head of him resting.

<sup>8</sup> And the disciples seeing had disdain, and said, Whereto is this loss?

<sup>9</sup> for it might be sold for much *[or this might have been sold for much]*, and be given to poor men.

<sup>10</sup> But Jesus knew, and said to them, What be ye heavy to this woman? for she hath wrought in me a good work *[or she hath wrought a good work in me]*.

<sup>11</sup> For ye shall ever~~more~~ have poor men with you, but ye shall not always have me.

<sup>12</sup> For this woman sending this ointment into my body, did *[for]* to bury me.

<sup>13</sup> Truly I say to you, wherever this gospel shall be preached in all the world, it shall be said, that she did this, in mind of him.



14 Then one of the twelve, that was called Judas Iscariot, went forth [*or went*] to the princes of priests,

15 and said to them, What will ye give to me, and I shall betake him to you? And they ordained to him thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity, to betray him.

17 And in the first day of therf loaves the disciples came to Jesus, and said, Where wilt thou [*that*] we make ready to thee, to eat pask?

18 Jesus said, Go ye into the city to a man, and say to him, The master saith, My time is nigh; at thee I make pask with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did, as Jesus commanded to them; and they made the pask ready.

20 And when the eventide was come, he sat to [*or at the*] meat, with his twelve disciples.

21 And he said to them, as they ate, Truly I say to you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they full sorry, [*or made sorrowful greatly*], began each by himself to say, Lord, whether I am *he*?

23 And he answered, and said, He that putteth with me his hand in the platter, shall betray me.

24 Forsooth man's Son goeth, as it is written of him; but woe to that man, by whom man's Son shall be betrayed; it were good to him, if that man had not been born.

25 But Judas that betrayed him, answered, saying, Master, whether I am *he*? Jesus said to him, Thou hast said.

26 And while they supped, Jesus took bread, and blessed [*it*], and brake, and gave to his disciples, and said, Take ye, and eat; this is my body.

27 And he took the cup, and did thankings, and gave to them, and said, Drink ye all thereof;

28 this is my blood of the new testament, which shall be shed for many, into remission of sins.

29 And I say to you, I shall not drink from this time, of this fruit of the vine, into that day when I shall drink it new with you, in the kingdom of my Father.

30 And when the hymn was said, they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 Then Jesus said to them, All ye shall suffer cause of stumbling in me, in this night; for it is written, I shall smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered.

32 But after that I shall rise again, I shall go before you into Galilee.

<sup>33</sup> Peter answered, and said to him, Though all [*men*] shall be caused to stumble in thee, I shall never be caused to stumble.

<sup>34</sup> Jesus said to him, Truly I say to thee, for in this night before the cock crow, thrice thou shalt deny me.

<sup>35</sup> Peter said to him, Yea, though it behooveth that I die with thee, I shall not deny thee. Also all the disciples said.

<sup>36</sup> Then Jesus came with them into a town, that is said Gethsemane. And he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go thither, and pray.

<sup>37</sup> And when he had taken Peter, and two sons of Zebedee, he began to be heavy and sorry [*or to be sorrowful and heavy in heart*].

<sup>38</sup> Then he said to them, My soul is sorrowful to the death; abide ye here, and wake ye with me.

<sup>39</sup> And he went forth a little, and felled down on his face, praying, and saying, My Father, if it is possible, pass this cup from me [*or this cup pass from me*]; nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.

<sup>40</sup> And he came to his disciples, and found them sleeping. And he said to Peter, So, whether ye might not one hour wake with me? [*or might ye not one hour wake with me?*]

<sup>41</sup> Wake ye, and pray ye, that ye enter not into temptation; for the spirit is ready, but the flesh is sick, [*or unstable, or unsteadfast*].

<sup>42</sup> Again the second time he went, and prayed, saying, My Father, if this cup may not pass, but I drink it, thy will be done.

<sup>43</sup> And again he came, and found them sleeping; for their eyes were heavied.

<sup>44</sup> And he left them, and went again, and prayed the third time, and said the same word.

<sup>45</sup> Then he came to his disciples, and said to them, Sleep ye now, and rest ye; lo! the hour hath nighed, and man's Son shall be betaken [*or be betrayed*] into the hands of sinners;

<sup>46</sup> rise ye, go we; lo! he that shall take me, is nigh.

<sup>47</sup> Yet while he spake, lo! Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great company, with swords and bats [*or staves*], sent from the princes of priests, and from the elder men of the people.

<sup>48</sup> And he that betrayed him, gave to them a token, and said, Whomever I shall kiss, he it is; hold ye him.

<sup>49</sup> And anon he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master; and he kissed him.

<sup>50</sup> And Jesus said to him, Friend, whereto art thou come? Then they came nigh, and laid hands on Jesus, and held him.

51 And lo! one of them that were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew out his sword; and he smote the servant of the prince of priests, and cut off his ear.

52 Then Jesus said to him, Turn thy sword into his place; for all that take sword, shall perish by sword.

53 Whether guessest thou, that I may not pray my Father, and he shall give to me now more than twelve legions of angels?

54 How then shall the scriptures be fulfilled? for so it behooveth to be done.

55 In that hour Jesus said to the people, As to a thief ye have gone out, with swords and bats [*or staves*], to take me; day by day I sat among you, and taught in the temple, and ye held me not.

56 But all this thing was done, that the scriptures of prophets should be fulfilled. Then all the disciples fled, and left him.

57 And they held Jesus, and led him to Caiaphas, the prince of priests, where the scribes and the Pharisees, and the elder men of the people were come together [*or where the scribes and the elder men of the people had come together*].

58 But Peter pursued him afar, into the hall of the prince of priests; and he went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

59 And the prince of priests, and all the council sought false witnessing against Jesus, that they should [*be*] take him to death;

60 and they found not, when many false witnesses were come. But at the last, two false witnesses came,

61 and said, This said, I may destroy the temple of God, and after the third day [*or three days*] build it again.

62 And the prince of priests rose, and said to him, Answerest thou nothing to those things, that these witness against thee?

63 But Jesus was still. And the prince of priests said to him, I conjure thee by the living God, that thou say to us, if thou art Christ, the Son of God.

64 Jesus said to him, Thou hast said; nevertheless I say to you, hereafter ye shall see man's Son sitting at the right half of the virtue of God, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the prince of priests rent his clothes, and said, He hath blasphemed; what yet have we need to witnesses? lo! now ye have heard blasphemy;

66 what seemeth to you? And they answered, and said, He is guilty of death.

<sup>67</sup> Then they spat in his face, and smote him with buffets; and others gave strokes with the palm of their hands in[*to*] his face,

<sup>68</sup> and said, Thou Christ, declare [*or prophesy*] to us, who is he that smote thee?

<sup>69</sup> And Peter sat without in the hall; and a damsel [*or an handmaid*] came to him, and said, Thou were with Jesus of Galilee.

<sup>70</sup> And he denied before all [*men*], and said, I know not what thou sayest.

<sup>71</sup> And when he went out at the gate, another damsel [*or handmaid*] saw him, and said to them that were there, And this was with Jesus of Nazareth.

<sup>72</sup> And again he denied with an oath, For I knew not the man.

<sup>73</sup> And a little after, they that stood came, and said to Peter, Truly and thou art [*one*] of them; for thy speech maketh thee known.

<sup>74</sup> Then he began to curse and to swear, that he knew not the man. And anon the cock crew.

<sup>75</sup> And Peter bethought on the word of Jesus, that he had said, Before the cock crow, thrice thou shalt deny me. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

## CHAPTER 27

<sup>1</sup> But when the morrowtide was come, all the princes of priests, and the elder men of the people took counsel against Jesus, that they should take him to the death.

<sup>2</sup> And they led him bound, and betook him to Pilate of Pontii, [*chief*] justice [*or the president*].

<sup>3</sup> Then Judas that betrayed him, saw that he was condemned, he repented, and brought again the thirty pieces [*of silver*] to the princes of priests, and to the elder men of the people,

<sup>4</sup> and said, I have sinned, betraying rightful [*or just*] blood. And they said, What to us? busy thee [*or see thou*].

<sup>5</sup> And when he had cast forth the [*pieces of*] silver in the temple, he passed forth, and went, and hanged himself with a snare.

<sup>6</sup> And the princes of priests took the [*pieces of*] silver, and said, It is not leaveful to put it into the treasury, for it is the price of blood.

<sup>7</sup> And when they had taken counsel, they bought with it [*or with them*] a field of a potter, into [*the*] burying of pilgrims.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore that field is called Aceldama, that is, a field of blood, into this day.

9 Then that was fulfilled, that was said by the prophet Jeremy saying, And they have taken thirty pieces [*of silver*], the price of a man appraised, whom they appraised of the children of Israel;

10 and they gave them into a field of a potter, as the Lord hath ordained to me.

11 And Jesus stood before the dooms-man; and the justice [*or the president*] asked him, and said, Art thou king of Jews? Jesus saith to him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the princes of priests, and of the elder men of the people, he answered nothing.

13 Then Pilate saith to him, Hearest thou not, how many things [*or how many witnessings*], they say against thee?

14 And he answered not to him any word, so that the justice [*or the president*] wondered greatly.

15 But for a solemn day the justice [*or the president*] was wont to deliver to the people one bound, whom they would.

16 And he had then a famous man bound [*or he had one famous man bound*], that was said Barabbas.

17 Therefore Pilate said to them, when they were [*gathered*] together, Whom will ye, that I deliver to you? whether Barabbas, or Jesus, that is said Christ?

18 For he knew, that by envy they betrayed him [*or they betook him*].

19 And while he sat for doomsman [*or for judge*], his wife sent to him, and said, Nothing to thee and to that just man; for I have suffered this day many things for him, by a vision.

20 Forsooth the princes of priests, and the elder men counselled the people, that they should ask Barabbas, but they should destroy Jesus.

21 But the justice [*or the president*] answered, and said to them, Whom of the twain will ye, that be delivered to you? And they said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith to them, What then shall I do of Jesus, that is said Christ? All they say, Be he crucified.

23 The justice [*or The president*] saith to them, What evil hath he done? And they cried more, and said, Be he crucified.

24 And Pilate seeing that he profited nothing, but that the more noise was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the people, and said, I am guiltless [*or innocent*] of the blood of this rightful [*or this just*] man; busy you [*or see ye*].

25 And all the people answered, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 Then he delivered to them Barabbas, but he [*be*] took to them Jesus scourged, to be crucified.

27 Then [*the*] knights of the justice [*or the president*] took Jesus in the moot hall, and gathered to him all the company of knights.

28 And they unclothed him, and did about him a red mantle;

29 and they folded a crown of thorns, and put on his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled before him, and scorned him, and said, Hail, king of Jews.

30 And they spat on him, and took a reed, and smote his head.

31 And after that they had scorned him, they unclothed him of the mantle, and they clothed him with his clothes, and led him to crucify him [*or to be crucified*].

32 And as they went out, they found a man of Cyrene coming from the town, Simon by name; they constrained him to take his cross.

33 And they came into [*or to*] a place that is called Golgotha, that is, the place of Calvary.

34 And they gave [*to*] him to drink wine meddled or mingled with gall; and when he had tasted, he would not drink.

35 And after that they had crucified him, they parted his clothes, and cast lots, to fulfill that is said by the prophet, saying, They parted to them my clothes, and on my cloth they cast lots.

36 And they sat, and kept him;

37 and set [*or put*] above his head his cause, written, This is Jesus of Nazareth, king of Jews, [*or This is Jesus, the king of Jews*].

38 Then two thieves were crucified with him, one on the right half, and one on the left half.

39 And men that passed forth blas-phemed him, moving their heads,

40 and saying, Vath [*or Fie*]to thee, that destroyest the temple of God, and in the third day buildest it again; save thou thyself; if thou art the Son of God, come down of the cross [*or come down off the cross*].

41 Also and [*the*] princes of priests scorning, with scribes and elder men, said,

42 He made other men safe, he may not make himself safe; if he is [*the*] king of Israel, come he now down from the cross, and we believe to him;

43 he trusted in God; deliver he him now, if he will; for he said, That I am God's Son [*or I am the Son of God*].

44 And the thieves, that were crucified with him, upbraided him of the same thing.

45 But from the sixth hour, dark-nesses were made on all the earth [*for upon all the land*], till [*to*] the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a great voice, and said, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some men that stood there, and hearing, said, This calleth Elijah.

48 And anon one of them running, took and filled a sponge with vinegar, and put [*it*] on a reed, and gave to him to drink.

49 But others said, Suffer thou; see we whether Elijah come to deliver him.

50 Forsooth Jesus again cried with a great voice, and gave up the ghost [*for sent out the spirit*].

51 And lo! the veil of the temple was rent in two parts, from the highest to the lowest. And the earth shook [*or was moved*], and the stones were cloven [*or were cleft*];

52 and burials were opened, and many bodies of saints that had slept, rose up.

53 And they went out of their burials, and after his resurrection they came into the holy city, and appeared to many.

54 And the centurion and they that were with him keeping Jesus, when they saw the earth-shaking, and those things that were done, they dreaded greatly, and said, Verily this was God's Son.

55 And there were there many women afar [*or Forsooth many women were there afar*], that pursued Jesus from Galilee, and ministered to him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary, the mother of James, and of Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's sons.

57 But when the evening was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, Joseph by name, and he was a disciple of Jesus.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be given.

59 And when the body was taken, Joseph wrapped it in a clean sendal [*or a clean linen cloth*],

60 and laid it in his new burial, that he had hewn in a stone; and he wallowed a great stone to the door of the burial, and went away.

61 But Mary Magdalene and another Mary were there, sitting against the sepulchre.

<sup>62</sup> And on the tother day, that is after pask even, the princes of priests and [*the*] Pharisees came together to Pilate,

<sup>63</sup> and said, Sir [*or Sire*], we have mind, that that beguiler [*or deceiver*] said yet living, After three days I shall rise again to life.

<sup>64</sup> Therefore command thou, that the sepulchre be kept into the third day; lest his disciples come, and steal him, and say to the people, He hath risen from death; and the last error shall be worse than the former.

<sup>65</sup> Pilate said to them, Ye have the keeping; go ye, keep ye as ye can.

<sup>66</sup> And they went forth, and kept the sepulchre, marking [*or sealing*] the stone, with [*the*] keepers.

## CHAPTER 28

<sup>1</sup> But in the eventide of the sabbath, [*or holiday*], that beginneth to shine in the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene came, and another Mary, to see the sepulchre.

<sup>2</sup> And lo! there was made a great earth-shaking; for the angel of the Lord came down from heaven, and nighed, and turned away the stone, and sat thereon.

<sup>3</sup> And his looking was as lightning, and his clothes [*white*] as snow;

<sup>4</sup> and for dread of him the keepers were afeared, and they were made as dead men.

<sup>5</sup> But the angel answered, and said to the women, Do not ye dread, for I know that ye seek Jesus, that was crucified;

<sup>6</sup> he is not here, for he is risen, as he said; come ye, and see ye the place, where the Lord was laid.

<sup>7</sup> And go ye soon, and say ye to his disciples, that he is risen. And lo! he shall go before you into Galilee; there ye shall see him. Lo! I have before-said to you.

<sup>8</sup> And they went out soon from the burials [*or the sepulchre*], with dread, and great joy, running to tell to his disciples.

<sup>9</sup> And lo! Jesus met them, and said, Hail ye. And they nighed, and held his feet, and worshipped him.

<sup>10</sup> Then Jesus said to them, Do not ye dread; go ye, tell ye to my brethren, that they go into Galilee; there they shall see me.

<sup>11</sup> And when they were gone, lo! some of the keepers came into the city, and told to the princes of priests all things that were done.

<sup>12</sup> And when they were gathered together with the elder men, and had taken their counsel, they gave to the knights much money,



<sup>13</sup> and said, Say ye, that his disciples came by night, and have stolen him, while ye slept.

<sup>14</sup> And if this be heard of the justice [*or the president*], we shall counsel him, and make you secure.

<sup>15</sup> And when the money was taken, they did, as they were taught. And this word is published among the Jews, till into this day.

<sup>16</sup> And the eleven disciples went into Galilee, into an hill, where Jesus had ordained to them.

<sup>17</sup> And they saw him, and worship-ped; but some of them doubted.

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus came nigh, and spake to them, and said, All power in heaven and in earth is given to me.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore go ye, and teach all folks, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost;

<sup>20</sup> teaching them to keep all things, whatever things I have commanded to you; and lo! I am with you in all days, into the end of the world.

## MARK

<sup>1</sup> The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

<sup>2</sup> As it is written in Isaiah, the prophet, Lo! I send mine angel before thy face, that shall make thy way ready before thee.

<sup>3</sup> The voice of a crier in desert, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, make ye his paths right. [*The voice of one crying in desert, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, make ye his paths rightful.*]

<sup>4</sup> John was in desert baptizing, and preaching the baptism of penance, into remission of sins.

<sup>5</sup> And all the country of Judea went out to him, and all men of Jerusalem; and they were baptized of him in the flume [*or the flood*] of Jordan, acknowledging their sins.

<sup>6</sup> And John was clothed with hairs of camels, and a girdle of skin was about his loins; and he ate honey-suckles, and wild honey, [*or locusts, and honey of the wood*],

<sup>7</sup> and preached, and said, A stronger than I shall come after me, and I am not worthy to kneel down, and unloose, [*or to undo, or unbind, the thong of*] his shoes.

<sup>8</sup> I have baptized you in water; but he shall baptize you in the Holy Ghost.

<sup>9</sup> And it was done in those days, Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

<sup>10</sup> And anon he went up of the water, and saw heavens opened, and the Holy Ghost [*or the Spirit*] coming down as a culver, and dwelling on him.

<sup>11</sup> And a voice was made from heavens, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am pleased.

<sup>12</sup> And anon the Spirit put him forth into desert.

<sup>13</sup> And he was in desert forty days and forty nights, and was tempted of Satan, and he was with beasts, and angels ministered to him.

<sup>14</sup> But after that John was taken, Jesus came into Galilee, and preached the gospel of the kingdom of God,

<sup>15</sup> and said, That the time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God shall come nigh; do ye penance [*or repent ye*], and believe ye to the gospel.

<sup>16</sup> And as he passed beside the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew, his brother, casting their nets into the sea; for they were fishers.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus said to them, Come ye after me; I shall make you to be made fishers of men.

<sup>18</sup> And anon they left the nets, and pursued him.

<sup>19</sup> And he went forth from thence a little, and saw James of Zebedee, and John, his brother, in a boat making their nets.

<sup>20</sup> And anon he called them; and they left Zebedee, their father, in the boat with hired servants, and they pursued him.

<sup>21</sup> And they entered into Capernaum, and anon in the sabbaths, he went into the synagogue, and taught them.

<sup>22</sup> And they wondered on his teaching; for he taught them, as he that had power, and not as [*the*] scribes.

<sup>23</sup> And in the synagogue of them was a man in an unclean spirit, and he cried out,

<sup>24</sup> and said, What to us and to thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? hast thou come to destroy us? I know that thou art the Holy of God.

<sup>25</sup> And Jesus threatened him, and said, Wax [*thou*] dumb, and go out of the man.

<sup>26</sup> And the unclean spirit wrenching him, and crying with a great voice, went out from him.

<sup>27</sup> And all men wondered, so that they sought within themselves, and said, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for in power he commandeth to unclean spirits, and they obey to him.

<sup>28</sup> And the fame, [*or the tale, or tiding*], of him went forth anon into all the country of Galilee.

<sup>29</sup> And anon they went out of the synagogue, and came into the house of Simon and of Andrew, with James and John.

<sup>30</sup> And the mother of Simon's wife lay sick in the fevers; and anon they say to him of her.

<sup>31</sup> And he came nigh, and areared her, and when he had taken her hand, anon the fever left her, and she served them.

<sup>32</sup> But when the eventide was come, and the sun was gone down, they brought to him all that were of mal-ease, and them that had fiends. [*Forsooth the evening made, when the sun went down, they brought to him all having evil, and having devils.*]

<sup>33</sup> And all the city was gathered at the gate.

<sup>34</sup> And he healed many, that had diverse sicknesses, and he cast out many fiends [*or devils*], and he suffered them not to speak, for they knew him.

<sup>35</sup> And he rose full early [*or in the morrowing*], and went out, and went into a desert place, and prayed there.

<sup>36</sup> And Simon pursued him, and they that were with him.

<sup>37</sup> And when they had found him, they said to him, That all men seek thee.

<sup>38</sup> And he said to them, Go we into the next towns and cities, that I preach also there, for thereto [*or to this thing*] I came.

<sup>39</sup> And he preached in the synagogues of them, and in all Galilee, and casted out fiends.

<sup>40</sup> And a leprous man came to him, and besought, kneeling, and said, If thou wilt, thou mayest cleanse me.

<sup>41</sup> And Jesus had mercy on him, and stretched out his hand, and touched him, and said to him, I will, be thou made clean.

<sup>42</sup> And when he had said this, anon the leprosy parted [*or went*] away from him, and he was cleansed.

<sup>43</sup> And Jesus threatened him, and anon put him out,

<sup>44</sup> and said to him, See thou, say to no man; but go, show thee to the prince of priests, and offer for thy cleansing into witnessing to them, those things that Moses bade.

<sup>45</sup> And he went out, and began to preach, and to publish the word, so that now he might not go openly into the city, but be withoutforth in desert places; and they came to him on all sides.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And again he entered into Capernaum, after eight days. And it was heard, that he was in an house,

<sup>2</sup> and many came together, so that they might not be in the house, nor at the gate. And he spake to them the word.

<sup>3</sup> And there came to him men that brought a man sick in the palsy, which was borne of four. [*And there came to him men bringing or bearing a sick man in palsy, the which was borne of four men.*]

<sup>4</sup> And when they might not bring him to Jesus for the people, they uncovered the roof where he was, and opened it, and they let down the bed in which the sick man in palsy lay.

<sup>5</sup> And when Jesus had seen the faith of them, he said to the sick man in palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven to thee.

<sup>6</sup> But there were some of the scribes sitting, and thinking in their hearts,

<sup>7</sup> What speaketh he thus? He blasphemeth; who may forgive sins, but God alone?

<sup>8</sup> And [*anon*] when Jesus had known this by the Holy Ghost, that they thought so within themselves, he saith to them, What think ye these things in your hearts?

<sup>9</sup> What is lighter to say to the sick man in palsy, Sins be forgiven to thee, or to say, Rise, take thy bed, and walk?

<sup>10</sup> But that ye know that man's Son hath power in earth to forgive sins, he said to the sick man in palsy,

<sup>11</sup> I say to thee, rise up, take thy bed, and go into thine house.

<sup>12</sup> And anon he rose up, and when he had taken the bed, he went before all men, so that all men wondered, and honoured God, and said, For we saw never so.

<sup>13</sup> And he went out again to the sea, and all the people came to him; and he taught them.

<sup>14</sup> And when he passed, he saw Levi of Alphaeus sitting at the tollbooth, and he said to him, Pursue me. And he rose, and pursued him.

<sup>15</sup> And it was done, when he sat at the meat in his house, many publicans and sinful men sat together at the meat with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many that followed him.

<sup>16</sup> And scribes and Pharisees seeing, that he ate with publicans and sinful men, said to his disciples, Why eateth and drinketh your master with publicans and sinners?

<sup>17</sup> When this was heard, Jesus said to them, Whole men have no need to a leech, but they that be evil-at-ease [*or they that have evil*]; for I came not to call just men, but sinners.

<sup>18</sup> And the disciples of John and the Pharisees were fasting; and they came, and said to him, Why *fast* the disciples of John, and the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus said to them, Whether the sons of the spousals [*or of the weddings*] may fast, as long as the spouse is with them? As long time as they have the spouse with them, they may not fast.

<sup>20</sup> But days shall come, when the spouse shall be taken away from them, and then they shall fast in those days.

<sup>21</sup> No man seweth a patch of new cloth to an old cloth, else he taketh away the new patch from the old, and a more breaking is made.

<sup>22</sup> And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the wine shall burst the bottles, and the wine shall be shed out, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine shall be put into new bottles. [*And no man putteth new wine into old wine vessels, else the wine shall burst or shall break the wine vessels, and the wine shall be poured out, and the wine*]

*vessels shall perish. But new wine oweth to be put into new wine vessels.]*

<sup>23</sup> And it was done again, when the Lord walked in the sabbaths by the corns, and his disciples began to pass [*or to go*] forth, and [*to*] pluck ears of the corn.

<sup>24</sup> And the Pharisees said to him, Lo! what thy disciples do in the sabbaths, that is not leaveful.

<sup>25</sup> And he said to them, Read ye never what David did, when he had need, and he hungered, and they that were with him?

<sup>26</sup> How he went into the house of God, under Abiathar, prince of priests, and ate loaves of proposition, [*either of setting forth*], which it was not leave-ful to eat, but to priests alone, and he gave to them that were with him.

<sup>27</sup> And he said to them, The sabbath is made for man, and not man for the sabbath;

<sup>28</sup> and so man's Son is Lord also of the sabbath.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> And he entered again into the synagogue, and there was a man having a dry hand.

<sup>2</sup> And they espied him, if he healed in the sabbaths, to accuse him.

<sup>3</sup> And he said to the man that had a dry hand, Rise [*thou*] into the middle.

<sup>4</sup> And he saith to them, Is it leaveful to do well in the sabbaths, either evil? to make a soul safe, either to lose? And they were still.

<sup>5</sup> And he beheld them about with wrath, and had sorrow on the blind-ness of their heart, and saith to the man, Hold forth thine hand. And he held forth, and his hand was restored to him.

<sup>6</sup> Soothly [*the*] Pharisees went out anon, and made a counsel with Herodians against him, how they should lose him.

<sup>7</sup> But Jesus with his disciples went to the sea; and much people from Galilee and from Judea pursued him,

<sup>8</sup> and from Jerusalem, and from Idumaea, and from beyond Jordan, and they that were about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, hearing the things that he did, came to him.

<sup>9</sup> And Jesus said to his disciples, that the boat should serve him, for the people, lest they thrust [*or oppressed*] him;

<sup>10</sup> for he healed many, so that they felled fast to him, to touch him. And how many ever had sicknesses, [*or sores, or wounds*],

<sup>11</sup> and unclean spirits, when they saw him, felled down to him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And greatly he menaced them, that they should not make him known.

13 And he went into an hill, and called to him whom he would; and they came to him.

14 And he made, that there were twelve with him, to send them to preach.

15 And he gave to them power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out fiends.

16 And to Simon he gave a name, Peter,

17 and *he called* James of Zebedee and John, the brother of James, and he gave to them names of Boanerges, that is, the sons of thundering [*or of thunder*].

18 And *he called* Andrew and Philip, and Bartholomew and Matthew, and Thomas, and James [*of*] Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon Canaanite,

19 and Judas Iscariot, that betrayed him. And they came to an house,

20 and the people came together again, so that they might not eat bread.

21 And when his *kinsmen* had heard, they went out to hold him; for they said, that he is turned into madness.

22 And the scribes that came down from Jerusalem, said, That he hath Beelzebub, and that in the prince of devils he casteth out fiends.

23 And he called them together, and he said to them in parables, How may Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a realm be parted against itself, that realm may not stand.

25 And if an house be parted against itself, that house may not stand.

26 And if Satan hath risen against himself, he is parted, and he shall not be able to stand, but hath an end.

27 No man may go into a strong man's house, and take away his vessels, but he bind first the strong man, and then he shall spoil [*or ravish*] his house.

28 Truly I say to you, that all sins and blasphemies, by which they have blasphemed, shall be forgiven to the sons of men.

29 But he that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, hath not remission into without end, but he shall be guilty of everlasting trespass.

30 For they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

31 And his mother and his brethren came, and stood withoutforth, and sent to him, and called him.

32 And the people sat about him; and they said to him, Lo! thy mother and thy brethren withoutforth seek thee.

<sup>33</sup> And he answered to them, and said, Who is my mother and my brethren?

<sup>34</sup> And he beheld them that sat about him, and said, Lo! my mother and my brethren.

<sup>35</sup> For who that doeth the will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> And again Jesus began to teach at the sea; and much people was gathered to him, so that he went into a boat, and sat in the sea, and all the people was about the sea on the land.

<sup>2</sup> And he taught them in parables many things. And he said to them in his teaching,

<sup>3</sup> Hear ye. Lo! a man sowing goeth out to sow [*or a sower went out to sow*].

<sup>4</sup> And while he soweth, some seed felled about [*or beside*] the way, and [*the*] birds of heaven [*or of the air*], came, and ate it.

<sup>5</sup> Other felled down on stony places, where it had not much earth; and anon it sprang up, for it had not [*or no*] deepness of earth.

<sup>6</sup> And when the sun rose up, it withered for heat, and it dried up, for it had no root.

<sup>7</sup> And other felled down into thorns, and [*the*] thorns sprang up, and strangled it, and it gave no fruit.

<sup>8</sup> And other felled down into good land, and gave fruit, springing up, and waxing; and one brought thirty-fold, and one sixtyfold, and one an hundredfold.

<sup>9</sup> And he said, He that hath ears of hearing, hear he, [*or He that hath ears to hear, hear*].

<sup>10</sup> And when he was by himself, the twelve that were with him asked him to expound the parable.

<sup>11</sup> And he said to them, To you it is given to know the private [*or the mystery*] of the kingdom of God. But to them that be withoutforth, all things be made in parables,

<sup>12</sup> that they seeing see, and see not, and they hearing hear, and understand not; lest sometime they be converted, and sins be forgiven to them.

<sup>13</sup> And he said to them, Know not ye this parable? and how ye shall know all parables?

<sup>14</sup> He that soweth, soweth a word.

<sup>15</sup> But these it be that be about the way, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, anon cometh Satan, and taketh away the word that is sown in their hearts.



16 And in like manner be these that be sown on stony places, which when they have heard the word, anon they take it with joy;

17 and they have not root in them-selves, but they be lasting a little time [*or they be temporal*]; afterward when tribulation riseth, and persecution for the word, anon they be caused to stumble.

18 And there be others that be sown in thorns; these it be, that hear the word,

19 and dis-ease of the world, and deceit of riches, and other charge of covetousness entereth, and strangeth the word, and it is made without fruit.

20 And these it be that be sown on good land, which hear the word, and take, and make fruit, one thirtyfold, and one sixtyfold, and one an hundred-fold.

21 And he said to them, Whether a lantern cometh, that it be put under a bushel, or under a bed? nay, but that it be put on a candlestick?

22 There is nothing hid, that shall not be made open [*or shall not be showed*]; neither anything is privy, that shall not come into open.

23 If any man have ears of hearing, hear he.

24 And he said to them, See ye what ye hear. In what measure ye mete, it shall be meted to you again, and *it shall* be cast to you.

25 For it shall be given to him that hath, and it shall be taken away from him that hath not, also that that he hath.

26 And he said, So the kingdom of God is, as if a man cast seed into the earth,

27 and he sleep, and it rise up night and day, and bring forth seed, and wax fast, while he knoweth not.

28 For the earth [*by his own work-ing, or his own will*], maketh fruit, first the grass, afterward the ear, and after[ward] full fruit in the ear.

29 And when of itself it hath brought forth fruit, anon he sendeth a sickle, for reaping time is come.

30 And he said, To what thing shall we liken the kingdom of God? or to what parable shall we comparison it?

31 As a corn of sinapi, which when it is sown in the earth, is less than all seeds that be in the earth;

32 and when it is sprung up, it waxeth into a tree, and is made greater than all herbs; and it maketh great branches, so that [*the*] birds of heaven may dwell under the shadow thereof.

33 And in many such parables he spake to them the word, as they might hear;

<sup>34</sup> and he spake not to them without parable. But he expounded to his disciples all things by themselves.

<sup>35</sup> And he said to them in that day, when evening was come, Pass we again-ward.

<sup>36</sup> And they left the people, and took him, so that he was in a boat; and other boats were with him.

<sup>37</sup> And a great storm [*or a tempest*] of wind was made, and cast waves into the boat, so that the boat was full.

<sup>38</sup> And he was in the hinder part of the boat, and slept on a pillow. And they raised him, and said to him, Master, pertaineth it not to thee, that we perish?

<sup>39</sup> And he rose up, and menaced the wind, and said to the sea, Be still, wax dumb. And the wind ceased, and great peaceableness was made.

<sup>40</sup> And he said to them, What dread ye? Yet ye have no faith? [*or Not yet have ye faith?*]

<sup>41</sup> And they dreaded with great dread, and said to each other, Who, guessest thou, is this? for the wind and the sea obey to him.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> And they came over the sea into the country of Gadarenes.

<sup>2</sup> And after that he was gone out of the boat, anon a man in an unclean spirit ran out of the burials to him.

<sup>3</sup> Which man had an house in burials [*or in graves*], and neither with chains now might any man bind him.

<sup>4</sup> For oft times he was bound in stocks and chains, and he had broken the chains, and had broken the stocks to small gobbets, and no man might make him tame [*or might tame him*].

<sup>5</sup> And evermore, night and day, in burials, and in hills, he was crying and beating himself with stones.

<sup>6</sup> And he saw Jesus afar, and ran, and worshipped him.

<sup>7</sup> And he cried with great voice, and said, What to me and to thee, thou Jesus, the Son of the highest God? I conjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said to him, Thou unclean spirit, go out from the man.

<sup>9</sup> And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? And he saith to him, A legion is my name; for we be many.

<sup>10</sup> And he prayed Jesus much, that he should not put them out of the country.

<sup>11</sup> And there was there about the hill a great flock of swine [*or a great drove of hogs*] pasturing.

<sup>12</sup> And the spirits prayed Jesus, and said, Send us into the swine [*or into the hogs*], that we enter into them.

<sup>13</sup> And anon Jesus granted to them. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine [*or the hogs*], and with a great rush the flock was cast headlong into the sea, a two thousand, and they were drenched *or drowned* in the sea.

<sup>14</sup> And they that kept [*or fed*] them, fled, and told into the city, and into the fields; and they went out, to see what was done.

<sup>15</sup> And they came to Jesus, and saw him that had been travailed of the fiend, sitting clothed, and of whole mind; and they dreaded.

<sup>16</sup> And they that saw, how it was done to him that had a fiend, and of the swine [*or the hogs*], told to them.

<sup>17</sup> And they began to pray him, that he should go away from their coasts.

<sup>18</sup> And when he went up into a boat, he that was travailed of the devil, began to pray him, that he should be with him.

<sup>19</sup> But Jesus received him not, but said to him, Go thou into thine house to thine, and tell to them, how great things the Lord hath done to thee, and had mercy of thee.

<sup>20</sup> And he went forth, and began to preach in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done to him; and all men wondered.

<sup>21</sup> And when Jesus had gone up into the boat again over the sea, much people came together to him, and was about the sea.

<sup>22</sup> And one of the princes of [*the*] synagogues, by name Jairus, came, and saw him, and he fell down at his feet,

<sup>23</sup> and prayed him much, and said, My daughter is nigh dead; come thou, put thine hand on her, that she be safe, and live.

<sup>24</sup> And he went forth with him, and much people pursued him, and thrust, *either oppressed*, him.

<sup>25</sup> And a woman that had been in the bloody flux [*or the flux of blood*] twelve years,

<sup>26</sup> and had received many things of full many leeches, and had spended all her good [*or her things*], and was nothing amended [*or and nothing profited*], but was rather the worse,

<sup>27</sup> when she had heard of Jesus, she came among the people behind, and touched his cloth.

<sup>28</sup> For she said, That if I touch yea his cloth, I shall be safe.

<sup>29</sup> And anon the well of her blood was dried up, and she feelled in *her* body that she was healed of the sickness.

<sup>30</sup> And anon Jesus knew in himself the virtue that was gone out of him, and he turned to the people, and said, Who touched my clothes?

<sup>31</sup> And his disciples said to him, Thou seest the people thrusting *[or pressing]* thee, and sayest, Who touched me?

<sup>32</sup> And Jesus looked about to see her that had done this thing.

<sup>33</sup> And the woman dreaded, and quaked, witting that it was done in her, and came, and felled down before him, and said to him all the truth. *[Forsooth the woman dreading, and trembling, knowing that it was done in her, came, and fell down before him, and said to him all the truth.]*

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee safe; go in peace, and be thou whole of thy sickness.

<sup>35</sup> Yet while he spake, messengers came to the prince of the synagogue, and said, Thy daughter is dead; what travailest thou the master further?

<sup>36</sup> But when the word was heard that was said, Jesus said to the prince of the synagogue, Do not thou dread, only believe thou.

<sup>37</sup> And he took no man to pursue him, but Peter, and James, and John, the brother of James.

<sup>38</sup> And they came into the house of the prince of the synagogue. And he saw noise, and men weeping and wailing much.

<sup>39</sup> And he went in, and said to them, What be ye troubled, and weep? The damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

<sup>40</sup> And they scorned him. But when all were put out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and they entered, where the damsel lay.

<sup>41</sup> And he held the hand of the damsel, and said to her, Talitha, cumi, that is to say, Damsel, I say to thee, arise.

<sup>42</sup> And anon the damsel rose, and walked; and she was of twelve years. And they were abashed with a great astonishing.

<sup>43</sup> And he commanded to them greatly, that no man should know it. And he commanded to give her meat *[or to give to her to eat]*.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> And he went out from thence, and went into his own country; and his disciples followed him.

<sup>2</sup> And when the sabbath was come, Jesus began to teach in a synagogue. And many heard him, and wondered in his teaching, and said, Of whence *cometh* to this *[man]* all these

things? and what is the wisdom that is given to him, and such virtues, which be made by his hands?

<sup>3</sup> Whether this is not a carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and of Joseph and of Judas and of Simon? whether his sisters be not here with us? And they were offended in him.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus said to them, That a prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his kin, and in his house.

<sup>5</sup> And he might not do there any virtue, save that he healed a few sick men, laying on them his hands.

<sup>6</sup> And he wondered for the unbelief of them. And he went about castles on each side, and taught.

<sup>7</sup> And he called together twelve, and began to send them by two together; and gave to them power of unclean spirits,

<sup>8</sup> and commanded them, that they should not take anything in the way, but a staff [*or a rod*] only, not a scrip, nor bread, neither money in the girdle,

<sup>9</sup> but shod with sandals, and that they should not be clothed with two coats.

<sup>10</sup> And he said to them, Whither ever ye enter into an house, dwell ye there, till ye go out from thence.

<sup>11</sup> And whoever receive you not, nor hear you, go ye out from thence, and shake away the powder from your feet, into witnessing to them.

<sup>12</sup> And they went forth, and preached, that men should do penance.

<sup>13</sup> And they casted out many fiends, and anointed with oil many sick men, and they were healed.

<sup>14</sup> And king Herod heard, for his name was made open, and he said, That John Baptist hath risen again from death, and therefore virtues work in him.

<sup>15</sup> Others said, That it is Elijah; but others said, That it is a prophet, as one of the prophets.

<sup>16</sup> And when this thing was heard, Herod said, This is John, whom I have beheaded, he is risen again from death.

<sup>17</sup> For that Herod sent, and held John, and bound him into prison, for Herodias, the wife of Philip, his brother; for he had wedded her.

<sup>18</sup> For John said to Herod, It is not leaveful to thee, to have the wife of thy brother.

<sup>19</sup> And Herodias laid ambush to him, and would slay him, and might not.

<sup>20</sup> And Herod dreaded John, and knew him a just man and holy, and kept him. And Herod heard him, and he did many things, and gladly heard him.

<sup>21</sup> And when a covenable day was fallen, Herod in his birthday made a supper to the princes, and tribunes, and to the greatest of Galilee.

<sup>22</sup> And when the daughter of that Herodias was come in, and danced, and pleased to Herod [*or and pleased Herod*], and also to men that sat at the meat, the king said to the damsel, Ask thou of me what thou wilt, and I shall give to thee.

<sup>23</sup> And he swore to her, That what-ever thou ask, I shall give to thee, though *it be* half of my kingdom.

<sup>24</sup> And when she had gone out, she said to her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John [*the*] Baptist.

<sup>25</sup> And when she was come in anon with haste to the king, she asked, and said, I will that anon, thou give to me in a dish the head of John Baptist.

<sup>26</sup> And the king was sorry [*or sorrowful*] for the oath, and for men that sat together at the meat, he would not make her sorry [*or heavy*];

<sup>27</sup> but he sent a man-queller and commanded, that John's head were brought in a dish. And he beheaded him in the prison,

<sup>28</sup> and brought his head in a dish, and gave it to the damsel, and the damsel gave *it* to her mother.

<sup>29</sup> And when this thing was heard, his disciples came, and took his body, and laid it in a burial.

<sup>30</sup> And the apostles came together to Jesus, and told to him all things, that they had done, and taught.

<sup>31</sup> And he said to them, Come ye by yourselves into a desert place; and rest ye a little. For there were many that came, and went again, and they had not space [*for*] to eat.

<sup>32</sup> And they went into a boat, and went into a desert place by them-selves.

<sup>33</sup> And they saw them go away, and many knew, and they went afoot from all cities, and ran [*together*] thither, and came before them.

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus went out, and saw much people, and had ruth [*or mercy*] on them, for they were as sheep not having a shepherd. And he began to teach them many things.

<sup>35</sup> And when it was late in the day, his disciples came to him, and said, This is a desert place, and the time is now passed;

<sup>36</sup> let them go into the next towns and villages, to buy them meat to eat.

37 And he answered, and said to them, Give ye to them for to eat. And they said to him, Go we, and buy we loaves with two hundred pence, and we shall give to them for to eat.

38 And he saith to them, How many loaves have ye? Go ye, and see. And when they had known, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded to them, that they should make all men sit to meat by companies, on *[the]* green hay.

40 And they sat down by parts *[or by parties]*, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and two fishes, he beheld into heaven, and blessed, and brake *[the]* loaves, and gave to his disciples, that they should set before them. And he parted two fishes to all;

42 and all ate, and were full-filled *[or fulfilled]*.

43 And they took the remnants of broken meats, twelve coffins full, and of the fishes.

44 And they that ate, were five thousand of men.

45 And anon he made his disciples to go up into a boat, to pass before him over the sea to Bethsaida, while he let the people go.

46 And when he had left them, he went into an high hill, to pray.

47 And when it was even, the boat was in the middle *[or in the midst]* of the sea, and he alone in the land;

48 and he saw them travailing in rowing; for the wind was contrary to them. And about the fourth waking of the night, he wandering on the sea, came to them, and would pass them.

49 And as they saw him wandering on the sea, they guessed that it were a phantom, and cried out;

50 for all saw him, and they were afraid, *[or they were troubled, or disturbed]*. And anon he spake with them, and said to them, Trust ye, I am; do not ye dread.

51 And he came up to them into the boat, and the wind ceased. And they wondered more within themselves;

52 for they understood not of the loaves; for their heart was blinded.

53 And when they were passed over the sea, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and setted to land.

54 And when they were gone out of the boat, anon they knew him.

55 And they ran through all that country, and began to bring sick men in beds on each side, where they heard that he was.

<sup>56</sup> And whither ever he entered into villages, or into towns, or into cities, they set sick men in streets, and prayed him, that they should touch namely the hem of his cloth; and how many that touched him, were made safe.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> And the Pharisees and some of the scribes came from Jerusalem together to him.

<sup>2</sup> And when they had seen some of his disciples eat bread with unwashen hands, they blamed [*them*].

<sup>3</sup> For the Pharisees and all the Jews eat not, but they wash often their hands, holding the traditions of elder men.

<sup>4</sup> And when they turn again from [*the*] market, they eat not, but they be washed; and many other things there be, that be taken to them to keep, as washing of cups, and of water vessels [*or cruets*], and of vessels of brass, and of beds.

<sup>5</sup> And Pharisees and scribes asked him, and said, Why go not thy disciples after the tradition of elder men, but with unwashen hands they eat bread?

<sup>6</sup> And he answered, and said to them, Isaiah prophesied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people worshippeth [*or honoureth*] me with lips, but their heart is far from me;

<sup>7</sup> and in vain they worship me, teaching the doctrines and the behests [*or the commandments*] of men.

<sup>8</sup> For ye leave the commandment of God, and hold the traditions of men, as [*the*] washing of water vessels [*or cruets*], and of cups; and many other things like these ye do.

<sup>9</sup> And he said to them, Well ye have made the commandment of God void, to keep your tradition.

<sup>10</sup> For Moses said, Worship [*or Honour*] thy father and thy mother; and he that curseth father or mother, die he by death.

<sup>11</sup> But ye say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, that is, Whatever gift is of me, it shall profit to thee;

<sup>12</sup> and over [*or further*] ye suffer not him [*to*] do anything to father or mother,

<sup>13</sup> and ye break the word of God by your tradition, that ye have given; and ye do many [*other*] such things.

<sup>14</sup> And he again called the people, and said to them, Ye all hear me, and understand.

<sup>15</sup> Nothing that is without a man, that entereth into him, may defoul him; but those things that come forth of a man, those it be that defoul a man.



<sup>16</sup> If any man have ears of hearing [*or ears to hear*], hear he.

<sup>17</sup> And when he was entered into an house, from the people, his disciples asked him the parable.

<sup>18</sup> And he said to them, Ye be unwise also. Understand ye not, that all thing withoutforth that entereth into a man, may not defoul him?

<sup>19</sup> for it hath not entered into his heart, but into the womb, and beneath it goeth out, purging all meats.

<sup>20</sup> But he said, The things that go out of a man, those defoul a man.

<sup>21</sup> For from within, of the heart of men come forth evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, manslayings,

<sup>22</sup> thefts, avarices, [*or covetousness, or over-hard keeping of goods*], wickednesses, guile, unchastity, evil eye, blasphemies, pride, folly.

<sup>23</sup> All these evils come forth from within, and defoul a man.

<sup>24</sup> And Jesus rose up from thence, and went into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. And he went into an house, and would that no man knew; and he might not be hid.

<sup>25</sup> For a woman, anon as she heard of him, whose daughter had an unclean spirit, entered, and fell down at his feet.

<sup>26</sup> And the woman was heathen, of the generation of Syrophenician. And she prayed him, that he would cast out a devil from her daughter.

<sup>27</sup> And he said to her, Suffer thou that the children be fulfilled [*or filled*] first; for it is not good to take the bread of children, and give [*it*] to hounds.

<sup>28</sup> And she answered, and said to him, Yes, Lord; for little whelps eat under the board of the crumbs of children.

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus said to her, Go thou, for this word the fiend went out of thy daughter.

<sup>30</sup> And when she was gone into her house home, [*or when she had gone home, or she had gone into her house*], she found the damsel lying on the bed, and the devil gone out from her.

<sup>31</sup> And again Jesus went out from the coasts of Tyre, and came through Sidon to the sea of Galilee, between the middle of the coasts of Decapolis.

<sup>32</sup> And they bring to him a man deaf and dumb, and prayed him to lay his hand/s on him.

<sup>33</sup> And he took him aside from the people, and put his fingers into his ears; and he spat, and touched his tongue.

<sup>34</sup> And he beheld into heaven, and sorrowed within, and said [*to him*], Ephphatha, that is, Be thou opened.

<sup>35</sup> And anon his ears were opened, and the band of his tongue was unbound, and he spake rightly.

<sup>36</sup> And he commanded to them, that they should say to no man; but how much he commanded to them, so much the more they preached,

<sup>37</sup> and by so much the more they wondered, and said, He did well all things, both he hath made deaf men to hear, and dumb men to speak.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> In those days, when much people was with Jesus, and had not what they should eat, when his disciples were called together, he said to them,

<sup>2</sup> I have ruth on the people, for lo! now the third day they abide me, and they have not what to eat;

<sup>3</sup> and if I leave them fasting into their houses, they shall fail in the way; for some of them came from far.

<sup>4</sup> And his disciples answered to him, Whereof shall a man be able to fill them with loaves here in wilder-ness?

<sup>5</sup> And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? Which said, Seven.

<sup>6</sup> And he commanded the people to sit down on the earth. And he took the seven loaves, and did thankings, and brake, and gave to his disciples, that they should set forth. And they setted forth to the people.

<sup>7</sup> And they had a few small fishes; and he blessed them, and commanded, that they were set forth.

<sup>8</sup> And they ate, and were fulfilled [*or were filled*]; and they took up that that *was* left of [*the*] remnants, seven baskets.

<sup>9</sup> And they that ate, were as four thousand of men; and he left them.

<sup>10</sup> And anon he went up into a boat, with his disciples, and came into the coasts of Dalmanutha.

<sup>11</sup> And the Pharisees went out, and began to dispute with him, and asked a token of him from heaven, and tempted him.

<sup>12</sup> And he sorrowing within in spirit, said, What seeketh this generation a token, [*or a sign, either miracle*]? Truly I say to you, a token [*or a sign*] shall not be given to this generation.

<sup>13</sup> And he left them, and went up again into a boat, and went over the sea.

<sup>14</sup> And they forgot to take bread, and they had not with them but one loaf in the boat.

<sup>15</sup> And he commanded [*to*] them, and said, See ye, and beware of the sourdough of the Pharisees, and of the sourdough of Herod.

16 And they thought, and said one to another, For we have not loaves [*or bread*].

17 And when this thing was known, Jesus said to them, What think ye, for ye have not loaves? [*or bread?*] Yet ye know not, neither understand; yet ye have your heart blinded.

18 Ye having eyes, see not, and ye having ears, hear not; neither ye have mind,

19 when I brake five loaves among five thousand, and how many coffins full of broken meat took ye up? They said to him, Twelve.

20 When also seven loaves among four thousand of men, how many baskets [*full*] of broken meat took ye up? And they say to him, Seven.

21 And he said to them, How understand ye not yet?

22 And they came to Bethsaida, and they brought to him a blind man, and they prayed him, that he would touch him.

23 And when he had taken the blind man's hand, he led him out of the street, and he spat into his eyes, and set his hands on him; and he asked him, if he saw anything.

24 And he beheld, and said, I see men as trees walking.

25 Afterward again he set his hands on his eyes, and he began to see, and he was restored, so that he saw clearly all things.

26 And he sent him into his house, and said, Go into thine house; and if thou goest into the street, say to no man.

27 And Jesus entered [*in*] and his disciples, into the castles of Caesarea of Philippi. And in the way, he asked his disciples, and said to them, Whom say men that I am?

28 Which answered to him, and said, Some say, John Baptist; others say, Elijah; and others say, as one of the prophets.

29 Then he saith to them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answered, and said to him, Thou art Christ.

30 And he charged them, that they should not say of him to any man.

31 And he began to teach them, that it behooveth man's Son to suffer many things, and to be reprov'd of the elder men, and of the highest priests, and of the scribes, and to be slain, and after three days, to rise again.

32 And he spake openly the word. And Peter took him, and began to blame him, and said, Lord, be thou merciful to thee, for this shall not be.

33 And he turned, and saw his disciples, and menaced Peter, and said, Go after me, [*thou*] Satan; for thou savourest

*[or understandest]* not those things that be of God, but those things that be of men.

<sup>34</sup> And when the people was called together, with his disciples, he said to them, If any man will come after me, deny he himself, and take his cross, and pursue he me *[or pursue me]*.

<sup>35</sup> For he that will make safe his life, shall lose it, *[or Soothly whoso will make his soul, that is, his life, safe, shall lose it]*; and he that loseth his life for me, and for the gospel, shall make it safe.

<sup>36</sup> For what profiteth it to a man, if he win all the world, and do impairing to his *[own]* soul?

<sup>37</sup> or what exchanging shall a man give for his soul?

<sup>38</sup> But who that acknowledgeth me and my words, in this generation adulterous and sinful, also man's Son shall acknowledge him, when he shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And he said to them, Truly I say to you, that there be some men standing here, which shall not taste death, till they see the realm of God coming in virtue.

<sup>2</sup> And after six days Jesus took Peter, and James, and John, and led them by themselves alone into an high hill; and he was transfigured before them.

<sup>3</sup> And his clothes were made full shining and white as snow, which manner white clothes a fuller may not make on earth.

<sup>4</sup> And Elijah with Moses appeared to them, and they spake with Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> And Peter answered, and said to Jesus, Master, it is good us to be here; and make we here three tabernacles, one to thee, one to Moses, and one to Elijah.

<sup>6</sup> For he knew not what he should say; for they were aghast *[or afeared]* by dread.

<sup>7</sup> And there was made a cloud overshadowing them; and a voice came out of the cloud, and said, This is my most dearworthy Son, hear ye him.

<sup>8</sup> And anon they beheld about, and saw no more any man, but Jesus only with them.

<sup>9</sup> And when they came down from the hill, he commanded them, that they should not tell to any man those things that they had seen, but when man's Son hath risen again from death.

<sup>10</sup> And they held the word at them-selves, seeking what *this* should be, when he had risen again from death.

11 And they asked him, and said, What then say [*the*] Pharisees and [*the*] scribes, that it behooveth Elijah to come first.

12 And he answered, and said to them, When Elijah cometh, he shall first restore all things; and as it is written of man's Son, that he suffer many things, and be despised.

13 And I say to you that Elijah is come, and they did to him whatever things they would, as it is written of him.

14 And he coming to his disciples, saw a great company about them, and [*the*] scribes disputing with them.

15 And anon all the people seeing Jesus, was astonied, and they dreaded; and they running [*to*], greeted him.

16 And he asked them, What dispute ye among you?

17 And one of the company answered, and said, Master, I have brought to thee my son, that hath a dumb spirit;

18 and wherever he taketh him, he hurtleth him down, and he foameth, and beateth together with teeth, and waxeth dry. And I said to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they might not.

19 And he answered to them, and said, A! thou generation out of belief [*or unbelievful*], how long shall I be among you, how long shall I suffer you? Bring ye him to me.

20 And they brought him. And when he had seen him, anon the spirit troubled him; and he was thrown down to the ground, and wallowed, and foamed.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it, since this hath befallen to him? And he said, From childhood;

22 and oft he hath put him into the fire, and into water, to lose him; but if thou mayest anything, help us, and have mercy on us.

23 And Jesus said to him, If thou mayest believe, all things be possible to a man that believeth.

24 And anon the father of the child cried with tears, and said, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 And when Jesus had seen the people running together, he menaced the unclean spirit, and said to him, Thou deaf and dumb spirit, I command thee, go out from him, and enter no more into him.

26 And he crying, and much wrenching him, went out from him; and he was made as dead, so that many said, that he was dead.

27 And Jesus held his hand, and lifted him up; and he rose.

28 And when he had entered into an house, his disciples asked him privily, Why might not we cast him out?

<sup>29</sup> And he said to them, This kind in nothing may go out [*or This kind may not go out in anything*], but in prayer and fasting.

<sup>30</sup> And they went from thence, and went forth into Galilee; and they would not, that any man knew, [*or and he would not, that any man know*].

<sup>31</sup> And he taught his disciples, and said to them, For man's Son shall be betrayed into the hands of men, and they shall slay him, and he slain shall rise again on the third day.

<sup>32</sup> And they knew not the word, and dreaded to ask him.

<sup>33</sup> And they came to Capernaum. And when they were in the house, he asked them, What treated ye in the way?

<sup>34</sup> And they were still; for they disputed among them/*selves*/ in the way, who of them should be [*the*] greatest.

<sup>35</sup> And he sat, and called the twelve, and said to them, If any man will be the first among you, he shall be the last of all, and the minister [*or the servant*] of all.

<sup>36</sup> And he took a child, and set him in the middle [*or in the midst*] of them; and when he had embraced him, he said to them,

<sup>37</sup> Whoever receiveth one of such children in my name, he receiveth me; and whoever receiveth me, he receiveth not me alone, but him that sent me.

<sup>38</sup> John answered to him, and said, Master, we saw one casting out fiends in thy name, which pursueth not us, and we have forbidden him.

<sup>39</sup> And Jesus said, Do not ye forbid him; for there is no man that doeth virtue in my name, and may soon speak evil of me.

<sup>40</sup> He that is not against us, is for us.

<sup>41</sup> And whoever giveth [*to*] you a cup of cold water to drink in my name, for ye be of Christ, truly I say to you, he shall not lose his meed.

<sup>42</sup> And whoever shall cause to stumble one of these little that believe in me, it were better to him that a millstone were done about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

<sup>43</sup> And if thine hand cause thee to stumble, cut it away; it is better to thee to enter feeble into life, than have two hands, and go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched [*or into fire unquenchable*],

<sup>44</sup> where the worm of them dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

<sup>45</sup> And if thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off; it is better to thee to enter crooked into everlasting life, than have two feet, and be sent into hell of fire [*or into hellfire*], that never shall be quenched,

<sup>46</sup> where the worm of them dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

<sup>47</sup> That if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out; it is better to thee to enter goggle-eyed into the realm of God, than have two eyes, and be sent into hell of fire [*for into hellfire*],

<sup>48</sup> where the worm of them dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

<sup>49</sup> And every man shall be salted with fire, and every slain sacrifice shall be made savoury with salt. [*Forsooth every man shall be made savoury with fire, and every slain sacrifice shall be salted with salt.*]

<sup>50</sup> Salt is good; if salt be unsavoury, in what thing shall ye make it savoury? Have ye salt among you, and have ye peace among you.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus rose up from thence, and came into the coasts of Judea over Jordan; and again the people came together to him, and as he was wont, again he taught them.

<sup>2</sup> And the Pharisees came [*nigh*], and asked him, Whether it be leaveful to a man to leave [*or to forsake*] his wife? and they tempted him.

<sup>3</sup> And he answered, and said to them, What commanded Moses to you?

<sup>4</sup> And they said, Moses suffered to write a libel of forsaking, and to forsake.

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, For the hardness of your heart Moses wrote to you this command-ment [*or this precept*].

<sup>6</sup> But from the beginning of creature, God made them male and female;

<sup>7</sup> and said, For this thing a man shall leave his father and mother, and shall draw [*or cleave*] to his wife,

<sup>8</sup> and they shall be twain in one flesh. And so now they be not twain, but one flesh.

<sup>9</sup> Therefore that thing that God hath joined together, no man separate [*or part*].

<sup>10</sup> And again in the house his disciples asked him of the same thing.

<sup>11</sup> And he said to them, Whoever leaveth his wife, and weddeth another, he doeth adultery on her.

<sup>12</sup> And if the wife leave her husband, and be wedded to another, she doeth lechery [*or doeth adultery*].

<sup>13</sup> And they brought to him little children, that he should touch them; and the disciples threatened the men, that brought them.

<sup>14</sup> And when Jesus had seen them, he bare heavy, and said to them, Suffer ye little children to come to me, and forbid ye them not, for of such is the kingdom of God.

<sup>15</sup> Truly I say to you, whoever receiveth not the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter into it.

<sup>16</sup> And he embraced them, and laid his hands on them, and blessed them.

<sup>17</sup> And when Jesus was gone out into the way, a man ran before, and kneeled before him, and prayed him, and said, Good master, what shall I do, that I receive everlasting life?

<sup>18</sup> And Jesus said to him, What sayest thou that I am good? There is no man good, but God himself, [*for None is good, no but God alone*].

<sup>19</sup> Thou knowest the commandments, do thou none adultery, slay not, steal not, say not false witnessing, do no fraud, worship thy father and thy mother.

<sup>20</sup> And he answered, and said to him, Master, I have kept all these things from my youth.

<sup>21</sup> And Jesus beheld him, and loved him, and said to him, One thing faileth to thee; go thou, and sell all things that thou hast, and give to poor men, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, pursue thou me.

<sup>22</sup> And he was full sorry [*for made sorrowful*] in the word, and went away mourning, for he had many possessions.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus beheld about, and said to his disciples, How hard they that have riches [*for money*] shall enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>24</sup> And the disciples were astonied in his words. And Jesus again answered, and said to them, Ye little children [*for Little sons*], how hard it is for men that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>25</sup> It is lighter a camel to pass through a needle's eye [*for It is easier that a camel pass through a needle's eye*], than a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>26</sup> And they wondered more, and said among themselves, And who may be saved?

<sup>27</sup> And Jesus beheld them, and said, With men it is impossible, but not with God; for all things be possible with God.

<sup>28</sup> And Peter began to say to him, Lo! we have left all things, and have pursued thee.



<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered, and said, Truly I say to you, there is no man that leaveth house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or fields for me and for the gospel,

<sup>30</sup> which shall not take an hundredfold so much now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and fields, with persecutions, and in the world to coming [*or to come*] everlasting life.

<sup>31</sup> But many shall be, the first the last, and the last the first.

<sup>32</sup> And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them, and they wondered, and followed, and dreaded. And again Jesus took the twelve, and began to say to them, what things were to come to him.

<sup>33</sup> For lo! we go up to Jerusalem, and man's Son shall be betrayed to the princes of priests, and to [*the*] scribes, and to the elder men; and they shall condemn him by death, and they shall [*be*] take him to heathen men.

<sup>34</sup> And they shall scorn him, and bespit him, and beat him; and they shall slay him, and in the third day he shall rise again.

<sup>35</sup> And James and John, Zebedee's sons, came to him, and said, Master, we will, that whatever we ask, thou do to us.

<sup>36</sup> And he said to them, What will ye that I do to you?

<sup>37</sup> And they said, Grant to us, that we sit the one at thy right half, and the other at thy left half, in thy glory.

<sup>38</sup> And Jesus said to them, Ye know not what ye ask; may ye drink the cup, which I shall drink, or be washed with the baptism, in which I am baptized?

<sup>39</sup> And they said to him, We may. And Jesus said to them, [*Truly*] Ye shall drink the cup that I drink, and ye shall be washed with the baptism, in which I am baptized;

<sup>40</sup> but to sit at my right half or left half is not mine to give to you, but to whom it is made ready.

<sup>41</sup> And the ten heard, and began to have indignation of James and John.

<sup>42</sup> But Jesus called them, and said to them, Ye know, that they that seem [*or be seen*] to have princehood of folks, be lords of them, and the princes of them have power of them.

<sup>43</sup> But it is not so among you, but whoever will be made [*the*] greater, shall be your minister;

<sup>44</sup> and whoever will be the first among you, shall be servant of all.

<sup>45</sup> For why man's Son came not, that it should be ministered to him, but that he should minister, and give his life again-buying [*or as a redemption*] for many.

<sup>46</sup> And they came to Jericho; and when he went forth from Jericho, and his disciples, and a full much people, Bartimaeus, a blind man, the son of Timaeus, sat beside the way, and begged.

<sup>47</sup> And when he heard, that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry, and say, Jesus, the son of David, have mercy on me.

<sup>48</sup> And many threatened him, that he should be still; and he cried much the more [*for he cried much more, saying*], Jesus, the son of David, have mercy on me.

<sup>49</sup> And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be called; and they called the blind man, and said to him, Be thou of better heart, rise up, he calleth thee.

<sup>50</sup> And he cast away his cloth, and skipped, and came to him.

<sup>51</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to him, What wilt thou, that I shall do to thee? The blind man said to him, Master, that I see.

<sup>52</sup> Jesus said to him, Go thou, thy faith hath made thee safe. And anon he saw, and pursued him in the way.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And when Jesus came nigh to Jerusalem and to Bethany, to the mount of Olives, he sendeth two of his disciples,

<sup>2</sup> and saith to them, Go ye into the castle that is against you; and anon as ye enter there ye shall find a colt tied, on which no man hath sat yet; untie ye, and bring him.

<sup>3</sup> And if any man say anything to you, What do ye? say ye, that he is needful to the Lord, and anon, he shall leave him hither.

<sup>4</sup> And they went forth, and found a colt tied before the gate withoutforth, in the meeting of two ways; and they untied him.

<sup>5</sup> And some of them that stood there said to them, What do ye, untying the colt?

<sup>6</sup> And they said to them, as Jesus commanded them; and they left it to them.

<sup>7</sup> And they brought the colt to Jesus, and they laid on him their clothes, and Jesus sat on him.

<sup>8</sup> And many strewed their clothes in the way, and other men cutted branches [*or boughs*] off trees, and strewed in the way.

<sup>9</sup> And they that went before, and that pursued, cried, and said, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord;

<sup>10</sup> blessed be the kingdom of our father David that is to come; Hosanna in highest things [*or Hosanna in highest*].

11 And he entered into Jerusalem, into the temple; and when he had seen all things about, when it was even[ing], he went out into Bethany, with the twelve.

12 And another day, when he went out of [*or out from*] Bethany, he hungered.

13 And when he had seen a fig tree afar having leaves, he came, if happily he should find anything thereon; and when he came to it, he found nothing, except leaves; for it was not time of figs.

14 And Jesus answered and said to it, Now never eat any man fruit of thee more [*or Now no more without end any man eat fruit of thee*]. And his disciples heard;

15 and they came to Jerusalem. And when he was entered into the temple, he began to cast out sellers and buyers in the temple; and he turned upside-down the boards of changers, and the chairs of men that sold culvers;

16 and he suffered not, that any man should bear a vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught them, and said, Whether it is not written, That mine house shall be called the house of praying to all folks? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

18 And when this thing was heard, the princes of priests, and [*the*] scribes sought how they should lose him; for they dreaded him, for all the people wondered on his teaching.

19 And when evening was come, he went out of the city.

20 And as they passed forth early, they saw the fig tree made dry from the roots.

21 And Peter bethought him, and said to him, [*or Peter having mind, said to him*], Master, lo! the fig tree, whom thou cursedest, is dried up.

22 And Jesus answered and said to them, Have ye the faith of God;

23 truly I say to you, that whoever saith to this hill, Be thou taken, and cast into the sea; and doubt not in his heart, but believeth, that whatever he say, shall be done, it shall be done to him.

24 Therefore I say to you, all things whatever things ye praying shall ask, believe ye that ye shall take, and they shall come to you.

25 And when ye shall stand to pray, forgive ye, if ye have anything against any man, that [*also*] your Father that is in heavens, forgive to you your sins.

26 And if ye forgive not, neither your Father that is in heavens, shall forgive to you your sins.

<sup>27</sup> And again they came to Jerusalem. And when he walked in the temple, the highest priests, and scribes, and the elder men came to him,

<sup>28</sup> and said to him, In what power doest thou these things? or who gave to thee this power, that thou do these things?

<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered and said to them, And I shall ask you one word, and answer ye to me, and I shall say to you in what power I do these things.

<sup>30</sup> Whether was the baptism of John of heaven, or of men? answer ye to me.

<sup>31</sup> And they thought within them-selves, saying, If we say of heaven, he shall say to us, Why then believe ye not to him;

<sup>32</sup> if we say of men, we dread the people; for all men had John, that he was verily a prophet.

<sup>33</sup> And they answered, and said to Jesus, We know not. And Jesus answered, and said to them, Neither I say to you, in what power I do these things.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus began to speak to them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and delved a pit, and builded a tower, and hired it to earth-tillers, and went forth in pilgrimage.

<sup>2</sup> And he sent to the earth-tillers in time a servant, to receive of the earth-tillers of the fruit of the vineyard.

<sup>3</sup> And they took him, and beat him, and left him void.

<sup>4</sup> And again he sent to them another servant, and they wounded him in the head, and tormented him [*or punished him with chidings, or reprovings*].

<sup>5</sup> And again he sent another, and they slew him, and others more, beating some, and slaying others [*or soothly they killed others*].

<sup>6</sup> But yet he had a most dearworthy son, and he sent him last to them, and said, Peradventure they shall dread [*with reverence*] my son.

<sup>7</sup> But the earth-tillers said together [*or Forsooth the tenants said to them-selves*], This is the heir; come ye, slay we him, and the heritage shall be ours.

<sup>8</sup> And they took him, and killed him, and casted *him* out without the vineyard.

<sup>9</sup> Then what shall the lord of the vineyard do? He shall come, and lose the earth-tillers [*or the tenants*], and give the vineyard to others.

10 Whether ye have not read this scripture, The stone which the builders have despised, this is made into the head of the corner?

11 This thing is done of the Lord, and *it* is wonderful in our eyes.

12 And they sought to hold him, and they dreaded the people; for they knew that to them he said this parable; and they left him, and they went away.

13 And they sent to him some of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to take him in word.

14 Which came, and said to him, Master, we know that thou art sooth-fast, and reckest not of any man; for neither thou beholdest into the face of any man, but thou teachest the way of God in truth. Is it leaveful that tribute be given to the emperor, or we shall not give?

15 Which witting their privy false-ness, said to them, What tempt ye me, [*hypocrites*]? bring ye to me a penny, that I see.

16 And they brought to him. And he said to them, Whose is this image, and the writing above? And they say to him, The emperor's [*or Caesar's*].

17 And Jesus answered and said to them, Then yield ye to the emperor [*or Caesar*] those things that be the emperor's [*or of Caesar*]; and to God those things that be of God. And they wondered of him.

18 And Sadducees, that say that there is no resurrection, came to him, and asked him, and said,

19 Master, Moses wrote to us, that if the brother of a man were dead, and left *his* wife, and have no sons, his brother take his wife, and raise up seed to his brother.

20 Then seven brethren there were; and the first took a wife, and died, and left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, and neither he left seed. And the third also.

22 And in like manner the seven took her, and left no seed. And the woman the last of all died.

23 Then in the resurrection, when they shall rise again, whose wife of these shall she be? for seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answered, and said to them, Whether ye err not therefore, that ye know not [*the*] scriptures, neither the virtue of God?

25 For when they shall rise again from death, neither they shall wed, nor shall be wedded, but they shall be as angels of God in heavens [*or in heaven*].

26 And of dead men, that they rise again, have ye not read in the book of Moses, on the bush, how God spake to him, and said, I am God of Abraham, and God of Isaac, and God of Jacob?

<sup>27</sup> He is not God of dead men, but of living men; therefore ye err much.

<sup>28</sup> And one of the scribes, that had heard them disputing together, came nigh, and saw that Jesus had well-answered them [*for had answered them well*], and asked him, which was the first commandment of all.

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus answered to him, That the first commandment of all is, Hear thou, Israel, thy Lord God is one God [*for the Lord thy God is one God*];

<sup>30</sup> and thou shalt love thy Lord God [*for the Lord thy God*] of all thine heart, and of all thy soul, and of all thy mind, and of all thy might, [*for strength*]. This is the first commandment.

<sup>31</sup> And the second is like to this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy-self. There is none other commandment greater than these.

<sup>32</sup> And the scribe said to him, Master, in truth thou hast well said; for one God is, and there is none other, except him;

<sup>33</sup> [*and*] that he be loved of all the heart, and of all the mind, and of all the understanding, and of all the soul, and of all the strength, and to love the neighbour as himself, is greater [*for is more*], than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.

<sup>34</sup> And Jesus seeing that he had answered wisely, said to him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And then no man durst ask him more anything.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus answered and said, teaching in the temple, How say [*the*] scribes, that Christ is the son of David?

<sup>36</sup> For David himself said in the Holy Ghost, The Lord said to my lord, Sit [*thou*] on my right half, till I put thine enemies the stool of thy feet.

<sup>37</sup> Then if David himself calleth him Lord, how then is he his son? And much people gladly heard him.

<sup>38</sup> And he said to them in his teaching, Be ye ware of scribes, that will wander [*or go*] in stoles, and be saluted in [*the*] chapping,

<sup>39</sup> and sit in synagogues in the first chairs [*or sit in the first chairs in synagogues*], and in the first sitting places in suppers;

<sup>40</sup> which devour the houses of widows under [*the*] colour of long prayer; they shall take the longer doom, [*either damnation*].

<sup>41</sup> And Jesus sitting against the treasury, beheld how the people cast money into the treasury; and many rich men casted many things.

<sup>42</sup> But when a poor widow was come, she cast two minutes, that is, a farthing.

<sup>43</sup> And he called together his disciples, and said to them, Truly I say to you, that this poor widow cast more than all, that cast into the treasury.

<sup>44</sup> For all they cast of that thing that they had plenty of; but this of her poverty cast all things that she had, all her livelode [*or lifelode*].

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> And when he went out of the temple, one of his disciples said to him, Master, behold, what manner stones, and what manner buildings.

<sup>2</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to him, Seest thou all these great buildings? there shall not be left a stone on a stone, which shall not be destroyed.

<sup>3</sup> And when he sat in the mount of Olives against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him by themselves,

<sup>4</sup> Say thou to us, when these things shall be done, and what token [*or sign*] shall be, when all these things shall begin to be ended.

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus answered, and began to say to them, Look [*or See*] ye, that no man deceive you;

<sup>6</sup> for many shall come in my name, saying, That I am; and they shall deceive many.

<sup>7</sup> And when ye hear battles and opinions of battles, dread ye not; for it behooveth these things to be done, but not yet anon is the end, [*or for it behooveth that these things be done, but the end is not yet*].

<sup>8</sup> For folk shall rise on folk, and realm on realm, and earth-movings and hunger shall be by places; these things *shall* be beginnings of sorrows.

<sup>9</sup> But see ye yourselves, for they shall take you in councils, and ye shall be beaten in synagogues; and ye shall stand before kings and dooms-men for me, in witnessing to them.

<sup>10</sup> And it behooveth, that the gospel be first preached among all folk.

<sup>11</sup> And when they take you, and lead you forth, do not ye before-think what ye shall speak, but speak ye that thing that shall be given to you in that hour; for ye be not the speakers [*or soothly ye be not speaking*], but the Holy Ghost.

<sup>12</sup> For the brother shall betake the brother into death [*or a brother shall betray a brother into death*], and the father the son, and sons shall rise together against fathers and mothers, and punish them by death.

13 And ye shall be in hate [*or in hatred*] to all men for my name; but he that lasteth [*or shall sustain*] into the end, shall be safe.

14 But when ye shall see the abomination of discomfort, standing where it oweth not; he that readeth, understand; then they that be in Judea, flee to the mountains.

15 And he that is above in the roof, come not down into the house, neither enter he, to take anything of his house;

16 and he that shall be in the field, turn not again behind to take his cloth.

17 But woe to them that be with child, and nourishing [*or nursing*] in those days.

18 Therefore pray ye, that those things, [*or that your fleeing*], be not done in winter.

19 But those days of tribulation shall be such, which manner were not from the beginning of creature, which God hath made, till now, neither shall be.

20 And but the Lord had abridged those days, all flesh, [*or mankind*], had not be safe; but for the chosen which he chose, the Lord hath made short the days.

21 And then if any man say to you, Lo! here is Christ, lo! there, believe ye not.

22 For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall give tokens [*or signs*] and wonders, to deceive, if it may be done, yea, them that be chosen, [*or yea, the chosen*].

23 Therefore take ye keep; lo! I have before-said to you all things.

24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be made dark, and the moon shall not give her light,

25 and the stars of heaven shall fall down, and the virtues that be in heavens shall be moved.

26 And then they shall see man's Son coming in the clouds of heaven, with great virtue and glory.

27 And then he shall send his angels, and shall gather his chosen from the four winds, from the highest [*or the lowest*] thing of earth till to [*or unto*] the highest thing of heaven.

28 But of the fig tree learn ye the parable. When now his branch is tender, and leaves be sprung out, ye know that summer is nigh.

29 So when ye see these things be done, know ye, that it is nigh in the doors.

30 Truly I say to you, that this generation shall not pass away, till all these things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall pass, but my words shall not pass.



<sup>32</sup> But of that day or hour no man knoweth, neither angels in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

<sup>33</sup> See ye, wake ye, and pray ye; for ye know not, when the time is.

<sup>34</sup> For as a man that is gone far in pilgrimage, left his house, and gave to his servants power of every work, and commanded to the porter, that he [*should*] wake.

<sup>35</sup> Therefore wake ye, for ye know not, when the lord of the house cometh, in the eventide, or at midnight, or at cock's crowing, or in the morning;

<sup>36</sup> lest when he come suddenly, he find you sleeping.

<sup>37</sup> Forsooth that that I say to you, I say to all, Wake ye.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> Pask and the feast of therf loaves was after two days. And the high priests and the scribes sought, how they should hold him with guile, and slay [*him*].

<sup>2</sup> But they said, Not in the feast day, lest peradventure a noise were made among the people.

<sup>3</sup> And when he was at Bethany, in the house of Simon leprous, and rested [*or sat at the meat*], a woman came, that had a box of alabaster of precious ointment spikenard; and when the box of alabaster was broken, she poured it on his head.

<sup>4</sup> But there were some that bare it heavily within themselves, and said, Whereto is this loss of ointment made?

<sup>5</sup> For this ointment might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and be given to poor men. And they grutched against her.

<sup>6</sup> But Jesus said, Suffer ye her; what be ye heavy to her? she hath wrought a good work in me.

<sup>7</sup> For evermore ye shall have poor men with you, and when ye will, ye may do well to them; but ye shall not evermore have me.

<sup>8</sup> She did that that she had; she came before to anoint my body into burying.

<sup>9</sup> Truly I say to you, wherever this gospel shall be preached in all the world, and that that this *woman* hath done, shall be told into mind of him [*or of her*].

<sup>10</sup> And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went to the high priests, to betray him to them.

<sup>11</sup> And they heard, and joyed, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he should betray him covenantably.

<sup>12</sup> And the first day of therf loaves, when they offered pask, the disciples said to him, Whither wilt thou that we go, and make ready to thee, that thou eat the pask?

13 And he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith to them, Go ye into the city, and a man bearing a gallon of water shall meet you; pursue ye him.

14 And whither ever he entereth, say ye to the lord of the house, That the master saith, Where is mine eating place, where I shall eat pask with my disciples?

15 And he shall show to you a great supping place arrayed, and there make ye ready to us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said to them; and they made ready the pask.

17 And when the eventide was come, he came with the twelve.

18 And when they sat at the meat, and ate, Jesus said, Truly I say to you, that one of you that eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorry [*or sorrowful*], and to say to him, each by themselves, Whether I?

20 Which said to them, One of the twelve that putteth [*in*]/his hand with me in the platter.

21 And soothly man's Son goeth, as it is written of him; but woe to that man, by whom man's Son shall be betrayed. It were good to him, if that man had not been born.

22 And while they ate, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake [*it*], and gave to them, and said, Take ye; this is my body.

23 And when he had taken the cup, he did thankings, and gave to them, and all drank thereof.

24 And he said to them, This is my blood of the new testament, which shall be shed for many.

25 Truly I say to you, for now I shall not drink of this fruit of the vine, into that day when I shall drink it new in the realm of God.

26 And when the hymn was said, they went out into the hill of Olives.

27 And Jesus said to them, All ye shall be caused to stumble in me in this night; for it is written, I shall smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be dispersed.

28 But after that I shall rise again, I shall go before you into Galilee.

29 And Peter said to him, Though all shall be caused to stumble, but not I.

30 And Jesus said to him, Truly I say to thee, that today before that the cock in this night crow twice, thou shalt thrice deny me [*or before that the cock crow twice in this night, thrice thou shalt deny me*].

<sup>31</sup> But he said more, Though it behoove, that I die together with thee, I shall not forsake thee [*or I shall not deny thee*]. And in like manner all said.

<sup>32</sup> And they came into a place, whose name is Gethsemane. And he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I pray.

<sup>33</sup> And he took Peter and James and John with him, and began to dread, and to be distressed [*or to be heavy*].

<sup>34</sup> And he said to them, My soul is sorrowful [*till*] to the death; abide ye here, and wake ye with me.

<sup>35</sup> And when he was gone forth a little, he felled down on the earth, and prayed, that if it might be, that the hour should pass from him.

<sup>36</sup> And he said, Abba, Father, all things be possible to thee, bear over [*or turn*] from me this cup; but not that I will, but that thou wilt, be done.

<sup>37</sup> And he came, and found them sleeping. And he said to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? mightest thou not wake with me one hour?

<sup>38</sup> Wake ye, and pray ye, that ye enter not into temptation; for the spirit is ready, but the flesh is sick.

<sup>39</sup> And again he went, and prayed, and said the same word;

<sup>40</sup> and he turned again, and again found them sleeping; for their eyes were heavied. And they knew not, what they should answer to him.

<sup>41</sup> And he came the third time, and said to them, Sleep ye now, and rest ye; it sufficeth. The hour is come; lo! man's Son shall be betrayed into the hands of sinful men.

<sup>42</sup> Rise ye, go we; lo! he that shall betray me is nigh.

<sup>43</sup> And yet while he spake, Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, came, and with him much people with swords and staves, sent from the high priests, and the scribes, and from the elder men.

<sup>44</sup> And his traitor had given to them a token [*or a sign*], and said, Whom-ever I kiss, he it is; hold ye him, and lead ye him warily.

<sup>45</sup> And when he came, anon he came to him, and said, Master; and he kissed him.

<sup>46</sup> And they laid hands on him, and held him.

<sup>47</sup> But one of the men that stood about, drew out a sword, and smote the servant of the highest priest, and cut off his ear.

<sup>48</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, As to a thief ye have gone out with swords and staves, to take me?

<sup>49</sup> Day by day I was among you, and taught in the temple, and ye held not me; but that the scriptures be fulfilled.

<sup>50</sup> Then all his disciples forsook him, and fled.

51 But a young man, clothed with linen cloth [*or sendal*] on the bare, pursued him; and they held him.

52 And he left the linen clothing [*or linen cloth*], and flew naked away from them.

53 And they led Jesus to the highest priest. And all the priests and scribes and elder men came together.

54 But Peter pursued him afar into the hall of the highest priest. And he sat with the servants, and warmed him at the fire.

55 And the highest priests, and all the council, sought witnessing against Jesus to take him to the death; but they found not.

56 For many said false witnessing against him, and the witnessings were not covenable.

57 And some rose up, and bare false witnessing against him, and said,

58 For we heard him saying, I shall undo this temple made with hands, and after [*or by*] the third day, I shall build another not made with hands.

59 And the witnessing of them was not covenable.

60 And the highest priest rose up into the middle [*or into the midst*], and asked Jesus, and said, Answerest thou nothing to those things that be put against thee of these [*men*]?

61 But he was still, and answered nothing. Again the highest priest asked him, and said to him, Art thou Christ, the Son of the blessed God?

62 And Jesus said to him, I am; and ye shall see man's Son sitting on the right half of the virtue of God, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 And the highest priest rent his clothes, and said, What yet desire we witnesses?

64 Ye have heard blasphemy. What seemeth [*or is seen*] to you? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to bespit him [*or to spit on him*], and to cover his face, and to smite him with buffets, and to say to him, Declare [*or Prophecy*] thou. And the ministers beat him with strokes.

66 And when Peter was in the hall beneath, one of the damsels [*or hand-maidens*] of the highest priest came.

67 And when she had seen Peter warming him, she beheld him, and said, And thou were with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 And he denied, and said, Neither I know, neither I know, what thou sayest. And he went withoutforth before the hall; and anon the cock crew.

<sup>69</sup> And again when another damsel [*or handmaiden*] had seen him, she began to say to men that stood about, That this is of them.

<sup>70</sup> And he again denied. And after a little, again they that stood nigh, said to Peter, Verily, thou art of them, for thou art of Galilee also.

<sup>71</sup> But he began to curse and to swear, For I know not this man, of whom ye say.

<sup>72</sup> And anon again the cock crew. And Peter bethought on the word that Jesus had said to him, Before the cock crow twice, thrice thou shalt deny me. And he began to weep.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> And anon in the morrowtide the high priests made a counsel with the elder men, and the scribes, and with all the council, and bound Jesus and led, and betook him to Pilate.

<sup>2</sup> And Pilate asked him, Art thou king of Jews? And Jesus answered, and said to him, Thou sayest.

<sup>3</sup> And the high priests accused him in many things.

<sup>4</sup> But Pilate again asked him, and said, Answerest thou nothing? Seest thou in how many things they accuse thee?

<sup>5</sup> But Jesus answered no[*thing*] more, so that Pilate wondered.

<sup>6</sup> But by the feast day he was wont to let go to them, one of the men bound [*or one of the prisoners*], whomever they asked.

<sup>7</sup> And there was one that was said Barabbas, that was bound with men of dissension, that had done man-slaughter in [*the*] sedition.

<sup>8</sup> And when the people was gone up, he began to pray, as he evermore did to them.

<sup>9</sup> And Pilate answered to them, and said, Will ye that I let go to you the king of Jews?

<sup>10</sup> For he knew, that the high priests had taken him by envy.

<sup>11</sup> But the bishops stirred [*or excited*] the people, that he should rather let go to them Barabbas.

<sup>12</sup> And again Pilate answered, and said to them, What then will ye that I shall do to the king of Jews?

<sup>13</sup> And they again cried, Crucify him, [*that is, put him on the cross*].

<sup>14</sup> But Pilate said to them, What evil hath he done? And they cried the more, Crucify him.

<sup>15</sup> And Pilate, willing to make satisfaction to the people, let go to them Barabbas, and he betook to them Jesus, beaten with scourges, to be crucified.

16 And knights led him withinforth, into the porch of the moot hall. And they called together all the company of knights,

17 and they clothed him with purple. And they wreathed a crown of thorns, and put on him.

18 And they began to greet him, *and said*, Hail, king of Jews.

19 And they smote his head with a reed, and bespat him [*or spat on him*]; and they kneeled, and worship-ped him.

20 And after that they had scorned him, they unclothed him of the purple, and clothed him with his clothes, and led out him, to crucify him.

21 And they compelled a man that passed by the way, that came from the town, Simon of Cyrene, the father of Alexander and of Rufus, to bear his cross.

22 And they led him into a place Golgotha [*or the place of Golgotha*], that is to say, the place of Calvary.

23 And they gave to him to drink wine meddled with myrrh, and he took not.

24 And they crucified him, and parted his clothes, and cast lot on those, who should take what.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the title of his cause was written, King of Jews.

27 And they crucified with him two thieves, one at the right half, and one at his left half, [*or one on his right half, and one on his left half*].

28 And the scripture was fulfilled that saith, And he is ordained [*or areckoned*] with wicked men.

29 And as they passed forth, they blasphemed him, moving their heads, and saying, Vath! [*or Fie!*] thou that destroyest the temple of God, and in three days buildest it again;

30 come adown from the cross, and make thyself safe.

31 Also the high priests scorned him each to other, with the scribes, and said, He hath made other men safe, he may not save himself.

32 Christ, [*the*] king of Israel, come down now from the cross, that we see, and believe. And they that were crucified with him, despised him [*or put false reproof to him*].

33 And when the sixth hour was come, darkneses were made on all the earth, till into the ninth hour.

34 And in the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a great voice, and said, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani, that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of the men that stood about heard, and said, Lo! he calleth Elijah.

<sup>36</sup> And one ran, and filled a sponge with vinegar, and putted about to a reed, and gave him to drink, and said, Suffer ye, see we, if Elijah come to do him down.

<sup>37</sup> And Jesus gave out a great cry, and died [*or sent out the spirit*].

<sup>38</sup> And the veil of the temple was rent [*or cut*] atwo, from the highest to beneath.

<sup>39</sup> But the centurion that stood over against saw, that he so crying had died, and he said, Verily, this man was God's Son [*or this man was the Son of God*].

<sup>40</sup> And there were also women beholding from afar, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary, the mother of James the less, and of Joseph, and of Salome [*or and Salome*].

<sup>41</sup> And when Jesus was in Galilee, they followed him, and ministered to him, and many other *women*, that came up together with him to Jerusalem.

<sup>42</sup> And when the eventide was come, for it was the eventide that is before the sabbath,

<sup>43</sup> Joseph of Arimathaea, the noble decurion, came, and he abode the realm of God; and boldly he entered to Pilate, and asked the body of Jesus.

<sup>44</sup> But Pilate wondered, if he were now dead. And when the centurion was called, he asked him, if he were [*now*] dead;

<sup>45</sup> and when he knew of the centurion, he granted [*or gave*] the body of Jesus to Joseph.

<sup>46</sup> And Joseph bought linen cloth [*or sendal*], and took him down, and wrapped [*him*] in the linen cloth, and laid him in a sepulchre that was hewn of a stone [*or put him in a new sepulchre that was hewn in a stone*], and wallowed a stone to the door of the sepulchre.

<sup>47</sup> And Mary Magdalene and Mary of Joseph beheld, where he was laid.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> And when the sabbath was passed, Mary Magdalene, and Mary of James, and Salome bought sweet smelling ointments, to come and to anoint Jesus.

<sup>2</sup> And full early in one of the week days, they came to the sepulchre, when the sun was risen.

<sup>3</sup> And they said together, Who shall move [*or turn*] away to us the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

<sup>4</sup> And they beheld, and saw the stone wallowed away, for it was full great.

<sup>5</sup> And they went into the sepulchre, and saw a youngling, covered with a white stole, sitting at the right half; and they were afeared.

<sup>6</sup> Which saith to them, Do not ye dread; ye seek Jesus of Nazareth crucified; he is risen, he is not here; lo! the place where they laid him.

<sup>7</sup> But go ye, and say to his disciples, and to Peter, that he shall go before you into Galilee; there ye shall see him, as he said to you.

<sup>8</sup> And they went out, and fled from the sepulchre; for dread and quaking [*or trembling*] had assailed them, and to no man they said anything, for they dreaded.

<sup>9</sup> And Jesus rose early the first day of the week, and appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven devils.

<sup>10</sup> And she went, and told to them that had been with him, *which were* wailing [*or mourning*] and weeping.

<sup>11</sup> And they hearing that he lived, and was seen of her, believed not.

<sup>12</sup> But after these things when twain of them wandered, he was showed in another likeness to them going into a town. [*+Forsooth after these things, he was showed in another likeness, or figure, to twain of them walking and going into a town.*]

<sup>13</sup> And they went, and told to the others, and neither they believed to them.

<sup>14</sup> But after at the last, when the eleven sat at the meat, Jesus appeared to them, and reproveth the unbelief of them, and the hardness of heart, for they believed not to them, that had seen that he was risen from death.

<sup>15</sup> And he said to them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to each creature.

<sup>16</sup> Who that believeth, and is baptized [*or christened*], shall be safe [*or saved*]; but he that believeth not, shall be condemned [*or damned*].

<sup>17</sup> And these tokens [*or these signs*] shall pursue them, that believe. In my name they shall cast out fiends; they shall speak with new tongues;

<sup>18</sup> they shall do away serpents; and if they drink any venom, [*or deadly thing*], it shall not annoy them. They shall set their hands on sick men, and they shall wax whole.

<sup>19</sup> And the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven, and he sitteth on the right half of God.

<sup>20</sup> And they went forth, and preached everywhere, for the Lord wrought [*or working*] with them, and confirmed the word with signs, [*either miracles*], following.



## LUKE

[ <sup>1</sup> Forsooth for many men enforced *or endeavoured* to ordain the telling of things, which be filled in us,

<sup>2</sup> as they that saw at the beginning, and were ministers of the word, betaken,

<sup>3</sup> it is seen also to me, having from the beginning all things diligently by order, to write to thee, thou best Theophilus,

<sup>4</sup> that thou know the truth of those words, of which thou art learned.]\*

<sup>5</sup> In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there was a priest, Zechariah by name, of the sort of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

<sup>6</sup> And both were just before God, going in all the commandments and justifying of the Lord, without complaint.

<sup>7</sup> And they had no child, for Elisabeth was barren, and both were of great age [*or had gone far*] in their days.

<sup>8</sup> And it befell, that when Zechariah should do the office of priesthood, in the order of his course before God,

<sup>9</sup> after the custom of the priesthood, he went forth by lot, and entered into the temple [*of the Lord*], to incense.

<sup>10</sup> And all the multitude of the people was withoutforth, and prayed in the hour of incensing.

<sup>11</sup> And an angel of the Lord appeared to him, and stood on the right half of the altar of incense.

<sup>12</sup> And Zechariah seeing was afraid [*or distroubled*], and dread fell upon him.

<sup>13</sup> And the angel said to him, Zechariah, dread thou not; for thy prayer is heard, and Elisabeth, thy wife, shall bear to thee a son, and his name shall be called John.

<sup>14</sup> And joy and gladding shall be to thee; and many shall have joy in his nativity, *or birth*.

<sup>15</sup> For he shall be great before the Lord, and he shall not drink wine nor cider; and he shall be full-filled [*or filled*] with the Holy Ghost, yet from his mother's womb.

<sup>16</sup> And he shall convert many of the children of Israel to their Lord God;

<sup>17</sup> and he shall go before him in the spirit and virtue of Elijah; and he shall turn the hearts of the fathers into the sons, and men out of belief, [*or that believe not*], to the prudence of just men, to make ready a perfect people to the Lord.

---

\* **CHAPTER 1:4** These four prefatory verses are only found in two copies of the "Early Version".

18 And Zechariah said to the angel, Whereof shall I know this? for I am old, and my wife hath gone far in her days.

19 And the angel answered, and said to him, For I am Gabriel, that stand nigh before God; and I am sent to thee to speak, and to evangelize *[or to tell]* to thee these things.

20 And lo! thou shalt be dumb, and thou shalt not be able to speak till into the day, in which these things shall be done; for thou hast not believed to my words, which shall be fulfilled in their time.

21 And the people was abiding Zechariah, and they wondered, that he tarried in the temple.

22 And he went out, and might not speak to them, and they knew that he had seen a vision in the temple. And he beckoned to them, and dwelled still dumb.

23 And it was done, when the days of his office were fulfilled, he went into his house.

24 And after these days Elisabeth, his wife, conceived, and hid her five months, and said,

25 For so the Lord did to me in the days, in which he beheld, to take away my reproof *[or my shame]* among men.

26 But in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God into a city of Galilee, whose name was Nazareth,

27 to a maiden *[or a virgin]*, wedded to a man, whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the name of the maiden was Mary.

28 And the angel entered to her, and said, Hail, full of grace; the Lord is with thee; blessed be thou among women.

29 And when she had heard, she was troubled in his word, and thought what manner salutation this was.

30 And the angel said to her, Dread thou not, Mary, for thou hast found grace with God.

31 Lo! thou shalt conceive in *[the]* womb, and shalt bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus.

32 This *[or He]* shall be great, and he shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give to him the seat of David, his father,

33 and he shall reign in the house of Jacob *[into]* without end, and of his realm shall be none end.

34 And Mary said to the angel, On what manner shall this thing be done, for I know not man? or I know no man?

35 And the angel answered, and said to her, The Holy Ghost shall come from above into thee, and the virtue of the Highest shall overshadow thee; and therefore that holy thing that shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

36 And lo! Elisabeth, thy cousin, and she also hath conceived a son in her old *age*, and this month is the sixth to her that is called barren;

37 for every word shall not be impossible with God.

38 And Mary said, Lo! the handmaid/ the handmaiden of the Lord; be it done to me after thy word. And the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary rose up in those days, and went with haste into the mountains [*or the hilly places*], into a city of Judea.

40 And she entered into the house of Zechariah, and greeted Elisabeth.

41 And it was done, as Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the young child in her womb gladdened. And Elisabeth was full-filled [*or filled*] with the Holy Ghost,

42 and cried with a great voice, and said, Blessed *be* thou among women, and blessed *be* the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whereof is this thing to me, that the mother of my Lord come to me?

44 For lo! as the voice of thy salutation was made in mine ears, the young child gladdened in joy [*or with joy*] in my womb.

45 And blessed be thou, that hast believed, for those things that be said of [*or from*] the Lord to thee, shall be perfectly done.

46 And Mary said, My soul magnifieth the Lord,

47 and my spirit hath gladdened in God, mine health [*or mine health-giver*].

48 For he hath beheld the meekness of his handmaid/his handmaiden. For lo! of this all generations shall say that I am blessed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and his name is holy.

50 And his mercy is from kindred into kindreds, to men that dread him.

51 He made might in his arm, he scattered proud men with the thought of his heart.

52 He put down mighty men from *their* seats, and enhanced meek men.

53 He hath full-filled hungry men with goods [*or He hath filled hungry men with good things*], and he hath left rich men void.

54 He, having mind of his mercy, took Israel, his child;

55 as he hath spoken to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed, into worlds.

56 And Mary dwelled with her, as it were three months, and turned again in to her house.

57 But the time of bearing child was fulfilled to Elisabeth, and she bare a son.

58 And the neighbours and the cousins of her heard, that the Lord had magnified his mercy with her; and they thanked him [*or they together joyed to her*].

59 And it was done in the eighth day, they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zechariah, by the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered, and said, Nay, but he shall be called John.

61 And they said to her, For no man is in thy kindred, that is called [*by*] this name.

62 And they beckoned to his father, what he would that he were called.

63 And he asking a pointel, wrote, saying, John is his name. And all men wondered.

64 And anon his mouth was opened, and his tongue, and he spake, and blessed God.

65 And dread was made on all their neighbours, and all these words were published on all the mountains [*or all the hilly places*] of Judea.

66 And all men that heard putted in their heart, and said, What manner child shall this be? For the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And Zechariah, his father, was full-filled [*or filled*] with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, and said,

68 Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited, and made redemption of his people.

69 And he hath raised to us an horn of health, in the house of David, his child.

70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, that were from the world.

71 Health from our enemies, and from the hand of all men that hated us.

72 To do mercy with our fathers, and to have mind of his holy testament.

73 The great oath that he swore to Abraham, our father,

74 to give himself to us. That we without dread, delivered from the hand of our enemies, serve to him, [*or That we delivered from the hand of our enemies, serve to him without dread*],

75 in holiness and rightwiseness before him in all our days.

76 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest; for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to make ready his ways.

77 To give science of health to his people, into remission of their sins;

<sup>78</sup> by the inwardness of the mercy of our God, in the which he springing up from on high hath visited us.

<sup>79</sup> To give light to them that sit in darkneses, and in the shadow of death; to address our feet into the way of peace.

<sup>80</sup> And the child waxed, and was comforted in spirit, and was in desert places unto the day of his showing to Israel.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And it was done in those days, a commandment went out from the emperor [*or Caesar*] Augustus, that all the world should be described.

<sup>2</sup> This first describing was made of Cyrenius, justice, [*or keeper*], of Syria.

<sup>3</sup> And all men went to make profession, [*or acknowledging*], each into his own city.

<sup>4</sup> And Joseph went up from Galilee, from the city [*of*] Nazareth, into Judea, into a city of David, that is called Bethlehem, for that he was of the house and of the meine of David,

<sup>5</sup> that he should acknowledge with Mary, his wife, that was wedded to him, and was great with child.

<sup>6</sup> And it was done, while they were there, the days were fulfilled, that she should bear child.

<sup>7</sup> And she bare her first-born son, and wrapped him in 'clothes, and laid him in a cratch, for there was no place to him in no chamber.

<sup>8</sup> And shepherds were in the same country, waking and keeping the watches of the night on their flock.

<sup>9</sup> And lo! the angel of the Lord stood beside them, and the clearness of God shined about them; and they dreaded with great dread.

<sup>10</sup> And the angel said to them, Do not ye dread; for lo! I preach to you a great joy, that shall be to all people.

<sup>11</sup> For a Saviour is born today to you, that is Christ the Lord, in the city of David.

<sup>12</sup> And this is a token to you; ye shall find a young child wrapped in 'clothes, and laid in a cratch.

<sup>13</sup> And suddenly there was made with the angel a multitude of heavenly knighthood, praising God, and saying,

<sup>14</sup> Glory *be* in the highest things to God, and in earth peace to men of good will.

<sup>15</sup> And it was done, as the angels passed away from them into heaven, the shepherds spake together, and said, Go we over to Bethlehem, and see we this word that is made, which the Lord hath made, and showed to us.

16 And they hieing came, and found Mary and Joseph, and the young child laid in a cratch.

17 And they seeing, knew of the word that was said to them of this child.

18 And all men that heard wondered, and of these things that were said to them of the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these words, bearing together in her heart.

20 And the shepherds turned again, glorifying and praising God in all things that they had heard and seen, as it was said to them.

21 And after that eight days were ended, that the child should be circumcised, his name was called Jesus, which was called of the angel, before that he was conceived in the womb.

22 And after that the days of the purification of Mary were fulfilled, after Moses' law, they took him into Jerusalem, to offer him to the Lord,

23 as it is written in the law of the Lord, For every male-kind opening the womb, shall be called holy to the Lord;

24 and that they shall give an offering, after that it is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtles, or two culver birds.

25 And lo! a man was in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and this man *was* just, and virtuous [*or dread-full*], and abode the comfort of Israel; and the Holy Ghost was in him.

26 And he had taken an answer of the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, but he saw first the Christ of the Lord.

27 And he came in Spirit into the temple. And when his father and mother led [*in*] the child Jesus to do after the custom of the law for him,

28 he took him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29 Lord, now thou leavest thy servant after thy word in peace;

30 for mine eyes have seen thine health,

31 which thou hast made ready before the face of all peoples;

32 light to the showing of heathen men, and glory of thy people Israel.

33 And his father and his mother were wondering on these things, that were said of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said to Mary, his mother, Lo! this is set into the falling down and into the rising again of many men in Israel, and into a token, to whom it shall be against-said.

<sup>35</sup> And a sword shall pass through thine own soul, that the thoughts be showed of many hearts.

<sup>36</sup> And Anna was a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the lineage of Aser. And she had gone forth in many days, and had lived with her husband seven years from her maidenhood.

<sup>37</sup> And this was a widow to fourscore years and four; and she departed not from the temple, but served *God* night and day in fastings and prayers.

<sup>38</sup> And this came upon them in that hour, and acknowledged to the Lord, and spake of him to all that abided the redemption of Israel.

<sup>39</sup> And as they had full [*or perfectly*] done all things, after the law of the Lord, they turned again in to Galilee, in to their city Nazareth.

<sup>40</sup> And the child waxed, and was comforted, full of wisdom; and the grace of God was in him.

<sup>41</sup> And his father and mother went each year into Jerusalem, in the solemn day of pask.

<sup>42</sup> And when Jesus was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast day.

<sup>43</sup> And when the days were done, they turned again; and the child abode in Jerusalem, and his father and mother knew it not.

<sup>44</sup> For they guessing that he had been in the fellowship, came a day's journey, and sought him among his cousins and his acknowledged [*or his known*].

<sup>45</sup> And when they found him not, they turned again in to Jerusalem, and sought him.

<sup>46</sup> And it befell, that after the third day they found him in the temple, sitting in the middle of the doctors, hearing them and asking them.

<sup>47</sup> And all men that heard him, wondered on the prudence and the answers of him.

<sup>48</sup> And they saw, and wondered. And his mother said to him, Son, what hast thou done to us thus? Lo! thy father and I sorrowing have sought thee.

<sup>49</sup> And he said to them, What is it that ye sought me? knew ye not, that in those things that be of my Father [*or that be my Father's*], it behooveth me to be?

<sup>50</sup> And they understood not the word, which he spake to them.

<sup>51</sup> And he came down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them. And his mother kept together all these words, and bare them in her heart.

<sup>52</sup> And Jesus profited in wisdom, age, and grace, with God and men.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> In the fifteenth year of the empire of Tiberius, the emperor, when Pilate of Pontii governed Judea, and Herod *was* prince of Galilee, and Philip, his brother, *was* prince of Ituraea, and of the country of Trachonitis, and Lysanias *was* prince of Abilene,

<sup>2</sup> under the princes of priests, Annas and Caiaphas, the word of the Lord was made on John, the son of Zechariah, in desert.

<sup>3</sup> And he came into all the country of Jordan, and preached baptism of penance into remission of sins.

<sup>4</sup> As it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah, the prophet, The voice of a crier [*or The voice of one crying*] in desert, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, make ye his paths right.

<sup>5</sup> Each valley shall be full-filled, and every hill [*or mountain*] and little hill shall be made low; and shrewd things shall be into dressed things, and sharp things into plain ways;

<sup>6</sup> and every flesh [*or each man*] shall see the health of God.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore he said to the people, which went out to be baptized of him, Kindlings of adders, who showed to you to flee from the wrath to coming? [*or to come?*]

<sup>8</sup> Therefore do ye worthy fruits of penance, and begin ye not to say, We have a father Abraham; for I say to you, that God is mighty to raise of these stones the sons of Abraham.

<sup>9</sup> And now an ax is set [*or is put*] to the root of the tree; and therefore every tree that maketh not good fruit, shall be cut down, and shall be cast into the fire.

<sup>10</sup> And the people asked him, and said, What then shall we do?

<sup>11</sup> He answered, and said to them, He that hath two coats, give he to him that hath none; and he that hath meats, do in like manner.

<sup>12</sup> And [*the*] publicans came to be baptized; and they said to him, Master, what shall we do?

<sup>13</sup> And he said to them, Do ye nothing more, than that that is ordained to you.

<sup>14</sup> And [*the*] knights asked him, and said, What shall also we do? And he said to them, Smite ye wrongfully no man, neither make ye false challenge, and be ye satisfied with your wages.

<sup>15</sup> When all the people guessed, and all men thought in their hearts of John, lest peradventure he were Christ,



<sup>16</sup> John answered, and said to all men, I baptize you in water; but a stronger than I shall come after me, of whom I am not worthy to unbind the lace [*or the thong*] of his shoes; he shall baptize you in the Holy Ghost and fire.

<sup>17</sup> Whose winnowing tool, or fan, is in his hand, and he shall purge his floor of corn [*or his cornfloor*], and shall gather the wheat into his barn; but the chaff he shall burn with fire unquenchable.

<sup>18</sup> And many other things also he spake, and preached [*or evangelized*] to the people.

<sup>19</sup> But Herod [*the*] tetrarch, when he was blamed of John for Herodias, the wife of his brother, and for all the evils that Herod did,

<sup>20</sup> he increased this over all, and shut John in prison.

<sup>21</sup> And it was done, when all the people was baptized, and when Jesus was baptized, and prayed, heaven was opened.

<sup>22</sup> And the Holy Ghost came down in bodily likeness, as a dove on him; and a voice was made from heaven, Thou art my dearworthy Son, in thee it hath well pleased to me.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus himself was beginning as of thirty years, that he was guessed the son of Joseph, which was of Heli,

<sup>24</sup> which was of Matthat, which was of Levi, which was of Melchi, that was of Janna, that was of Joseph,

<sup>25</sup> that was of Mattathias, that was of Amos, that was of Nahum, that was of Esli, that was of Naggai,

<sup>26</sup> that was of Maath, that was of Mattathias, that was of Semein, that was of Joseph, that was of Joda,

<sup>27</sup> that was of Joanna, that was of Rhesa, that was of Zerubbabel, that was of Salathiel, that was of Neri,

<sup>28</sup> that was of Melchi, that was of Addi, that was of Cosam, that was of Elmodam, that was of Er,

<sup>29</sup> that was of Joshua, that was of Eliezer, that was of Jorim, that was of Matthat, that was of Levi,

<sup>30</sup> that was of Simeon, that was of Judah, that was of Joseph, that was of Jonan, that was of Eliakim,

<sup>31</sup> that was of Melea, that was of Menna, that was of Mattatha, that was of Nathan, that was of David,

<sup>32</sup> that was of Jesse, that was of Obed, that was of Boaz, that was of Salmon, that was of Nahshon,

<sup>33</sup> that was of Amminadab, that was of Aram, that was of Hezron, that was of Perez, that was of Judah,

<sup>34</sup> that was of Jacob, that was of Isaac, that was of Abraham, that was of Terah, that was of Nahor,

<sup>35</sup> that was of Serug, that was of Reu, that was of Peleg, that was of Heber, that was of Shelah,

<sup>36</sup> that was of Cainan, that was of Arphaxad, that was of Shem, that was of Noah, that was of Lamech,

<sup>37</sup> that was of Methuselah, that was of Enoch, that was of Jared, that was of Mahalaleel, that was of Cainan,

<sup>38</sup> that was of Enos, that was of Seth, that was of Adam, that was of God.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus full of the Holy Ghost turned again from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into desert

<sup>2</sup> forty days, and was tempted of the devil, and [*he*] ate nothing in those days; and when those days were ended, he hungered.

<sup>3</sup> And the devil said to him, If thou art God's Son, say to this stone, that it be made bread.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered to him, It is written, That a man liveth not in bread alone, but in every word of God.

<sup>5</sup> And the devil led him into an high hill, and showed to him all the realms of the world in a moment of time;

<sup>6</sup> and said to him, I shall give to thee all this power, and the glory of them, for to me they be given, and to whom I will, I give them;

<sup>7</sup> therefore if thou fall down, and worship before me, all things shall be thine.

<sup>8</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to him, It is written, Thou shalt worship thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*], and to him alone thou shalt serve.

<sup>9</sup> And he led him into Jerusalem, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to him, If thou art God's Son, send thyself from hence down;

<sup>10</sup> for it is written, For he hath commanded to his angels of thee, that they keep thee in all thy ways,

<sup>11</sup> and that they shall take thee in hands, lest peradventure thou hurt thy foot at [*or on*] a stone.

<sup>12</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*].

<sup>13</sup> And when every temptation was ended, the fiend [*or the devil*] went away from him for a time.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus turned again in the virtue of the Spirit into Galilee, and the fame went forth of him through all the country.

<sup>15</sup> And he taught in the synagogues of them, and was magnified of all men.

<sup>16</sup> And he came to Nazareth, where he was nourished, and he entered after his custom in the sabbath day into a synagogue [*or into the synagogue*], and rose to read.

17 And the book of Isaiah, the prophet, was taken to him; and as he turned the book, he found a place, where it was written,

18 The Spirit of the Lord *is[up]* on me, for which thing he anointed me; he sent me to preach *[or evangelize]* to poor men, to heal contrite men in heart, and to preach remission to prisoners *[or captives]*, and sight to blind men, and to deliver broken men into remission;

19 to preach the year of the Lord pleasant *[or accepted]*, and the day of yielding again *[or retribution]*.

20 And when he had closed the book, he gave *[it]* again to the minister, and sat; and the eyes of all men in the synagogue were beholding into him.

21 And he began to say to them, For in this day this scripture is fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all men gave witnessing to him, and wondered in the words of grace, that came forth *[or came out]* of his mouth. And they said, Whether this is not the son of Joseph?

23 And he said to them, Soothly ye shall say to me this likeness, Leech, heal thyself. The Pharisees said to Jesus, How great things have we heard done in Capernaum, do thou also here in thy country.

24 And he said, Truly I say to you, that no prophet is received *[or is accepted]* in his own country.

25 In truth I say to you, that many widows were in the days of Elijah, the prophet, in Israel, when heaven was closed three years and six months, when great hunger was made in all the earth *[or in every land]*;

26 and to none of them was Elijah sent, but into Sarepta of Sidon, to a woman a widow *[or no but to Sarepta of Sidon, to a woman widow]*.

27 And many mesels were in Israel, under Elisha, the prophet, and none of them was cleansed, but Naaman of Syria.

28 And all in the synagogue hearing these things, were filled with wrath.

29 And they rose up, and drove him out without the city, and led him to the top of the hill on which their city was builded, to cast him down.

30 But Jesus passed, and went through the middle of them;

31 and he came down into Caper-naum, a city of Galilee, and there he taught them in *[the]* sabbaths.

32 And they were astonied in his teaching, for his word was in power.

<sup>33</sup> And in their synagogue was a man having an unclean fiend, and he cried with great voice,

<sup>34</sup> and said, Suffer, what to us and to thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to lose us? I know thee, that thou art the Holy of God.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus blamed him, and said, Wax dumb, and go out from him. And when the fiend had cast him forth into the middle, he went away from him, and he annoyed him nothing.

<sup>36</sup> And dread was made in all men, and they spake together, and said, What is this word, for in power and virtue he commandeth to unclean spirits, and they go out?

<sup>37</sup> And the fame was published of him into each place of the country.

<sup>38</sup> And Jesus rose up from the synagogue, and entered into the house of Simon; and the mother of Simon's wife was holden with great fevers, and they prayed him for her.

<sup>39</sup> And Jesus stood over her, and commanded to the fever, and it left her; and anon she rose up, and served them.

<sup>40</sup> And when the sun went down, all that had sick men with diverse languors, [*or aches*], led them to him; and he set his hands on each by themselves, and healed them.

<sup>41</sup> And fiends went out from many, and cried, and said, For thou art the Son of God. And he blamed, and suffered them not to speak, for they knew him, that he was Christ.

<sup>42</sup> And when the day was come, he went out, and went into a desert place; and the people sought him, and they came to him, and they held him, that he should not go away from them.

<sup>43</sup> To whom he said, For also to other cities it behooveth me to preach [*or evangelize*] the kingdom of God, for therefore [*or thereto*] I am sent.

<sup>44</sup> And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when the people came fast to Jesus, to hear the word of God, he stood beside the pool [*or the water*] of Gennesaret,

<sup>2</sup> and saw two boats standing beside the pool [*or the water*]; and the fishers were gone down, and washed their nets.

<sup>3</sup> And he went up into a boat, that was Simon's, and prayed him to lead it a little from the land; and he sat, and taught the people out of the boat.

<sup>4</sup> And as he ceased to speak, he said to Simon, Lead out into the depth, and slack ye your nets to take fish.

<sup>5</sup> And Simon answered, and said to him, Commander, we travailed all the night, and took nothing, but in thy word I shall lay out the net.

<sup>6</sup> And when they had done this thing, they enclosed together a great multitude of fishes; and their net was broken.

<sup>7</sup> And they beckoned to fellows, that were in another boat, that they should come, and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they were almost drowned.

<sup>8</sup> And when Simon Peter saw this thing, he felled down to the knees of Jesus, and said, Lord, go from me, for I am a sinful man.

<sup>9</sup> For he was on each side astonied, and all that were with him, in the taking of fishes which they took.

<sup>10</sup> Soothly in like manner James and John, the sons of Zebedee, that were fellows of Simon Peter. And Jesus said to Simon, Do not thou dread; now from this time thou shalt take men.

<sup>11</sup> And when the boats were led up to the land, they left all things, and they pursued him.

<sup>12</sup> And it was done, when he was in one of the cities, lo! a man full of leprosy; and seeing Jesus fell down on his face, and prayed him, and said, Lord, if thou wilt, thou mayest make me clean.

<sup>13</sup> And Jesus held forth his hand, and touched him, and said, I will, be thou made clean. And anon the leprosy passed away from him.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus commanded to him, that he should say to no man; But go, show thee to a priest, and offer for thy cleansing, as Moses bade, into witnessing to them.

<sup>15</sup> And the word walked about the more of him; and much people came together, to hear, and to be healed of their sicknesses.

<sup>16</sup> And he went into desert, and prayed.

<sup>17</sup> And it was done in one of the days, he sat, and taught; and there were Pharisees sitting, and doctors of the law, that came from *[or of]* each castle of Galilee, and of Judea, and of Jerusalem; and the virtue of the Lord was to heal sick men.

<sup>18</sup> And lo! men bare in a bed a man that was sick in palsy, and they sought to bear him in, and set before him.

<sup>19</sup> And they found not in what part they should bear him in, for the people, and they went upon the roof, and by the slates they let him down with the bed, into the midst, before Jesus.

<sup>20</sup> And when Jesus saw the faith of them, he said, Man, thy sins be forgiven to thee.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to think, saying, Who is this, that speaketh blasphemies? who may forgive sins, but God alone?

22 And as Jesus knew the thoughts of them, he answered, and said to them, What think ye evil things in your hearts?

23 What is lighter to say, Sins be forgiven to thee, or to say, Rise up, and walk?

24 But that ye know, that man's Son hath power in earth to forgive sins, he said to the sick man in palsy, I say to thee, rise up, take thy bed, and go into thine house.

25 And anon he rose up before them, and took the bed in which he lay, and went into his house, and magnified God.

26 And great wonder took all, and they magnified God; and they were full-filled with great dread, and said, For we have seen marvelous things today.

27 And after these things Jesus went out, and saw a publican, Levi by name, sitting at the tollbooth. And he said to him, Pursue thou me;

28 and when he had left all things, he rose up, and pursued him.

29 And Levi made to him a great feast in his house; and there was a great company of publicans, and of others that were with them, sitting at the meat.

30 And the Pharisees and the scribes of them grutched, and said to his disciples, Why eat ye and drink with publicans, and sinful men?

31 And Jesus answered, and said to them, They that be whole have no need to a leech, but they that be sick [*or they that have evil*];

32 for I came not to call just men, but sinful men to penance.

33 And they said to him, Why the disciples of John fast oft, and make prayers, also and of the Pharisees, but thine eat and drink?

34 To whom he said, Whether ye may make the sons of the spouse to fast, while the spouse is with them?

35 But days shall come, when the spouse shall be taken away from them, and then they shall fast in those days.

36 And he said to them also a likeness; For no man taketh a piece from a new cloth, and putteth *it* into an old clothing; else both he breaketh the new, and the piece of the new accordeth not to the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles [*or old wine vessels*]; else the new wine shall break the bottles [*or wine vessels*], and the wine shall be shed out, and the bottles [*or wine vessels*] shall perish.

<sup>38</sup> But new wine oweth to be put into new bottles [*or new wine vessels*], and both be kept.

<sup>39</sup> And no man drinking the old, will anon the new; for he saith, The old is the better [*or The old is better*].

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> And it was done in the second first sabbath [*or in the first second sabbath*], when he passed by the corns, his disciples plucked ears of corn; and they rubbing with their hands, ate.

<sup>2</sup> And some of the Pharisees said to them, What do ye that, that is not leaveful in the sabbaths?

<sup>3</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, Have ye not read, what David did, when he hungered, and they that were with him;

<sup>4</sup> how he entered into the house of God, and took loaves of proposition, and ate, and gave to them that were with him; which *loaves* it was not leaveful to eat, but only to priests [*or no but to priests alone*].

<sup>5</sup> And he said to them, For man's Son is Lord, yea, of the sabbath.

<sup>6</sup> And it was done in another sabbath, that he entered into a synagogue, and taught. And a man was there, and his right hand was dry.

<sup>7</sup> And the scribes and the Pharisees espied him, if he would heal him in the sabbath, that they should find cause, whereof they should accuse him.

<sup>8</sup> And he knew the thoughts of them, and he said to the man that had a dry hand, Rise up, and stand in the middle. And he rose, and stood.

<sup>9</sup> And Jesus said to them, I ask you, if it is leaveful to do well in the sabbath [*day*], or evil? to make a soul safe, or to lose?

<sup>10</sup> And when he had beheld all men about, he said to the man, Hold forth thine hand. And he held forth, and his hand was restored to health.

<sup>11</sup> And they were full-filled [*or filled*] with unwisdom, and spake together, what they should do of Jesus.

<sup>12</sup> And it was done in those days, he went out into an hill to pray; and he was all night dwelling in the prayer of God.

<sup>13</sup> And when the day was come, he called his disciples, and chose twelve of them, which he called [*or he named*] also apostles;

<sup>14</sup> Simon, whom he called Peter, and Andrew, his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

<sup>15</sup> Matthew and Thomas, James Alphaeus, and Simon, that is called Zelotes,

<sup>16</sup> Judas of James, and Judas Iscariot, that was traitor.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus came down from the hill with them, and stood in a field place; and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people, of all Judea, and Jerusalem, and of the sea coasts, and of Tyre and Sidon, that came to hear him, and to be healed of their sicknesses;

<sup>18</sup> and they that were travailed of [*or with*] unclean spirits, were healed.

<sup>19</sup> And all the people sought to touch him, for virtue went out of him, and healed all.

<sup>20</sup> And when his eyes were cast up, into his disciples, he said, Blessed *be ye*, poor men [*or poor*], for the kingdom of God is yours.

<sup>21</sup> Blessed *be ye*, that now hunger, for ye shall be full-filled. Blessed *be ye*, that now weep, for ye shall laugh. [*Blessed be ye, that hunger now, for ye shall be filled. Blessed be ye that weep now, for ye shall laugh.*]

<sup>22</sup> Ye shall be blessed, when men shall hate you, and separate you away, and put reproof to you [*or shall put shame on you*], and cast out your name as evil, for man's Son.

<sup>23</sup> Joy ye in that day, and be ye glad; for lo! your meed is much in heaven; for after these things the fathers of them did to prophets.

<sup>24</sup> Nevertheless woe to you, rich men, that have your comfort.

<sup>25</sup> Woe to you that be full-filled, for ye shall hunger. Woe to you that now laugh, for ye shall mourn, and weep. [*Woe to you that be filled, for ye shall hunger. Woe to you that laugh now, for ye shall mourn, and weep.*]

<sup>26</sup> Woe to you, when all men shall bless you; after these things the fathers of them did to [*false*] prophets.

<sup>27</sup> But I say to you that hear, love ye your enemies, do ye well to them that hated you [*or that hate you*];

<sup>28</sup> bless ye men that curse you, pray ye for men that defame you [*or that falsely challenge you*].

<sup>29</sup> And to him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, show also the other [*or give also the tother*]; and from him that taketh away from thee a cloth, do not thou forbid the coat.

<sup>30</sup> And give to each that asketh thee, and if a man taketh away those things that be thine, ask thou not again.

<sup>31</sup> And as ye will that men do to you, do ye also to them in like manner.

<sup>32</sup> And if ye love them that love you, what thank [*or what grace*] is to you? for sinful men love men that love them.



<sup>33</sup> And if ye do well to them that do well to you, what grace [*or what thank*] is to you? for sinful men do this thing.

<sup>34</sup> And if ye lend to them of which ye hope to take again, what thank [*or what grace*] is to you? for sinful men lend to sinful men, to take again as much.

<sup>35</sup> Nevertheless love ye your enemies, and do ye well, and lend ye, hoping nothing thereof, and your meed shall be much, and ye shall be the sons of the Highest, for he is benign, [*or of good will*], on unkind men and evil men.

<sup>36</sup> Therefore be ye merciful, as your Father is merciful.

<sup>37</sup> Do not ye deem, and ye shall not be deemed. Do not ye condemn, and ye shall not be condemned; forgive ye, and it shall be forgiven to you.

<sup>38</sup> Give ye, and it shall be given to you. They shall give into your bosom a good measure, and well-filled, and shaken together, and overflowing; for by the same measure, by which ye mete, it shall be meted again to you.

<sup>39</sup> And he said to them a likeness, Whether the blind may lead the blind? nor fall they not both into the ditch? [*or whether they fall not both into the ditch?*]

<sup>40</sup> A disciple is not above his master; but each shall be perfect, if he be as his master.

<sup>41</sup> And what seest thou in thy brother's eye a mote, but thou beholdest not a beam, that is in thine own eye?

<sup>42</sup> Or how mayest thou say to thy brother, Brother, suffer, I shall cast out the mote of thine eye, and thou beholdest not a beam that is in thine own eye? Hypocrite, first take out [*or cast out*] the beam of thine eye, and then thou shalt see to take out the mote of thy brother's eye.

<sup>43</sup> It is not a good tree, that maketh evil fruits, neither an evil tree, that maketh good fruits;

<sup>44</sup> for every tree is known of his fruit. And men gather not figs of thorns, neither men gather a grape of a bush of briars.

<sup>45</sup> A good man of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things, and an evil man of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things; for of the plenty of the heart the mouth speaketh.

<sup>46</sup> And what call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not those things that I say.

<sup>47</sup> Each that cometh to me, and heareth my words, and doeth them, I shall show to you, to whom he is like.

<sup>48</sup> He is like to a man that buildeth an house, that digged deep, and set [*or put*] the fundament on a stone. And when

a great flood was made, the flood was hurled to that house, and it might not move it, for it was founded on a firm stone.

<sup>49</sup> But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like to a man building his house on *[the]* earth, without fundament; into which the flood was hurled, and anon it fell down; and the falling down of that house was made great.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> And when he had fulfilled all his words into the ears of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

<sup>2</sup> But a servant of a centurion, that was precious to him, was sick, and drawing to the death.

<sup>3</sup> And when he had heard of Jesus, he sent to him the elder men of Jews, and prayed him, that he would come, and heal his servant.

<sup>4</sup> And when they came to Jesus, they prayed him busily, and said to him, For he is worthy, that thou grant to him this thing;

<sup>5</sup> for he loveth our folk, and he builded to us a synagogue.

<sup>6</sup> And Jesus went with them. And when he was not far from the house, the centurion sent to him friends, and said, Lord, do not thou be travailed, for I am not worthy, that thou enter under my roof;

<sup>7</sup> for which thing I deemed not myself worthy, that I come to thee; but say thou by word, and my child shall be healed.

<sup>8</sup> For I am a man ordained under power, and have knights under me; and I say to this, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he cometh, and to my servant, Do this thing, and he doeth *[it]*.

<sup>9</sup> And when this thing was heard, Jesus wondered; *[and he turned]*, and said to the people pursuing him, Truly I say to you, neither *[or not]* in Israel I found so great faith.

<sup>10</sup> And they that were sent, turned again home, and found the servant whole, that was sick.

<sup>11</sup> And it was done afterward, Jesus went into a city, that is called Nain, and his disciples; and *[a]* full great *[company of]* people went with him.

<sup>12</sup> And when he came nigh to the gate of the city, lo! the son of a woman that had no more children *[or an only son of his mother]*, was borne out dead; and this was a widow; and much people of the city *[was]* with her.

<sup>13</sup> And when the Lord Jesus had seen her, he had ruth *[or he moved by mercy]* on her, and said to her, Do not thou weep.

14 And he came nigh, and touched the bier; and they that bare *the bier* stood. And he said, Young man, I say to thee, rise up.

15 And he that was dead sat up again [*or sat up*], and began to speak; and he gave him to his mother.

16 And dread took all men, and they magnified God, and said, For a great prophet is risen among us, and, For God hath visited his people.

17 And this word went out of him into all Judea, and into all the country about.

18 And John's disciples told him of all these things.

19 And John called twain of his disciples, and sent *them* to Jesus, and said, Art thou he that is to come, or abide we another?

20 And when the men came to him, they said, John Baptist sent us to thee, and said, Art thou he that is to come, or we abide another?

21 And in that hour he healed many men of their sicknesses, and wounds, and [*of*] evil spirits; and he gave sight to many blind men.

22 And Jesus answered, and said to them, Go ye again, and tell ye to John those things that ye have heard and seen; blind men see, crooked men go, mesels be made clean, deaf men hear, dead men rise again, poor men be taken to preaching of the gospel.

23 And he that shall not be caused to stumble in me, is blessed.

24 And when the messengers of John were gone forth [*or had gone away*], he began to say of John to the people, What went ye out into desert to see? a reed wagged [*or waved*] with the wind?

25 But what went ye out to see? a man clothed with soft clothes? Lo! they that be in [*a*] precious cloth, and in delights, be in kings' houses.

26 But what went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say to you, and more than a prophet.

27 This is he, of whom it is written, Lo! I send mine angel before thy face, which shall make ready thy way before thee.

28 Certainly I say to you, there is no man a more prophet among the children of women, than is John Baptist, [*or among the children of women, no man is more prophet than John Baptist*]; but he that is less in the kingdom of heavens, is more than he.

29 And all the people hearing, and publicans, that had been baptized with the baptism of John, justified God;

<sup>30</sup> but the Pharisees and the wise men of the law, that were not baptized of him, despised the counsel of God against themselves.

<sup>31</sup> And the Lord said, Therefore to whom shall I say men of this gener-ation like, and to whom be they like?

<sup>32</sup> They be like to children sitting in the chapping, and speaking together, and saying, We have sung to you with pipes, and ye have not danced; we have made mourning [*or lamentation*], and ye have not wept.

<sup>33</sup> For John Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a fiend.

<sup>34</sup> Man's Son came eating and drinking, and ye say, Lo! a man a devourer [*or a glutton*], and drinking wine, a friend of publicans, and of sinful men.

<sup>35</sup> And wisdom is justified of [*all*] her sons.

<sup>36</sup> But one of the Pharisees prayed Jesus, that he should eat with him. And he entered into the house of the Pharisee, and sat at the meat.

<sup>37</sup> And lo! a sinful woman, that was in the city, as she knew, that Jesus sat at [*the*] meat in the house of the Pharisee, she brought an alabaster box of ointment;

<sup>38</sup> and she stood behind beside his feet, and began to moist his feet with tears, and wiped [*them*] with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed with ointment.

<sup>39</sup> And the Pharisee seeing, that had called him, said within himself, saying, If this were a prophet, he should know, who and what manner woman it were [*or it is*] that toucheth him, for she is a sinful woman.

<sup>40</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to him, Simon, I have something to say to thee. And he said, Master, say thou.

<sup>41</sup> And he answered, Two debtors were to one lender; and one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty;

<sup>42</sup> but when they had not whereof to yield, he forgave [*freely*] to both. Who [*of them*] then loveth him more?

<sup>43</sup> Simon answered, and said, I guess, that he to whom he forgave more. And he answered to him, Thou hast deemed rightly.

<sup>44</sup> And he turned to the woman, and said to Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest no water to my feet; but this [*woman*] hath moisted my feet with tears, and wiped with her hairs.

<sup>45</sup> Thou hast not given to me a kiss; but this [*woman*], since she entered [*or since I entered*], ceased not to kiss my feet.

<sup>46</sup> Thou anointedest not mine head with oil; but this anointed my feet with ointment.

<sup>47</sup> For which thing I say to thee, many sins be forgiven to her, for she hath loved much; and to whom is less forgiven, he loveth less.

<sup>48</sup> And Jesus said to her, Thy sins be forgiven to thee.

<sup>49</sup> And they that sat together at the meat, began to say within themselves, Who is this that [*also*] forgiveth sins.

<sup>50</sup> But he said to the woman, Thy faith hath made thee safe; go thou in peace.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> And it was done afterward, and Jesus made journey by cities and castles, preaching and evangelizing the realm of God, and twelve with him;

<sup>2</sup> and some women that were healed of wicked spirits and sicknesses, Mary, that is called Magdalene, of whom seven devils went out,

<sup>3</sup> and Joanna, the wife of Chuza, the procurator of Herod, and Susanna, and many others, that ministered to him of their riches.

<sup>4</sup> And when much people was come together, and men hied [*or hasted*] to him, from the cities, he said by a similitude, [*or a likeness, or example*],

<sup>5</sup> He that soweth, went out to sow his seed. And while he soweth, some fell beside the way, and was defouled, and birds of the air ate it.

<sup>6</sup> And other fell on a stone, and it sprang up, and dried, for it had not moisture [*or it had no moisture*].

<sup>7</sup> And other fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up together, and strangled it.

<sup>8</sup> And other fell into good earth, and it sprang up, and made an hundredfold fruit. He said these things, and cried, He that hath ears of hearing, hear he.

<sup>9</sup> But his disciples asked him, what this parable was.

<sup>10</sup> And he said to them, To you it is granted to know the private [*or the mystery*] of the kingdom of God; but to other men in parables, that they seeing see not, and they hearing understand not.

<sup>11</sup> And this is the parable. The seed is God's word;

<sup>12</sup> and they that be beside the way, be these that hear; and afterward the fiend cometh, and taketh away the word from their heart, lest they believing be made safe.

<sup>13</sup> But they that *fell* on a stone, be these that when they have heard, receive the word with joy. And these have no roots; for at a time they believe, and in time of temptation they go away.

14 But that that fell among thorns, be these that heard, and of busy-nesses, and riches, and lusts of life they go forth, and be strangled, and bring forth no fruit.

15 But that that *fell* into good earth, be these that, in a good heart, and best, hear the word, and hold, and bring forth fruit in patience.

16 No man lighteth a lantern, and covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed, but on a candlestick, that men that enter see light.

17 For there is no privy thing, which shall not be opened; neither hid thing, which shall not be known, and come into open.

18 Therefore see ye, how ye hear; for it shall be given to him that hath, and whoever hath not, also that that he weeneth [*or he guesseth*] that he have, shall be taken away from him.

19 And his mother and brethren came to him; and they might not come to him for the people.

20 And it was told to him, Thy mother and thy brethren stand withoutforth, willing to see thee.

21 And he answered, and said to them, My mother and my brethren be these, that hear the word of God, and do *it*.

22 And it was done in one of the days, he went up into a boat, and his disciples. And he said to them, Pass we over the sea. And they went up.

23 And while they rowed, he slept. And a tempest of wind came down into the water, and they were driven hither and thither with waves, and were in peril.

24 And they came nigh, and raised him, and said, Commander, we perish. And he rose up, and blamed the wind, and the tempest of the water; and it ceased, and peaceability was made.

25 And he said to them, Where is your faith? Which dreading wondered, and said together, Who, guessest thou, is this? for he commandeth to the winds and to the sea, and they obey to him.

26 And they rowed to the country of Gadarenes, that is against Galilee.

27 And when he went out to the land, a man ran to him, that had a devil [*now*] long time, and he was not clothed with cloth, neither dwelled in house, but in sepulchres.

28 This, when he saw Jesus, fell down before him, and he crying with a great voice said, What to me and to thee, Jesus, the Son of the Highest God? I beseech thee, that thou torment me not.

29 For he commanded the unclean spirit, that he should go out from the man. For he took him oft times, and he was bound with chains, and kept in stocks, and when the bonds were broken, he was led of the devil into desert.

30 And Jesus asked him, and said, What name is to thee? And he said, A legion; for many devils were [*or had*] entered into him.

31 And they prayed him, that he should not command them, that they should go into hell [*or into the deep-ness*].

32 And there was a flock of many swine [*or many hogs*] pasturing in an hill, and they prayed him, that he should suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

33 And so the devils went out from the man, and entered into the swine [*or the hogs*]; and with a rush the flock went headlong into the pool [*or into the lake of water*], and was drenched *or drowned*.

34 And when the herders saw this thing done, they fled, and told into the city, and into the towns.

35 And they went out to see that thing that was done. And they came to Jesus, and they found the man sitting clothed, from whom the devils went out, and in whole mind at his feet; and they dreaded.

36 And they that saw told to them, how he was made whole of the legion.

37 And all the multitude of the country of Gadarenes prayed him, that he should go from them, for they were held with great dread. And he went up into a boat, and turned again.

38 And the man of whom the devils were gone out [*or of whom the fiends went out*], prayed him, that he should be with him. [*Soothly*] Jesus let him go, and said,

39 Go again into thine house, and tell how great things God hath done to thee. And he went through all the city, and preached, how great things Jesus had done to him.

40 And it was done, when Jesus was gone again [*or had gone again*], the people received him; for all were abiding him.

41 And lo! a man, to whom the name was Jairus, and he was [*a*] prince of a synagogue; and he fell down at the feet of Jesus, and prayed him, that he should enter into his house,

42 for he had but one daughter [*or an only daughter*], almost of twelve years old, and she was dead. And it befell, the while he went, he was thronged of the people.

43 And a woman that had a flux of blood twelve years, and had spended all her chattel [*or all her substance*] in leeches, and might not be cured of any,

<sup>44</sup> and she came nigh behind, and touched the hem of his cloth, and anon the flux of her blood ceased.

<sup>45</sup> And Jesus said, Who is it that touched me? And when all men denied, Peter said, and they that were with him, Commander, the people thrust [*or throng*] and dis-ease thee, and thou sayest, Who touched me?

<sup>46</sup> And Jesus said, Some man hath touched me, for [*I have known*] that virtue went out of me.

<sup>47</sup> And the woman seeing, that it was not hid from him, came trembling, and fell down at his feet, and for what cause she had touched him she showed before all the people, and how anon she was healed.

<sup>48</sup> And he said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee safe; go thou in peace.

<sup>49</sup> And yet while he spake, a man came from [*or to*] the prince of the synagogue, and said to him, Thy daughter is dead, do not thou travail the Master.

<sup>50</sup> And when this word was heard, Jesus answered to the father of the damsel, Do not thou dread, but believe thou only [*or but only believe thou*], and she shall be safe.

<sup>51</sup> And when he came to the house, he suffered no man to enter with him, but Peter and John and James, and the father and the mother of the damsel.

<sup>52</sup> And all wept, and bewailed her. And he said, Do not ye weep, for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

<sup>53</sup> And they scorned him, and knew that she was dead.

<sup>54</sup> But he held her hand, and cried, and said, Damsel, rise up.

<sup>55</sup> And her spirit turned again, and she rose anon. And he commanded to give to her to eat.

<sup>56</sup> And her father and mother wondered greatly; and he commanded them, that they should not say to any [*man*] that thing that was done.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And when the twelve apostles were called together, Jesus gave to them virtue and power on all devils, and that they should heal sicknesses.

<sup>2</sup> And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal sick men.

<sup>3</sup> And he said to them, Nothing take ye in the way, neither a staff [*or a rod*], nor scrip, neither bread, nor money, and neither have ye two coats.

<sup>4</sup> And into what[*ever*] house ye enter, dwell ye there, and go ye not out from thence.



<sup>5</sup> And whoever receive not you [*or whoever shall not receive you*], go ye out of that city, and shake ye off the powder of your feet into witnessing on them.

<sup>6</sup> And they went forth, and went about by castles, preaching [*or evangelizing*] and healing everywhere.

<sup>7</sup> And Herod [*the*] tetrarch [*or prince of the fourth part*], heard all [*the*] things that were done of him, and he doubted, for that it was said of some men, that John was risen from death;

<sup>8</sup> and of some men, that Elijah had appeared; but of others, that one of the old prophets was risen.

<sup>9</sup> And Herod said, I have beheaded John; and who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he sought to see him.

<sup>10</sup> And the apostles turned again, and told to him all things that they had done. And he took them, and went beside into a desert place, that is [*called*] Bethsaida.

<sup>11</sup> And when the people knew this, they followed him. And he received them, and spake to them of the kingdom of God; and he healed them that had need of cure.

<sup>12</sup> And the day began to bow down, and the twelve came, and said to him, Leave the people, that they go, and turn into the castles and towns, that be about, that they find meat, for we be here in a desert place.

<sup>13</sup> And he said to them, Give ye to them to eat. And they said, There be not to us more than five loaves and two fishes, but peradventure that we go, and buy meats to all this people [*or for all the company*].

<sup>14</sup> And the men were almost five thousand. And he said to his disciples, Make ye them to sit to meat by companies, a fifty together.

<sup>15</sup> And they did so, and they made all men sit to [*or at the*] meat.

<sup>16</sup> And when he had taken the five loaves and two fishes, he beheld into heaven, and blessed them, and brake, and dealed to his disciples, that they should set [*or put*] forth before the companies.

<sup>17</sup> And all men ate, and were full-filled [*or were filled*]; and that that left to them of broken meats was taken up, twelve coffins.

<sup>18</sup> And it was done, when he was alone praying, his disciples were with him, and he asked them, and said, Whom say the people that I am?

<sup>19</sup> And they answered, and said, John Baptist, others say Elijah, and [*or but*] others say, one prophet of the former is risen.

20 And he said to them, But whom say ye that I am? Simon Peter answered, and said, The Christ of God.

21 And he blaming them, commanded [*them*] that they should say to no man,

22 and said these things, For it behooveth man's Son to suffer many things, and to be reprov'd of the elder men, and of the princes of priests, and of the scribes, and to be slain, and the third day to rise again.

23 And he said to all [*men*], If any [*man*] will come after me, deny he himself, and take he his cross every day, and pursue he me.

24 For he that will make his life safe shall lose it; and he that loseth his life for me, shall make it safe.

25 And what profiteth [*it to*] a man, if he win all the world, and lose himself, and do impairing of himself [*or to himself*].

26 For whoso shameth me and my words, man's Son shall shame him, when he cometh in his majesty, and of the Father's, and of the holy angels.

27 And I say to you, verily there be some standing here, which shall not taste death, till they see the realm of God.

28 And it was done after these words almost eight days, and he took Peter and James and John, and he ascended into an hill, to pray.

29 And while he prayed, the like-ness of his face was changed, and his clothing was white shining.

30 And lo! two men spake with him, and Moses and Elijah

31 were seen in majesty; and they said his going out, which he should fulfill in Jerusalem.

32 And Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy of sleep, [*or were grieved, or heavied, with sleep*], and they waking saw his majesty, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it was done, when they departed from him, Peter said to Jesus, Commander, it is good that we be here, and make we here three tabernacles, one to thee, and one to Moses, and one to Elijah. And he knew not what he should say.

34 But while he spake these things, a cloud was made, and overshadowed them; and they dreaded, when they entered into the cloud.

35 And a voice was made out of the cloud, and said, This is my dear-worthy Son, hear ye him.

36 And while the voice was made, Jesus was found alone. And they were still, and to no man said in those days any of those things, that they had seen, [*for they held peace, and*

*said to no man in those days aught of those things that they had seen].*

<sup>37</sup> But it was done in the day pursuing, when they came down of the hill, much people met them.

<sup>38</sup> And lo! a man of the company cried, and said, Master, I beseech thee, behold my son, for I have no more;

<sup>39</sup> and lo! a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and hurtleth *[him]* down, and draweth him with foam *[or with froth]*, and scarcely he goeth away drawing him all to pieces.

<sup>40</sup> And I prayed thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they might not.

<sup>41</sup> And Jesus answered and said to them, A! unfaithful generation and wayward, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? bring hither thy son.

<sup>42</sup> And when he came nigh, the devil hurtled him down, and wrenched him. And Jesus blamed the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and yielded him to his father.

<sup>43</sup> And all men wondered greatly in the greatness of God. And when all men wondered in all things that he did, he said to his disciples,

<sup>44</sup> Put ye these words in your hearts, for it is to come, that man's Son be betrayed into the hands of men.

<sup>45</sup> And they knew not this word, and it was hid before them, that they feeled it not; and they dreaded to ask him of this word.

<sup>46</sup> But a thought entered into them, who of them should be greatest.

<sup>47</sup> And Jesus, seeing the thoughts of the heart of them, took a child, and setted him beside him;

<sup>48</sup> and said to them, Whoever receiveth this child in my name, receiveth me; and whoever receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me; for he that is least among you all, is the greatest.

<sup>49</sup> And John answered and said, Commander, we saw a man casting out fiends in thy name, and we have forbidden him, for he pursueth not thee with us.

<sup>50</sup> And Jesus said to him, Do not ye forbid, for he that is not against us, is for us.

<sup>51</sup> And it was done, when the days of his taking up were fulfilled, he set fast his face, to go to Jerusalem,

<sup>52</sup> and sent messengers before his sight. And they went, and entered into a city of Samaritans, to make ready to him.

<sup>53</sup> And they received not him, for the face of him was going into Jerusalem.

<sup>54</sup> And when James and John, his disciples, saw, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we say, that fire come down from heaven, and waste them, [*as Elijah did*]?

<sup>55</sup> And he turned, and blamed them, and said, Ye know not, whose spirits ye be;

<sup>56</sup> for man's Son came not to lose men's souls, but to save [*them*]. And they went into another castle.

<sup>57</sup> And it was done, when they walked in the way, a man said to him, I shall pursue thee, whither ever thou [*shalt*] go.

<sup>58</sup> And Jesus said to him, Foxes have dens [*or ditches*], and birds of the air *have* nests, but man's Son hath not where he [*shall*] rest his head.

<sup>59</sup> And he said to another, Pursue thou me. And he said, Lord, suffer me first to go, and bury my father.

<sup>60</sup> And Jesus said to him, Suffer that dead men bury their dead men; but go thou, and tell the kingdom of God.

<sup>61</sup> And another said, Lord, I shall pursue thee, but first suffer me to leave all things [*or to tell to them*] that be at home.

<sup>62</sup> And Jesus said to him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and beholding backward, is able to the kingdom of God.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> And after these things the Lord Jesus ordained also other seventy and twain, and sent them by twain and twain before his face into every city and place, whither he was to come.

<sup>2</sup> And he said to them, There *is* much ripe corn, and few workmen; therefore pray ye the Lord of the ripe corn, that he send workmen into his ripe corn.

<sup>3</sup> Go ye, lo! I send you as lambs among wolves.

<sup>4</sup> *Therefore* do not ye bear a satchel, neither scrip, neither shoes, and greet ye no man by the way.

<sup>5</sup> Into what[*ever*] house that ye enter, first say ye, Peace to this house.

<sup>6</sup> And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest on him; but if none, it shall turn again to you.

<sup>7</sup> And dwell ye in the same house, eating and drinking those things that be at them; for a workman is worthy his hire. Do not ye pass from house into house.

<sup>8</sup> And into whatever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat ye those things that be set [*or be put*] to you;

<sup>9</sup> and heal ye the sick men that be in that city. And say ye to them, The kingdom of God shall [*come*] nigh to you.

<sup>10</sup> And into what<sup>[ever]</sup> city ye enter, and they receive you not, go ye out into the streets of it, and say ye,

<sup>11</sup> We wipe off against you the powder that cleaved to us of your city; nevertheless know ye this thing, that the realm of God shall come nigh.

<sup>12</sup> I say to you, that to Sodom it shall be easier <sup>[or less pain]</sup> than to that city in that day.

<sup>13</sup> Woe to thee, Chorazin; woe to thee, Bethsaida; for if in Tyre and Sidon the virtues had been done, which have been done in you, some-time they would have sat in haircloth and ashes, and have done penance.

<sup>14</sup> Nevertheless to Tyre and Sidon it shall be easier in the doom, than to you.

<sup>15</sup> And thou, Capernaum, art enhanced till to heaven; thou shalt be drenched <sup>or drowned</sup><sup>[down]</sup> till into hell.

<sup>16</sup> He that heareth you, heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

<sup>17</sup> And the two and seventy <sup>disciples</sup> turned again with joy, and said, Lord, also devils be subject to us in thy name.

<sup>18</sup> And he said to them, I saw Satan falling down from heaven, as lightning.

<sup>19</sup> And lo! I have given to you power to tread on serpents, and scorpions, and on all the virtue of the enemy, and nothing shall annoy you.

<sup>20</sup> Nevertheless do not ye <sup>[have]</sup> joy in this thing, that spirits be subject to you; but joy ye, that your names be written in heavens.

<sup>21</sup> In that hour he gladdened in the Holy Ghost, and said, I acknowledge to thee, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, for thou hast hid these things from wise men and prudent, and hast showed them to small <sup>[or little]</sup> children. Yea, Father, for so it pleased before thee <sup>[or so it pleased to thee]</sup>.

<sup>22</sup> All things be given to me of my Father, and no man knoweth who is the Son, but the Father; and who is the Father, but the Son, and to whom the Son will show.

<sup>23</sup> And he turned to his disciples, and said, Blessed <sup>be</sup> the eyes, that see those things that ye see.

<sup>24</sup> For I say to you, that many prophets and kings would have seen those things, that ye see, and they saw not; and hear those things, that ye hear, and they heard not.

<sup>25</sup> And lo! a wise man of the law rose up, tempting him, and saying, Master, what thing shall I do to have everlasting life?

<sup>26</sup> And he said to him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 He answered, and said, Thou shalt love thy Lord God [*or the Lord thy God*] of all thine heart, and of all thy soul, and of all thy strengths, and of all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself.

28 And Jesus said to him, Thou hast answered rightly; do this thing, and thou shalt live.

29 But he willing to justify himself, said to Jesus, And who is my neigh-bour?

30 And Jesus beheld, and said, A man [*or Some man*] came down from Jerusalem into Jericho, and fell among thieves, and they robbed him, and wounded him, and went away, and left the man half alive.

31 And it befell, that a priest came down the same way, and passed forth, when he had seen him.

32 Also a deacon, when he was beside the place, and saw him, passed forth.

33 But a Samaritan, going the way, came beside him; and he saw him, and had ruth on him; [*Forsooth some Samaritan, making journey, came beside the way; and he seeing him, was stirred by mercy;*]

34 and came to him, and bound together his wounds, and poured in oil and wine; and laid him on his beast, and led him in to an hostelry, and did the care of him.

35 And another day, he brought forth two pence, and gave to the hosteller; and said, Have the care of him; and whatever thou shalt give over, I shall yield to thee, when I come again.

36 Who of these three, seemeth to thee, was neighbour to him, that fell among [*the*] thieves?

37 And he said, He that did mercy into him. And Jesus said to him, Go thou, and do thou in like manner.

38 And it was done, while they went, he entered into a castle; and a woman, Martha by name, received him into her house.

39 And to this was a sister, Mary by name, which also sat beside the feet of the Lord, and heard his word.

40 But Martha busied about the oft [*or much*] service. And she stood, and said, Lord, takest thou no keep, that my sister hath left me alone to serve? therefore say thou to her, that she help me.

41 And the Lord answered, and said to her, Martha, Martha, thou art busy, and art troubled about full many things;

42 but one thing is necessary. Mary hath chosen the best part, which shall not be taken away from her.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when he was praying in a place, as he ceased, one of his disciples said to him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John taught his disciples.

<sup>2</sup> And he said to them, When ye pray, say ye, Father [*or Father ours*], hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come to; thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven.

<sup>3</sup> Give to us today our each day's bread.

<sup>4</sup> And forgive to us our sins, as we forgive to each man that oweth to us. And lead us not into temptation.

<sup>5</sup> And he said to them, Who of you shall have a friend, and shall go to him at midnight, and shall say to him, Friend, lend to me three loaves;

<sup>6</sup> for my friend cometh to me from the way, and I have not what I shall set [*or shall put*] before him.

<sup>7</sup> And he withinforth answer and say, Do not thou be heavy to me; the door is now shut, and my children be with me in bed; I may not rise, and give to thee.

<sup>8</sup> And if he shall dwell still knocking [*or if he shall continue knocking*], I say to you, though he shall not rise, and give to him, for that that he is his friend, nevertheless for his continual asking, he shall rise, and give to him, as many as he hath need to.

<sup>9</sup> And I say to you, ask ye, and it shall be given to you; seek ye, and ye shall find; knock ye, and it shall be opened to you.

<sup>10</sup> For each that asketh, taketh, and he that seeketh, findeth; and to a man that knocketh, it shall be opened.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore who of you asketh his father bread, whether he shall give [*to*] him a stone? or if he asketh fish, whether he shall give [*to*] him a serpent for the fish?

<sup>12</sup> or if he asketh an egg, whether he shall areach [*to*] him a scorpion?

<sup>13</sup> Therefore if ye, when ye be evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more your Father of heaven shall give a good Spirit to men that ask him.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus was casting out a fiend, and it was dumb. And when he had cast out the fiend, the dumb man spake; and the people wondered.

<sup>15</sup> And some of them said, In Beelzebub, prince of devils, he casteth out devils.

<sup>16</sup> And others tempting asked of him a token from heaven.

<sup>17</sup> And as he saw the thoughts of them, he said to them, Every realm parted against itself shall be desolate, and an house shall fall on an house.

18 And if Satan be parted against himself, how shall his realm stand? For ye say, that I cast out fiends in Beelzebub.

19 And if I in Beelzebub cast out fiends, in whom cast out your sons? [*or in whom your sons cast out?*] Therefore they shall be your doomsmen.

20 But if I cast out fiends in the finger of God, then the realm of God is come among you.

21 When a strong, armed man keepeth his house, all things that he wieldeth be in peace.

22 But if a stronger than he come upon him, and overcome him, he shall take away all his arms in which he trusted, and shall deal abroad his robberies [*or his spoils*].

23 He that is not with me, is against me; and he that gathereth not together with me, scattereth abroad.

24 When an unclean spirit goeth out of a man, he wandereth by dry places, and seeketh rest; and he finding none, saith, I shall turn again into mine house, from whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it cleansed with besoms, and fair arrayed [*or adorned*].

26 Then he goeth, and taketh with him, seven other spirits worse than himself, and they enter, and dwell there. And the last things of that man be made worse than the former.

27 And it was done, when he had said these things, a woman of the company raised [*up*] her voice, and said to him, Blessed *be* the womb that bare thee, and *blessed be* the teats that thou hast sucked.

28 And he said, But yea [*or Rather*], blessed *be* they, that hear the word of God, and keep it.

29 And when the people ran together, he began to say, This generation is a wayward generation; it seeketh a token, and a token shall not be given to it, but the token of Jonah the prophet.

30 For as Jonah was a token to men of Nineveh, so man's Son shall be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise in doom with men of this generation, and shall condemn them; for she came from the ends of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and lo! here is a greater than Solomon.

32 Men of Nineveh shall rise in [*the*] doom with this generation, and shall condemn it; for they did penance in [*or at*] the preaching of Jonah, and lo! here is a greater than Jonah.

33 No man tendeth [*or lighteneth*] a lantern, and putteth it in huddles, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they that go in, see light.



34 The lantern of thy body is thine eye; if thine eye be simple, all thy body shall be light-[*full*]; but if it be wayward, all thy body shall be dark-full.

35 Therefore see thou, lest the light that is in thee, be darkneses.

36 Therefore if all thy body be bright [*or light-full*], and have no part of darkneses, it shall be all bright [*or light-full*], and as a lantern of bright-ness, [*or shining*], it shall give light to thee.

37 And when he spake, a Pharisee prayed him, that he should eat with him. And he entered, and sat to [*or at the*] meat.

38 And the Pharisee began to say, guessing within himself, why he was not washed before [*the*] meat.

39 And the Lord said to him, Now ye Pharisees cleanse that that is with-outforth of the cup and the platter; but that thing that is within of you [*or that thing of you that is within*], is full of raven and wickedness.

40 Fools, whether he that made that that is withoutforth, made not also that that is within?

41 Nevertheless that that is over-plus, [*or superfluous*], give ye alms, and lo! all things be clean to you.

42 But woe to you, Pharisees, that tithe mint, and rue, and each herb, and leave doom and the charity of God. For it behooved to do these things, and not to leave those.

43 Woe to you, Pharisees, that love the first chairs in synagogues, and salutations in chapping.

44 Woe to you, that be as sepulchres, that be not seen [*or which appear not*], and men walking above know not.

45 But one of the wise men of the law answered, and said to him, Master, thou saying these things, also to us doest despite [*or doest despite also to us*].

46 And he said, Also woe to you, wise men of [*the*] law, for ye charge men with burdens which they may not bear, and ye yourselves with your one finger touch not the heavinesses.

47 Woe to you, that build tombs [*or the burials*] of prophets; and your fathers slew them.

48 Truly ye witness, that ye consent to the works of your fathers; for they slew them, but ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore the wisdom of God said, I shall send to them prophets and apostles, and of them they shall slay and persecute [*or pursue*],

50 that the blood of all [*the*] prophets, that was shed from the making [*or the beginning*] of the world, be sought of this generation;

<sup>51</sup> from the blood of just Abel to the blood of Zechariah, that was slain betwixt [*or which perished between*] the altar and the House. So I say to you, it shall be sought of this generation.

<sup>52</sup> Woe to you, wise men of the law, for ye have taken away the key of knowing; and ye yourselves entered not [*in*], and ye have forbidden them that entered.

<sup>53</sup> And when he said these things to them, the Pharisees and the wise men of the law began grievously to against-stand [*him*], and stop his mouth of many things,

<sup>54</sup> ambushing him, and seeking to take something of his mouth, to accuse him.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> And when much people stood about, so that they trod each on other [*or so that they trod each other*], he began to say to his disciples, Be ye ware of the sourdough of the Pharisees, that is hypocrisy.

<sup>2</sup> For nothing is covered, that shall not be showed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

<sup>3</sup> For why those things that ye have said in darkneses, shall be said in light; and that that ye have spoken in [*the*] ear in bedchambers, shall be preached in roofs.

<sup>4</sup> And I say to you, my friends, be ye not afeared of them that slay the body, and after these things have no more what they shall do.

<sup>5</sup> But I shall show to you, whom ye shall dread; dread ye him, that after he hath slain, hath power to send into hell. And so I say to you, dread ye him.

<sup>6</sup> Whether five sparrows be not sold for two halfpence [*or two farthings*]; and one of them is not in forgetting before God?

<sup>7</sup> But also all the hairs of your head be numbered. Therefore do not ye dread; ye be of more price, than many sparrows.

<sup>8</sup> Truly I say to you, each man that acknowledgeth me before men, man's Son shall acknowledge him before the angels of God.

<sup>9</sup> But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

<sup>10</sup> And each that saith a word against man's Son [*or against the Son of man*], it shall be forgiven to him; but it shall not be forgiven to him, that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost.

11 And when they lead you into synagogues, and to magistrates, and potentates, do not ye be busy, how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say.

12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in that hour, what it behooveth you to say.

13 And one of the people said to him, Master, say to my brother, that he part with me the heritage.

14 And he said to him, Man, who ordained me a doomsman, or a parter, on you? [*or over you?*]

15 And he said to them, See ye, and beware of all covetousness; for the life of a man is not in the abundance of the things, which he wieldeth.

16 And he told to them a likeness, and said, The field of a rich man brought forth plenteous fruits.

17 And he thought within himself, and said, What shall I do, for I have not whither I shall gather my fruits?

18 And he saith, This thing I shall do; I shall throw down my barns, and I shall make greater, and thither I shall gather all things that grow to me, and my goods.

19 And I shall say to my soul, Soul, thou hast many goods kept into full many years; rest thou, eat, drink, and make feast.

20 And God said to him, Fool, in this night they shall take thy life from thee [*or they shall ask of thee thy soul*]. And whose shall those things be, that thou hast arrayed?

21 So is he that treasureth to himself, and is not rich in God.

22 And he said to his disciples, Therefore I say to you, do not ye be busy to your life, what ye shall eat, neither to your body, with what ye shall be clothed.

23 The life is more than meat, and the body more than clothing.

24 Behold the crows, for they sow not, neither reap, to which is neither cellar, nor barn, and God feedeth them. How much more ye be [*or be ye*] of more price than they.

25 And who of you by thinking may put [*or add*] one cubit to his stature?

26 Therefore if ye may not do that that is least, what be ye busy of other things?

27 Behold ye the lilies of the field, how they wax; they travail not, neither spin. And I say to you, that neither Solomon in all his glory was clothed as one of these.

28 And if God clotheth thus the hay, that today is in the field, and tomorrow is cast into an oven; how much more you of little faith.

29 And do not ye seek, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; and do not ye be raised on high.

30 For folks of the world seek all these things; and your Father knoweth, that ye have need to all these things.

31 Nevertheless seek ye first the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be cast to you.

32 Do not ye, little flock, dread, for it pleased to your Father to give you a kingdom.

33 Sell ye those things that ye have in possession [*for that ye wield*], and give ye alms. And make to you satchels that wax not old, treasure that faileth not in heavens, whither a thief might not, neither moth destroyeth.

34 For where is thy treasure, there thine heart shall be. [*Forsooth where thy treasure is, there also thine heart shall be.*]

35 Be your loins girded above, and lanterns burning in your hands;

36 and *be* ye like to men that abide their lord, when he shall turn again from the weddings, that when he shall come, and knock, anon they open to him.

37 Blessed *be* those servants, that when the lord shall come, he shall find waking. Truly I say to you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit to [*for at the*] meat, and he shall go, and serve them.

38 And if he come in the second waking, and if he come in the third waking, and find so, those servants be blessed.

39 And know ye this thing, for if an husbandman knew, in what hour the thief would come, soothly he should wake, and not suffer his house to be *under-mined*.

40 And be ye ready, for in what hour ye guess not, man's Son shall come.

41 And Peter said to him, Lord, sayest thou this parable to us, or to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who, guessest thou, is a true [*for a faithful*] dispenser, and prudent, whom the lord hath ordained on his meane, to give them in time a measure of wheat?

43 Blessed is that servant, that the lord when he cometh, shall find so doing.

44 Verily I say to you, that on all things that he wieldeth, he shall ordain him.

45 That if that servant say in his heart, My lord tarrieth to come; and begin to smite children, and hand-maidens, and eat, and drink, and be filled [*for full-filled*] over-measure,

<sup>46</sup> the lord of that servant shall come, in the day that he hopeth not, and in the hour that he knoweth not, and shall part him, and put his part with unfaithful men.

<sup>47</sup> But that servant that knew the will of his lord, and made not him ready, and did not after his will, shall be beaten with many *beatings*.

<sup>48</sup> But he that knew not, and did worthy things of strokes, shall be beaten with few. For to each man to whom much is given, much shall be asked of him; and they shall ask more of him, to whom they betook much.

<sup>49</sup> I came to send fire into the earth, and what will I, but that it be kindled?

<sup>50</sup> And I have to be baptized with a baptism, and how am I constrained, till that it be perfectly done?

<sup>51</sup> Ween ye, [*or Guess ye*], that I came to give peace into [*the*] earth? Nay, I say to you, but parting.

<sup>52</sup> For from this time there shall be five parted in one house; three shall be parted against twain, and twain shall be parted against three;

<sup>53</sup> the father against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the husband's mother against the son's wife, and the son's wife against her husband's mother.

<sup>54</sup> And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rising from the sun going down, anon ye say, Rain cometh; and so it is done.

<sup>55</sup> And when ye see the south blowing, ye say, That heat shall be; and it is done.

<sup>56</sup> Hypocrites, ye know how to prove the face of heaven and of earth, but how prove ye not this time[?].

<sup>57</sup> But what and of yourselves ye deem not that that is just? [*Forsooth why and of yourselves deem ye not this thing that is just?*]

<sup>58</sup> But when thou goest with thine adversary in the way to the prince [*or to the prince in the way*], do busyness to be delivered from him; lest peradventure he take thee to the doomsman, and the doomsman betake thee to the masterful asker, and the masterful asker send thee into prison.

<sup>59</sup> I say to thee, thou shalt not go out from thence, till thou yield the last farthing.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> And some men were present in that time, that told to him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate mingled with the sacrifices of them.

<sup>2</sup> And he answered, and said to them, Ween ye that these men of Galilee were sinners more than all Galileans, for they suffered such things?

<sup>3</sup> I say to you, nay; all ye shall perish in like manner, but ye have penance.

<sup>4</sup> And as those eighteen, on which the tower in Siloam fell down, and slew them, guess ye, that they were debtors more than all men that dwell in Jerusalem?

<sup>5</sup> I say to you, nay; but also all ye shall perish, if ye do not penance.

<sup>6</sup> And he said this likeness, A man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit in it, and found none.

<sup>7</sup> And he said to the tiller of the vineyard, Lo! three years be, since I come seeking fruit in this fig tree, and I find none; therefore cut it down, whereto occupieth it the earth?

<sup>8</sup> And he answering said to him, Lord, suffer it also this year, the while I delve about it, and I shall dung it [*for and dung it*];

<sup>9</sup> if it shall make fruit, [*else*] if not, in time coming thou shalt cut it down.

<sup>10</sup> And he was teaching in their synagogue in the sabbaths.

<sup>11</sup> And lo! a woman, that had a spirit of sickness eighteen years, and was crooked [*for bowed down*], and neither in any manner might look upward.

<sup>12</sup> Whom when Jesus had seen, he called [*her*] to him, and said to her, Woman, thou art delivered of thy sickness.

<sup>13</sup> And he set [*for put*] on her his hands, and anon she stood upright, and glorified God.

<sup>14</sup> And the prince of the synagogue answered, having disdain for Jesus had healed in the sabbath; and he said to the people, There be six days, in which it behooveth to work; therefore come ye in these, and be ye healed, and not in the day of sabbath.

<sup>15</sup> But the Lord answered to him, and said, Hypocrite, whether each of you untieth not in the sabbath his ox, or ass, from the cratch, [*for the stall*], and leadeth to water?

<sup>16</sup> Behooved it not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo! eighteen years, to be unbound of this bond in the day of sabbath?

<sup>17</sup> And when he said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed, and all the people joyed in all things, that were gloriously done of him.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore he said, To what thing is the kingdom of God like? and to what thing shall I guess it to be like?

<sup>19</sup> It is like to a corn of sinapi, which a man took, and cast into his garden [*or into his yard*]; and it waxed, and was made into a great tree, and fowls of the air rested in the branches thereof.

<sup>20</sup> And again he said, To what thing shall I guess the kingdom of God like?

<sup>21</sup> It is like to sourdough that a woman took, and hid it in three measures of meal, till all were soured.

<sup>22</sup> And he went by cities and castles, teaching and making journey into Jerusalem.

<sup>23</sup> And a man said to him, Lord, if there be few, that be saved? And he said to them,

<sup>24</sup> Strive ye to enter by the strait gate; for I say to you, many seek to enter [*in*], and they shall not be able.

<sup>25</sup> For when the husbandman is entered, and the door is closed, ye shall begin to stand withoutforth, and knock at the door, and say, Lord, open to us. And he shall answer, and say to you, I know you not, of whence ye be.

<sup>26</sup> Then ye shall begin to say, We have eaten before thee and drunk, and in our streets thou hast taught.

<sup>27</sup> And he shall say to you, I know you not, of whence ye be; go away from me, all ye workers of wickedness.

<sup>28</sup> There shall be weeping and grinding of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God; and you to be put out.

<sup>29</sup> And they shall come from the east and the west, and from the north and the south, and shall sit at the meat in the realm of God.

<sup>30</sup> And lo! they that were the first, be the last; and they that were the last, be the first.

<sup>31</sup> In that day some of the Pharisees came nigh, and said to him, Go out, and go from hence, for Herod will slay thee.

<sup>32</sup> And he said to them, Go ye, and say to that fox, Lo! I cast out fiends, and I make perfectly healings, today and tomorrow, and the third day I am ended.

<sup>33</sup> Nevertheless it behooveth me today, and tomorrow, and the day that pursueth, to walk; for it falleth not [*for*] a prophet to perish out of Jerusalem.

<sup>34</sup> Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that slayest prophets, and stonest them that be sent to thee, how oft would I gather together thy sons, as a bird *gathereth* his nest under feathers [*or under wings*], and thou wouldest not.

<sup>35</sup> Lo! your house shall be left to you desert. And I say to you, that ye shall not see me, till it come, when ye shall say, Blessed is he, that cometh in the name of the Lord.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> And it was done, when he had entered into the house of a prince of Pharisees, in the sabbath, to eat bread, they espied him.

<sup>2</sup> And lo! a man sick in the dropsy was before him.

<sup>3</sup> And Jesus answering spake to the wise men of [*the*] law, and to the Pharisees, and said, Whether it is leaveful to heal in the sabbath?

<sup>4</sup> And they held peace. And Jesus took, and healed him, and let *him* go.

<sup>5</sup> And he answered to them, and said, Whose ass or ox of you shall fall into a pit, and he shall not anon draw him out in the day of sabbath?

<sup>6</sup> And they might not answer to him to these things.

<sup>7</sup> He said also a parable of men bidden to a feast, and he beheld how they chose the first sitting places, and said to them,

<sup>8</sup> When thou art bidden to bridals [*or When thou shalt be bidden to weddings*], sit not at the meat in the first place; lest peradventure a worthier than thou be bidden of him,

<sup>9</sup> and lest he come that called thee and him, and say to thee, Give place to this, and then thou shalt begin with shame to hold the lowest place.

<sup>10</sup> But when thou art bidden to a feast, go, and sit down in the last place, that when he cometh, that bade thee to the feast, he say to thee, Friend, come [*up*] higher. Then worship shall be to thee, before men that sit [*together*] at the meat.

<sup>11</sup> For each that enhanceth himself, shall be lowed [*or be made low*]; and he that meeketh himself, shall be highed.

<sup>12</sup> And he said to him, that had bidden him to the feast, When thou makest a meat, or a supper, do not thou call thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy cousins, neither neighbours, nor rich men; lest peradventure they bid thee again to the feast, and it be yielded again to thee.

<sup>13</sup> But when thou makest a feast, call poor men, feeble [*men*], crooked, and blind,

<sup>14</sup> and thou shalt be blessed; for they have not whereof to yield [*again*] to thee, for it shall be yielded to thee in the rising again of just men.

<sup>15</sup> And when one of them that sat together at the meat, had heard these things, he said to him, Blessed is he, that shall eat bread in the realm of God.

<sup>16</sup> And he said to him, A man made a great supper, and called many.



17 And he sent his servant in the hour of supper, to say to men that were bidden to the feast, that they should come, for now all things be ready.

18 And all began together to excuse them. The first said [*to him*], I have bought a town, and I have need to go out, and see it; I pray thee, have me excused.

19 And the tother said, I have bought five yokes of oxen, and I go to prove them; I pray thee, have me excused.

20 And another said, I have wedded a wife; and therefore I may not come.

21 And the servant turned again, and told these things to his lord. Then the husbandman was wroth, and said to his servant, Go out swiftly into the great streets and the small streets of the city, and bring in hither poor men, and feeble, [*and*] blind men, and crooked.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done, as thou hast commanded, and yet there is a *void* place.

23 And the lord said to the servant, Go out into ways and hedges, and constrain *men* to enter, that mine house be full-filled.

24 For I say to you, that none of those men that be called, shall taste my supper.

25 And much people went with him; and he turned, and said to them,

26 If any man cometh to me, and hateth not his father, and mother, and wife, and sons, and brethren, and sisters or sistren, and yet his own life, he may not be my disciple.

27 And he that beareth not his cross, and cometh after me, may not be my disciple.

28 For who of you willing to build a tower, whether he sit not first or he first sitteth not, and counteth the expenses that be needful, if he have to perform?

29 Lest after that he hath set the fundament, and may not perform, all that see, begin to scorn him,

30 and say, For this man began to build, and might not make an end.

31 Or what king that will go to do a battle against another king, whether he sitteth not first, and bethinketh, if he may with ten thousand go to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Else yet while he is afar, he send-eth a messenger, and prayeth those things that be of peace.

33 So therefore each of you, that forsaketh not [*or renounceth not*] all things that he hath, may not be my disciple.

<sup>34</sup> Salt is good; but if salt vanish, in what thing shall it be savoured?

<sup>35</sup> Neither in earth, nor in *[the]* dunghill it is profitable, but it shall be cast out. He that hath ears of hearing, hear he.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> And publicans and sinful men were nighing to him, to hear him.

<sup>2</sup> And the Pharisees and scribes grutched, saying, For this *[man]* receiv-eth sinful men, and eateth with them.

<sup>3</sup> And he spake to them this parable, and said,

<sup>4</sup> What man of you that hath an hundred sheep, and if he hath lost one of them, whether he leaveth not ninety and nine in desert, and goeth to it that perished, till he find it?

<sup>5</sup> And when he hath found it, he joyeth, and layeth *[or putteth]* it on his shoulders;

<sup>6</sup> and he cometh home, and calleth together his friends and neighbours, and saith to them, Be ye glad with me, for I have found my sheep, that had perished *[or I had lost]*.

<sup>7</sup> And I say to you, so joy shall be in heaven on one sinful man doing penance, more than on ninety and nine just, that have no need to *[or of]* penance.

<sup>8</sup> Or what woman having ten bezants *[or ten drachmas]*, and if she hath lost one bezant *[or one drachma]*, whether she tendeth not *[or lighteth not]* a lantern, and turneth upside-down the house, and seeketh diligently, till she find it?

<sup>9</sup> And when she hath found, she calleth together friends and neighbours, and saith, Be ye glad with me, for I have found the bezant *[or the drachma]* that I had lost.

<sup>10</sup> So I say to you, joy shall be before the angels of God on one sinful man doing penance.

<sup>11</sup> And he said, A man had two sons;

<sup>12</sup> and the younger of them said to the father *[or to his father]*, Father, give me the portion of chattel *[or substance]* that falleth to me. And he parted to them the chattel *[or the substance]*.

<sup>13</sup> And not after many days, when all things were gathered together, the younger son went forth in pilgrimage into a far country; and there he wasted his goods *[or his substance]* in living lecherously.

<sup>14</sup> And after that he had ended all things, a strong hunger was made in that country, and he began to have need.

<sup>15</sup> And he went, and drew him to one of the citizens of that country. And he sent him into his town, to feed swine *[or hogs]*.

16 And he coveted to fill his womb of the pods that the hogs ate, and no man gave to him.

17 And he turned again to himself, and said, How many hired men in my father's house have plenty of loaves; and I perish here through hunger.

18 I shall rise up, and go to my father, and I shall say to him, Father, I have sinned into [*or against*] heaven, and before thee;

19 and now I am not worthy to be called thy son, make me as one of thine hired men.

20 And he rose up, and came to his father. And when he was yet afar, his father saw him, and was stirred by mercy. And he ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21 And the son said to him, Father, I have sinned into [*or against*] heaven, and before thee; and now I am not worthy to be called thy son.

22 And the father said to his servants, Swiftly bring ye forth the first stole, and clothe ye him, and give ye a ring in his hand, and shoes on his feet;

23 and bring ye a fat calf [*or a calf made fat*], and slay ye, and eat we, and make we feast.

24 For this my son was dead, and hath lived again; he perished, and is found. And all men began to eat [*gladly*].

25 But his elder son was in the field; and when he came, and nighed to the house, he heard a symphony and a crowd.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked, what these things were.

27 And he said to him, Thy brother is come, and thy father slew a fat [*or a fattened*] calf, for he received him safe.

28 And he was wroth, and would not come in. Therefore his father went out, and began to pray him.

29 And he answered to his father, and said, Lo! so many years I serve thee, and I never brake thy commandment; and thou never gave to me a kid, that I with my friends should have eaten.

30 But after that this thy son, that hath devoured his substance with whores, came, thou hast slain to him a fat [*or a fattened*] calf.

31 And he said to him, Son, thou art evermore with me, and all my things be thine.

32 But it behooved to make feast, and to have joy; for this thy brother was dead, and lived again [*or liveth again*]; he perished, and is found.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> He said also to his disciples, There was a rich man, that had a bailiff [*or a farmer*]; and this was denounced to him, as he had wasted his goods.

<sup>2</sup> And he called him, and said to him, What hear I this thing of thee? yield reckoning of thy bailiffship, for thou might not now be bailiff, [*yield reason of thy farm, or for now thou shalt no more hold the farm*].

<sup>3</sup> And the bailiff said within himself, What shall I do, for my lord taketh away from me the bailiffship? delve may I not, I shame to beg. [*Forsooth the farmer said within himself, What shall I do, for my lord taketh away from me the farm? I may not delve, I am ashamed to beg?*]

<sup>4</sup> I know what I shall do, that when I am removed from the bailiffship [*or from the farm*], they receive me into their houses.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore when all the debtors of his lord were called together, he said to the first, How much owest thou to my lord?

<sup>6</sup> And he said, An hundred barrows of oil. And he said to him, Take thy caution [*or thine obligation*], and sit soon, and write fifty.

<sup>7</sup> Afterward he said to another, And how much owest thou? Which answered, An hundred cors [*or measures*] of wheat. And he said to him, Take thy letters, and write fourscore.

<sup>8</sup> And the lord praised the bailiff [*or the farmer*] of wickedness, for he had done prudently; for the sons of this world be more prudent in their generation, than the sons of light.

<sup>9</sup> And I say to you, make ye to you friends of the riches of wickedness, that when ye shall fail, they receive you into everlasting tabernacles.

<sup>10</sup> He that is true [*or faithful*] in the least thing, is true [*or faithful*] also in the more; and he that is wicked in a little thing, is wicked also in the more.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore if ye were not true in the wicked thing of riches [*or in the wicked riches*], who shall betake to you that that is very? [*or that is sooth?*]

<sup>12</sup> And if ye were not true in other men's thing, who shall give to you that that is yours?

<sup>13</sup> No servant may serve to two lords; for either he shall hate the one, and love the other; either he shall draw [*or cleave*] to the one, and despise the other. Ye may not serve to God and to riches.

<sup>14</sup> But the Pharisees, that were covetous, heard all these things, and they scorned him.

<sup>15</sup> And he said to them, Ye it be, that justify you before men; but God hath known your hearts [*or God knoweth your hearts*], for that that is high to men, is abomination before God.

<sup>16</sup> The law and the prophets till to John; from that time the realm of God is evangelized [*or is preached*], and each man doeth violence into it.

<sup>17</sup> Forsooth it is lighter heaven and earth to pass, than that one tittle fall from the law.

<sup>18</sup> Every man that forsaketh his wife, and weddeth another, doeth lechery [*or adultery*]; and he that weddeth the *wife* forsaken of the husband, doeth adultery.

<sup>19</sup> There was a rich man, and was clothed in purple, and white silk, and ate every day shiningly.

<sup>20</sup> And there was a beggar, Lazarus by name, that lay at his gate full of boils,

<sup>21</sup> and coveted to be fulfilled of [*or with*] the crumbs, that fell down from the rich man's board, and no man gave to him; but hounds came, and licked his boils.

<sup>22</sup> And it was done, that the beggar died, and was borne of angels into Abraham's bosom. And the rich man was dead also, and was buried in hell.

<sup>23</sup> And he raised up his eyes, when he was in torments, and saw Abraham afar; and Lazarus in his bosom.

<sup>24</sup> And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he dip the end of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

<sup>25</sup> And Abraham said to him, Son, have mind, for thou hast received good things in thy life, and Lazarus also evil things; but he is now comforted, and thou art tormented.

<sup>26</sup> And in all these things a great dark place [*or great dark depth*] is stablished betwixt us and you; that they that will from hence pass to you, may not, neither from thence pass over hither.

<sup>27</sup> And he said, Then I pray thee, father, that thou send him into the house of my father.

<sup>28</sup> For I have five brethren, that he witness to them, lest also they come into this place of torments.

<sup>29</sup> And Abraham said to him, They have Moses and the prophets; hear they them.

<sup>30</sup> And he said, Nay, father Abraham, but if any of dead men go to them, they shall do penance.

<sup>31</sup> And he said to him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither if any of dead men rise again, they shall believe to him.

## CHAPTER 17

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus said to his disciples, It is impossible that causes of stumbling come not; but woe to that man, by whom they come.

<sup>2</sup> It is more profitable to him, if a millstone be put about his neck, and he be cast into the sea, than that he cause to stumble one of these little.

<sup>3</sup> Take ye heed to yourselves; if thy brother hath sinned against thee, blame him; and if he do penance, forgive him.

<sup>4</sup> And if seven times in the day he do sin against thee, and seven times in the day he be converted to thee, and say, It repenteth me, forgive thou him.

<sup>5</sup> And the apostles said to the Lord, Increase to us faith [*or Increase faith to us*].

<sup>6</sup> And the Lord said, If ye have faith as the corn [*or a corn*] of sinapi, ye shall say to this sycamore tree, Be thou drawn up by the root, and be over-planted [*or planted over*] into the sea, and it shall obey to you.

<sup>7</sup> But who of you hath a servant earring, or pasturing oxen, which saith to him, when he turneth again from the field, Anon go, and sit to [*or at the*] meat;

<sup>8</sup> and saith not to him, Make ready, that I sup, and gird thee, and serve me, while I eat and drink, and after this thou shalt eat and drink;

<sup>9</sup> whether he hath grace to that servant, for he did that that he commanded him? Nay, I guess.

<sup>10</sup> So [*also*] ye, when ye have done all things that be commanded to you, say ye, We be unprofitable servants, we have done that that we ought to do.

<sup>11</sup> And it was done, the while Jesus went to Jerusalem, he passed through the midst of Samaria, and Galilee.

<sup>12</sup> And when he entered into a castle, ten leprous men came to meet him, which stood afar,

<sup>13</sup> and raised [*up*] their voice, and said, Jesus, Commander, have mercy on us.

<sup>14</sup> And as he saw them, he said, Go, show ye you to the priests. And it was done, while they went, they were cleansed.

<sup>15</sup> And one of them, as he saw that he was cleansed, went again, magni-fying God with a great voice.

<sup>16</sup> And he fell down on the face before his feet, and did thankings [*or doing graces*]; and this was a Samaritan.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered, and said, Whether ten be not cleansed, and where be the nine?

<sup>18</sup> There is none found, that turned again, and gave glory to God, but this alien [*or this stranger*].

19 And he said to him, Rise up, go thou; for thy faith hath made thee safe.

20 And he was asked of the Pharisees, when the realm of God cometh. And he answered to them, and said, The realm of God cometh not with espying,

21 neither they shall say, Lo! here, or lo! there; for lo! the realm of God is within you.

22 And he said to his disciples, Days shall come, when ye shall desire to see one day of man's Son, and ye shall not see.

23 And they shall say to you, Lo! here, and lo! there. Do not ye go, neither pursue;

24 for as lightning shining from under heaven shineth into *[or on]* those things that be under heaven, so shall man's Son be in his day.

25 But first it behooveth him to suffer many things, and to be reproved of this generation.

26 And as it was done in the days of Noah, so it shall be in the days of man's Son.

27 They ate and drank, wedded wives, and were given to weddings, till into the day in which Noah entered into the ship; and the great flood came, and lost all.

28 Also as it was done in the days of Lot, they ate and drank, bought and sold, planted and builded;

29 but in the day that Lot went out of Sodom, the Lord rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and lost all.

30 Like this thing it shall be, in what day man's Son shall be showed.

31 In that hour *[or that day]*, he that is in the roof, and his vessels in the house, come he not down to take them away; and he that *shall be* in the field, also turn not again behind.

32 Be ye mindful of the wife of Lot.

33 Whoever seeketh to make his life safe, shall lose it; and whoever loseth it, shall quicken it.

34 But I say to you, in that night two shall be in one bed, one shall be taken, and the other forsaken;

35 two *women* shall be grinding together, the one shall be taken, and the other forsaken;

36 two in a field, the one shall be taken, and the other left *[or forsaken]*.

37 They answer, and say to him, Where, Lord? Which said to them, Wherever the body shall be, thither shall be gathered together also the eagles.

## CHAPTER 18

<sup>1</sup> And he said to them also a parable, that it behooveth to pray evermore, and not fail;

<sup>2</sup> and said, There was a judge in a city, that dreaded not God, neither shamed of men.

<sup>3</sup> And a widow was in that city, and she came to him, and said, Avenge me of mine adversary;

<sup>4</sup> and he would not long time. But after these things he said within himself, Though I dread not God, and shame not of man,

<sup>5</sup> nevertheless for this widow is heavy [*or dis-easeful*] to me, I shall avenge her; lest at the last she coming condemn me [*or she strangle me*].

<sup>6</sup> And the Lord said, Hear ye, what the doomsman of wickedness saith;

<sup>7</sup> and whether God shall not do [*the*] vengeance of his chosen, crying to him day and night, and shall have patience in them?

<sup>8</sup> Soothly I say to you, for soon he shall do [*the*] vengeance of them. Nevertheless guessest thou, that man's Son coming shall find faith in earth?

<sup>9</sup> And he said also to some men, that trusted in themselves, as *they were* rightful [*or as rightful*], and despised others, this parable, saying,

<sup>10</sup> Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

<sup>11</sup> And the Pharisee stood, and prayed by himself these things, and said, God, I do thankings to thee, for I am not as other men, raveners, unjust, adulterers, as also this publican;

<sup>12</sup> I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all things that I have in possession.

<sup>13</sup> And the publican stood afar, and would not raise [*up*] his eyes to heaven, but smote his breast, and said, God be merciful to me, sinner.

<sup>14</sup> Truly I say to you, this went down into his house, and was justified from the other. For each that enhanceth himself, shall be made low, and he that meeketh himself, shall be enhanced.

<sup>15</sup> And they brought to him young children, that he should touch them; and when the disciples saw this thing, they blamed them.

<sup>16</sup> But Jesus called together them, and said, Suffer ye children to come to me, and do not ye forbid them, for of such is the kingdom of heavens.



17 Truly I say to you, whoever shall not take the kingdom of God as a child, he shall not enter into it.

18 And a prince asked him, and said, Good master, in what thing doing shall I wield everlasting life?

19 And Jesus said to him, What sayest thou me good? No man is good, but God alone.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Thou shalt not slay, Thou shalt not do lechery, Thou shalt not do theft, Thou shalt not say false witnessing, Worship thy father and *thy* mother.

21 Which said, I have kept all these things from my youth.

22 And when this thing was heard, Jesus said to him, Yet one thing faileth to thee; sell thou all things that thou hast, and give to poor men, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, and pursue thou me.

23 And when these things were heard, he was sorrowful, for he was full rich.

24 And Jesus seeing him made sorry [*or made sorrowful*] said, How hard they that have money [*or riches*] shall enter into the kingdom of God;

25 for it is lighter [*or easier*], a camel to pass through a needle's eye, than a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard these things said, Who may be made safe?

27 And he said to them, Those things that be impossible with men, be possible with God.

28 But Peter said, Lo! we have left all things, and have pursued thee.

29 And he said to him, Truly I say to you, there is no man that shall forsake house, or father and mother, or brethren, or wife, or children, or fields, for the realm of God,

30 and shall not receive many more things in this time, and in the world to coming [*or to come*] everlasting life.

31 And Jesus took his twelve *disciples*, and said to them, Lo! we go up to Jerusalem, and all things shall be ended, that be written by the prophets of man's Son.

32 For he shall be betrayed to heathen men, and he shall be scorned, and scourged, and bespat;

33 and after that they have scourged *him*, they shall slay him, and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood nothing of these; and this word was hid from them, and they understood not those things that were said.

35 But it was done, when Jesus came nigh to Jericho, a blind man sat beside the way, and begged.

<sup>36</sup> And when he heard the people passing, he asked, what this was.

<sup>37</sup> And they said to him, that Jesus of Nazareth passed.

<sup>38</sup> And he cried, and said, Jesus, the son of David, have mercy on me.

<sup>39</sup> And they that went before, blamed him, that he should be still; but he cried much the more [*or much more*], Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

<sup>40</sup> And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought forth to him. And when he came nigh, he asked him, and said,

<sup>41</sup> What wilt thou that I shall do to thee? And he said, Lord, that I see.

<sup>42</sup> And Jesus said to him, Behold; thy faith hath made thee safe.

<sup>43</sup> And anon he saw, and pursued him, and magnified God. And all the people, as it saw, gave praising to God.

## CHAPTER 19

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus going in, walked through Jericho.

<sup>2</sup> And lo! a man, Zacchaeus by name, and this [*or he*] was a prince of publicans, and he was rich.

<sup>3</sup> And he sought to see Jesus, who he was, and he might not, for the people, for he was little in stature.

<sup>4</sup> And he ran before, and went [*up*] into a sycamore tree, to see him; for he was to pass from thence.

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus beheld up, when he came to the place, and saw him, and said to him, Zacchaeus, haste thee, and come down, for today I must dwell in thine house.

<sup>6</sup> And he hieing [*or hasting*] came down, and joyingly received him.

<sup>7</sup> And when all men saw, they grutched, saying, For he had turned to a sinful man.

<sup>8</sup> But Zacchaeus stood, and said to the Lord, Lo! Lord, I give the half of my goods to poor men; and if I have anything defrauded any man, I yield four so much [*or fourfold*].

<sup>9</sup> Jesus saith to him, For today health is made to this house, for that he is Abraham's son;

<sup>10</sup> for man's Son came to seek, and make safe that thing that perished.

<sup>11</sup> When they heard these things, he added, and said a parable, for that he was nigh to Jerusalem, and for they guessed, that anon the kingdom of God should be showed.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore he said, A worthy man [*or Some noble man*] went into a far country, to take to him a kingdom, and to turn again.

13 And when his ten servants were called, he gave to them ten bezants; and said to them, Chaffer [*or Merchandize*] ye, till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a messenger after him, and said, We will not, that he reign on us.

15 And it was done, that he turned again, when he had taken the kingdom; and he commanded *his* servants to be called, to which he had given money, to know, how much each had won by chaffering.

16 And the first came, and said, Lord, thy bezant hath won ten bezants.

17 He said to him, Well be, thou good servant; for in little thing thou hast been true, thou shalt be having [*or have*] power on ten cities.

18 And the tother came, and said, Lord, thy bezant hath made five bezants.

19 And to this he said, And be thou on five cities.

20 And the third came, and said, Lord, lo! thy bezant, that I had, put up [*or kept*] in a sudarium, [*or sweating cloth*].

21 For I dreaded thee, for thou art an austere man; thou takest away that that thou settedest not, and thou reapest that that thou hast not sown.

22 He saith to him, Wicked servant, of thy mouth I deem thee. Knewest thou, that I am an austere man, taking away that thing that I setted not, and reaping that thing that I sowed not? [*or I have not sown?*]

23 and why hast thou not given my money to the board, and I coming should have asked it [*or should have received it*] with usuries?

24 And he said to men standing nigh, Take away from him the bezant, and give ye [*it*] to him that hath ten bezants.

25 And they said to him, Lord, he hath ten bezants.

26 And I say to you, to each man that hath, it shall be given, and he shall increase; but from him that hath not, also that thing that he hath, shall be taken of [*or from*] him.

27 Nevertheless bring ye hither those mine enemies, that would not that I reigned on them, and slay ye before me.

28 And when these things were said, he went before, and went up to Jerusalem.

29 And it was done, when Jesus came nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount, that is called of Olivet, he sent his two disciples,

30 and said, Go ye into the castle that is against you; into which as ye enter, ye shall find a colt of an ass tied, on which never man sat; untie ye him, and bring ye to me.

31 And if any man ask you, why ye untie, thus ye shall say to him, For the Lord desireth his work.

32 And they that were sent, went forth, and found as he said to them, a colt standing.

33 And when they untied the colt, the lords of it said to them, What [*or Why*] untie ye the colt?

34 And they said, For the Lord hath need to him.

35 And they led him to Jesus; and they casted their clothes on the colt, and set [*or put*] Jesus on him.

36 And when he went, they spreaded their clothes in the way.

37 And when he came nigh to the coming down of the mount of Olivet, all the people that came down began to joy, and to praise God with great voice on all the virtues, that they had seen,

38 and said, Blessed *be* the king, that cometh in the name of the Lord; peace in heaven, and glory in high things.

39 And some of the Pharisees of the people said to him, Master, blame thy disciples.

40 And he said to them, I say to you, for if these be still, stones shall cry.

41 And when he nighed, he saw the city, and wept on it,

42 and said, For if thou haddest known, thou *shouldst weep* also; for in this day, the things *be* in peace to thee, but now they be hid from thine eyes.

43 But days shall come in thee [*or shall come to thee*], and thine enemies shall environ thee with a pale, and they shall go about thee, and make thee strait on all sides,

44 and cast thee down to the earth, and thy sons [*or thy children*] that be in thee; and they shall not leave in thee a stone upon a stone, for thou hast not known the time of thy visitation.

45 And he entered into the temple, and began to cast out men selling therein and buying,

46 and said to them, It is written, That mine house is an house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

47 And he was teaching every day in the temple. And the princes of priests, and the scribes, and the princes of the people sought to lose him;

48 and they found not, what they should do to him, for all the people was [*fervently*] occupied, and heard him [*or for to hear him*].

## CHAPTER 20

1 And it was done in one of the days, when he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel [*or*

*evangelizing*], the princes of priests, and [*the*] scribes came together with the elder men;

<sup>2</sup> and they said to him, Say to us, in what power thou doest these things, or who is he that gave to thee this power?

<sup>3</sup> And Jesus answered, and said to them, And I shall ask you one word; answer ye to me.

<sup>4</sup> Was the baptism of John of heaven, or of men?

<sup>5</sup> And they thought within them-selves, saying, For if we say, Of heaven, he shall say, Why then believe ye not to him?

<sup>6</sup> and if we say, Of men, all the people shall stone us; for they be certain, that John is a prophet.

<sup>7</sup> And they answered, that they knew not, of whence it was.

<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said to them, Neither I say to you, in what power I do these things.

<sup>9</sup> And he began to say to the people this parable. A man planted a vineyard, and hired it to tillers; and he was gone in pilgrimage long time.

<sup>10</sup> And in the time of gathering of grapes, he sent a servant to the tillers, that they should give to him of the fruit of the vineyard; which beat him, and let him go void.

<sup>11</sup> And he thought yet to send another servant; and [*also*] they beat this, and tormented him sore, and let him go void.

<sup>12</sup> And he thought yet to send the third, and him also they wounded, and casted him out.

<sup>13</sup> And the lord of the vineyard said, What shall I do? I shall send my dearworthy son; peradventure, when they see him, they shall dread [*or they shall be ashamed*].

<sup>14</sup> And when the tillers saw him, they thought within themselves, and said, This is the heir; slay we him, that the heritage be ours.

<sup>15</sup> And they casted him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*. What shall then the lord of the vineyard do to them?

<sup>16</sup> He shall come, and destroy these tillers, and give the vineyard to others. And when this thing was heard, they said to him, God forbid.

<sup>17</sup> But he beheld them, and said, What then is this that is written, The stone which men building reprov'd, this is made into the head of the corner?

<sup>18</sup> Each that shall fall on that stone, shall be bruised [*or be broken*], but on whom it shall fall, it shall all-break him [*or it shall break him into small parts*].

<sup>19</sup> And the princes of priests, and [*the*] scribes, sought to lay on him hands [*or to lay hands on him*] in that hour; and they dreaded the people; for they knew that to them he said this likeness.

20 And they espied, and sent spies, that feigned them/*selves*/ just, that they should take him in word, and betake him to the power of the prince, and to the power of the justice.

21 And they asked him, and said, Master, we know, that rightly thou sayest and teachest *[or that thou sayest and teachest rightly]*; and thou takest not the person of man, but thou teachest in truth the way of God.

22 Is it leaveful to us to give tribute to the emperor *[or to Caesar]*, or nay?

23 And he beheld the deceit of them, and said to them, What tempt ye me?

24 Show ye to me a penny; whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and said to him, The emperor's *[or Caesar's]*.

25 And he said to them, Yield ye therefore to the emperor those things that be the emperor's *[or to Caesar those things that be Caesar's]*, and those things that be of God, to God.

26 And they might not reprove his word before the people; and they wondered in his answer, and held peace.

27 Some of the Sadducees, that denied the again-rising from death to life *[or the resurrection]*, came, and asked him.

28 and said, Master, Moses wrote to us, if the brother of any man have a wife, and he be dead *[or died]*, and he was without heirs *[or free children]*, that his brother take his wife, and raise seed to his brother.

29 And so there were seven brethren. The first took a wife, and is dead without heirs, *[or without sons, or free children]*;

30 and the *brother* pursuing took her *[or the second took her]*, and he is dead without son;

31 and the third took her; also and all seven, and they left not seed *[or no seed]*, but be dead;

32 and the last of all the woman is dead.

33 Therefore in the rising again, whose wife of them shall she be? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus said to them, Sons of this world wed, and be given to weddings;

35 but they that shall be had worthy of that world, and of the rising again from death, neither be wedded, nor wed wives,

36 neither they shall be able to die more; for they be even with angels, and be the sons of God, since they be the sons of the rising again from death.

37 And that dead men rise again, also Moses showed beside the bush, as he saith, The Lord God of Abraham, and God of Isaac, and God of Jacob.

<sup>38</sup> And God is not of dead men, but of living men; for all men live to him.

<sup>39</sup> And some of the scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well said.

<sup>40</sup> And they durst no more ask him anything.

<sup>41</sup> But he said to them, How say men, Christ to be the son of David [*or that Christ is the son of David*],

<sup>42</sup> and David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right half,

<sup>43</sup> till I put thine enemies a stool of thy feet?

<sup>44</sup> Therefore David calleth him Lord, and how is he his son?

<sup>45</sup> And in hearing of all the people, he said to his disciples,

<sup>46</sup> Be ye ware of the scribes, that will wander in stoles, and love salutations in the chapping, and the first chairs in the synagogues, and the first sitting places in [*the*] feasts;

<sup>47</sup> that devour the houses of widows, and feign long praying; these shall take the more damnation.

## CHAPTER 21

<sup>1</sup> And he beheld, and saw the rich men, that cast their gifts into the treasury;

<sup>2</sup> but he saw also a little poor widow casting two farthings [*or two little moneys*].

<sup>3</sup> And he said, Truly I say to you, that this poor widow cast more than all men.

<sup>4</sup> For why all these of [*the*] thing that was plenteous [*or abundant*] to them cast in to the gifts of God; but this widow of that thing that failed to her, cast all her livelihood [*or all her livelihood*], that she had.

<sup>5</sup> And when some men said of the temple, that it was appareled [*or adorned*] with good stones and gifts, he said,

<sup>6</sup> These things that ye see, days shall come, in which a stone shall not be left on a stone, which shall not be destroyed.

<sup>7</sup> And they asked him, and said, Commander, when shall these things be? and what token *shall be*, when they shall begin to be done?

<sup>8</sup> And he said, See ye, that ye be not deceived; for many shall come in my name, saying, For I am, and the time shall nigh; therefore do not ye go after them.

<sup>9</sup> And when ye shall hear battles and strives [*or dissensions*] within, do not ye be afeared; it behooveth first these things to be done, but not yet anon is an end [*or the end*].

<sup>10</sup> Then he said to them, Folk shall rise against folk, and realm against realm;

<sup>11</sup> and great movings of the earth shall be by places, and pestilences, and hungers, and dreads from heaven, and great tokens shall be.

<sup>12</sup> But before all these things they shall set their hands on you, and shall pursue *you*, betaking into synagogues and keepings, [*either prisons*], and drawing *you* to kings and to justices, for my name;

<sup>13</sup> but it shall fall to you into witnessing.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore put ye in your hearts, not to think before, how ye shall answer;

<sup>15</sup> for I shall give to you mouth and wisdom, to which all your adversaries shall not be able to against-stand, and gainsay.

<sup>16</sup> And ye shall be taken [*or betrayed*] of father, and mother, and brethren, and cousins, and friends, and by death they shall torment [*some*] of you;

<sup>17</sup> and ye shall be in hate to [*or be hated of*] all men for my name.

<sup>18</sup> And an hair of your head shall not perish;

<sup>19</sup> in your patience ye shall wield your souls.

<sup>20</sup> But when ye shall see Jerusalem be environed with an host [*of battle*], then know ye, that the desolation of it shall nigh.

<sup>21</sup> Then they that be in Judea, flee to the mountains; and they that *be* in the middle of it, go away; and they that *be* in the countries, enter not into it.

<sup>22</sup> For these be the days of vengeance, that all things that be written, be fulfilled.

<sup>23</sup> And woe to them, that be with child, and nourishing [*or nursing*] in those days; for a great dis-ease [*or pressure*] shall be on the earth, and wrath to this people.

<sup>24</sup> And they shall fall by the sharpness of sword, and they shall be led prisoners [*or led captive*] into all folks; and Jerusalem shall be defouled of heathen men, till the times of nations be fulfilled.

<sup>25</sup> And tokens shall be in the sun, and the moon, and in the stars; and in the earth overlaying of folks, for confusion of the sound of the sea and of floods [*or of waves*];

<sup>26</sup> for men shall wax dry for dread and abiding, that shall come into [*or on*] all the world; for virtues of heaven shall be moved.

<sup>27</sup> And then they shall see man's Son coming in a cloud, with great power and majesty.

<sup>28</sup> And when these things begin to be made [*or beginning to be done*], behold ye, and raise ye your heads, for your redemption nigheth.



<sup>29</sup> And he said to them a likeness, See ye the fig tree, and all trees,

<sup>30</sup> when they bring forth now of themselves fruit, ye know that summer is nigh;

<sup>31</sup> so [*also*] ye, when ye see these things to be done, know ye, that the kingdom of God is nigh.

<sup>32</sup> Truly I say to you, that this generation shall not pass, till all things be done.

<sup>33</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass, but my words shall not pass.

<sup>34</sup> But take ye heed to yourselves, lest peradventure your hearts be grieved with gluttony, and drunken-ness, and busynesses of this life, and that day come suddenly on you;

<sup>35</sup> for as a snare it shall come on all men, that sit on the face of all the earth.

<sup>36</sup> Therefore wake ye, praying in each time, that ye be had worthy to flee all these things that be to come [*for that shall come*], and to stand before man's Son.

<sup>37</sup> And in days he was teaching in the temple, but in nights he went out, and dwelled in the mount, that is called of Olivet.

<sup>38</sup> And all the people rose [*or came*] early, to come to him in the temple, for to hear him.

## CHAPTER 22

<sup>1</sup> And the holiday [*for the holy day*] of therf loaves, that is said pask, nighed.

<sup>2</sup> And the princes of priests, and the scribes sought, how they should slay Jesus, but they dreaded the people.

<sup>3</sup> And Satan entered into Judas, that was called Iscariot, one of the twelve.

<sup>4</sup> And he went, and spake with the princes of priests, and with the magistrates, how he should betray him to them.

<sup>5</sup> And they joyed, and made covenant to give him money.

<sup>6</sup> And he promised, and he sought opportunity, to betray him, without the people.

<sup>7</sup> But the days of therf loaves came, in which it was need, that the sacrifice of pask were slain.

<sup>8</sup> And he sent Peter and John, and said, Go ye, and make ye ready to us the pask, that we eat.

<sup>9</sup> And they said, Where wilt thou, that we make ready?

<sup>10</sup> And he said to them, Lo! when ye shall enter into the city, a man bearing a vessel of water shall meet you; pursue ye him into the house, into which he entereth.

<sup>11</sup> And ye shall say to the husband-man of the house, The master saith to thee, Where is a chamber, where I shall eat the pask with my disciples?

<sup>12</sup> And he shall show to you a great supping place strewed, and there make ye ready.

<sup>13</sup> And they went, and found as he said to them, and they made ready the pask.

<sup>14</sup> And when the hour was come, he sat at the meat, and the twelve apostles with him.

<sup>15</sup> And he said to them, With desire I have desired to eat with you this pask, before that I suffer;

<sup>16</sup> for I say to you, that from this time I shall not eat it, till it be fulfilled in the realm of God.

<sup>17</sup> And when he had taken the cup, he did graces [*or thankings*], and said, Take ye, and part ye among you;

<sup>18</sup> for I say to you, that I shall not drink of the kind [*or of the generation*] of this vine, till the realm of God come.

<sup>19</sup> And when he had taken bread, he did thankings [*or graces*], and brake, and gave to them, and said, This is my body, that shall be given for you; do ye this thing in mind of me [*or into my commemoration*].

<sup>20</sup> He took also the cup [*or the chalice*], after that he had supped, and said, This cup is the new testament in my blood, that shall be shed for you.

<sup>21</sup> Nevertheless lo! the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me at the table.

<sup>22</sup> And man's Son goeth, as it is determined; nevertheless woe to that man, by whom he shall be betrayed.

<sup>23</sup> And they began to seek among them [*selves*], who it was of them, that was to do this thing.

<sup>24</sup> And strife was made among them, which of them should be seen to be greatest.

<sup>25</sup> But he said to them, Kings of heathen men be lords of them, and they that have power on them be called good doers,

<sup>26</sup> but ye not so; but he that is [*the*] greatest among you, be made as a younger [*or as the younger*], and he that is [*a*] before-goer, as a servant.

<sup>27</sup> For who is greater, he that sitteth at the meat, or he that ministereth? whether not he that sitteth at the meat? And I am in the middle [*or in the midst*] of you, as he that ministereth.

<sup>28</sup> And ye [*it*] be, that have dwelled with me in my temptations;

<sup>29</sup> and I assign [*or dispose*] to you, as my Father hath assigned [*or disposed*] to me, a realm.

<sup>30</sup> that ye eat and drink on my board in my realm, and sit on thrones, and deem the twelve kindreds of Israel.

<sup>31</sup> And the Lord said to Simon, Simon, lo! Satan hath asked you, that he should riddle *you* as wheat;

<sup>32</sup> but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; and thou sometime converted, confirm thy brethren.

<sup>33</sup> Which said to him, Lord, I am ready to go into prison and into death with thee.

<sup>34</sup> And he said, I say to thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow today, till thou thrice forsake that thou knowest me.

<sup>35</sup> And he said to them, When I sent you without satchel, and scrip, and shoes, whether anything failed to you? And they said, Nothing.

<sup>36</sup> Therefore he said to them, But now he that hath a satchel, take also a scrip; and he that hath none, sell his coat, and buy a sword.

<sup>37</sup> For I say to you, that yet it behooveth that thing that is written to be fulfilled in me, And he is areckoned with wicked men; for those things that be of me have an end.

<sup>38</sup> And they said, Lord, lo! two swords here. And he said to them, It is enough.

<sup>39</sup> And he went out, and went after the custom into the hill of Olives [*or of Olivet*]; and the disciples pursued him.

<sup>40</sup> And when he came to the place, he said to them, Pray ye, lest ye enter into temptation.

<sup>41</sup> And he was taken away from them, as much as is a stone's cast; and he kneeled, and prayed,

<sup>42</sup> and said, Father, if thou wilt, do away this cup from me; nevertheless not my will be done, but thine, [*or not my will, but thine be done*].

<sup>43</sup> And an angel appeared to him from heaven, and comforted him.

<sup>44</sup> And he was made in agony [*or in anguish*], and prayed the longer [*or prayed longer*]; and his sweat was made as drops of blood running down into the earth.

<sup>45</sup> And when he was risen from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for heaviness.

<sup>46</sup> And he said to them, What, sleep ye? Rise ye, and pray ye, that ye enter not into temptation.

<sup>47</sup> Yet while he spake, lo! a company, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them; and he came [*nigh*] to Jesus, to kiss him.

<sup>48</sup> And Jesus said to him, Judas, betrayest thou man's Son with a kiss?

<sup>49</sup> And they that were about him, and saw that that was to come, said to him, Lord, whether we smite with sword?

<sup>50</sup> And one of them smote the servant of the prince of priests, and cut off his right ear.

<sup>51</sup> But Jesus answered, and said, Suffer ye till hither. And when he had touched his ear, he healed him.

<sup>52</sup> And Jesus said to them, that came to him, the princes of priests, and magistrates [*or the masters*] of the temple, and elder men, As to a thief ye have gone out with swords and staves?

<sup>53</sup> When I was each day with you in the temple, ye stretched not out hands into me; but this is your hour, and the power of darkneses.

<sup>54</sup> And they took him, and led to the house of the prince of priests; and Peter pursued him afar.

<sup>55</sup> And when a fire was kindled in the middle of the great house, and they sat about, Peter was in the middle of them.

<sup>56</sup> Whom when a damsel, [*or a handmaid/a handmaiden*], had seen sitting at the light, and had beheld him, she said, And this was with him.

<sup>57</sup> And he denied him, and said, Woman, I know him not.

<sup>58</sup> And after a little another man saw him, and said, And thou art of them. But Peter said, A! man, I am not.

<sup>59</sup> And when a space was made as of one hour, another affirmed, and said, Truly this was with him; for also he is of Galilee.

<sup>60</sup> And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And anon yet while he spake, the cock crew.

<sup>61</sup> And the Lord turned again [*or And the Lord turned*], and beheld Peter; and Peter had mind of the word of Jesus, as he had said, Before that the cock crow, thrice thou shalt deny me.

<sup>62</sup> And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

<sup>63</sup> And the men that held him scorned him, and smote him.

<sup>64</sup> And they blindfolded him, and smote his face, and asked him, and said, Declare, thou *Christ*, to us, who is he that smote thee? [*or Prophecy thou, who is it that smote thee?*]

<sup>65</sup> Also they blaspheming said against him many other things. [*Also they blaspheming said many other things against him.*]

<sup>66</sup> And as the day was come, the elder men of the people, and the princes of priests, and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, and said,

<sup>67</sup> If thou art Christ, say to us. And he said to them, If I say to you, ye will not believe to me;

<sup>68</sup> and if I ask, ye will not answer to me, neither ye will deliver me.

<sup>69</sup> But after this time man's Son shall be sitting on the right half of the virtue of God.

<sup>70</sup> Therefore all said, Then art thou the Son of God? And he said, Ye say that I am.

<sup>71</sup> And they said, What yet desire we witnessing? for we ourselves have heard of his mouth.

## CHAPTER 23

<sup>1</sup> And all the multitude of them arose, and led him to Pilate.

<sup>2</sup> And they began to accuse him, and said, We have found this turning upside-down our folk, and forbidding tribute to be given to the emperor [*or to Caesar*], and saying that himself is Christ a king [*or and saying himself to be Christ king.*]

<sup>3</sup> And Pilate asked him, and said, Art thou king of Jews? And he answered, and said, Thou sayest.

<sup>4</sup> And Pilate said to the princes of priests, and to the people, I find nothing of cause in this man.

<sup>5</sup> And they waxed stronger, and said, He moveth the people, teaching through all Judea, beginning from Galilee till hither.

<sup>6</sup> And Pilate hearing Galilee asked, if he were a man of Galilee.

<sup>7</sup> And when he knew that he was of the power of Herod, he sent him to Herod; which was [*or he was*] at Jerusalem in those days.

<sup>8</sup> And when Herod saw Jesus, he joyed full much; for long time he coveted to see him, for he heard many things of him, and hoped to see some token [*or some miracle*] done of him.

<sup>9</sup> And he asked him in many words; and he answered nothing to him.

<sup>10</sup> And the princes of priests, and the scribes stood, steadfastly accusing him.

<sup>11</sup> But Herod with his host despised him, and scorned him, and clothed him with a white cloth, and sent *him* again to Pilate.

<sup>12</sup> And Herod and Pilate were made friends from that day [*or in that day*]; for before they were enemies together.

<sup>13</sup> And Pilate called together the princes of priests, and the magistrates of the people,

<sup>14</sup> and said to them, Ye have brought to me this man, as turning away the people, and lo! I asking before you find no cause in this man, of these things, in which ye accuse him;

<sup>15</sup> neither Herod, for he hath sent him again to us, and lo! nothing worthy of death is done to him.

<sup>16</sup> And therefore I shall amend him, and deliver him [*chastised*].

<sup>17</sup> But he must needs [*or had need to*] deliver to them one by the feast day.

<sup>18</sup> And all the people cried together, and said, Do him away, and deliver to us Barabbas;

<sup>19</sup> which was sent into prison for disturbing, [*or some dissention, or sedition*], made in the city, and for manslaying.

<sup>20</sup> And again Pilate spake to them, and would deliver [*or willing to deliver*] Jesus.

<sup>21</sup> And they cried out, and said, Crucify, crucify him.

<sup>22</sup> And the third time he said to them, For what evil hath he done? I find no cause of death in him; therefore I shall chastise him, and [*I*] shall deliver him.

<sup>23</sup> And they continued with great voices asking [*or they continued asking with great voices*], that he should be crucified; and the voices of them waxed strong.

<sup>24</sup> And Pilate deemed their asking to be done.

<sup>25</sup> And he delivered to them him, that for manslaying and sedition was sent into prison, whom they asked; but he betook Jesus to their will.

<sup>26</sup> And when they led him, they took a man, Simon of Cyrene, coming from the town, and they laid on him the cross to bear after Jesus.

<sup>27</sup> And there pursued him much people, and women that bewailed, and bemoaned him.

<sup>28</sup> And Jesus turned to them, and said, Daughters of Jerusalem, do not ye weep on me, but weep ye on yourselves and on your sons.

<sup>29</sup> For lo! days shall come, in which it shall be said, Blessed be barren women, and [*the*] wombs that have not born children, and the teats that have not given suck.

<sup>30</sup> Then they shall begin to say to mountains, Fall ye down on us, and to small hills, Cover ye us.

<sup>31</sup> For if in a green tree they do these things [*or if they do these things in a green tree*], what shall be done in a dry?

<sup>32</sup> Also other two wicked men were led with him, to be slain.

<sup>33</sup> And when they came into a place, that is called of Calvary, [*+or after that they came to a place, which is called Calvary*], there they crucified him, and the thieves, one on the right half, and the other on the left half.

<sup>34</sup> But Jesus said, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. And they parted his clothes, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood abiding; and the princes scorned him with them, and said, Other men he made safe; make he himself safe, if this be Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the knights nighed, and scorned him, and proffered [*or offered*] vinegar to him,

37 and said, If thou art king of Jews, make thee safe.

38 And the superscription was written over him with Greek letters, and of Latin, and of Hebrew, This is the king of Jews.

39 And one of these thieves that hanged, blasphemed him, and said, If thou art Christ, make thyself safe and us.

40 But the other answering, blamed him, and said, Neither thou darest God, [*thou*] that art in the same condemnation? [*for the same damnation?*]

41 And truly we justly, for we have received worthy things to *our* works [*or deeds*]; but this did nothing of evil [*or soothly this hath done no evil*].

42 And he said to Jesus, Lord, have mind of me, when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said to him, Truly I say to thee, this day thou shalt be with me in paradise.

44 And it was almost the sixth hour, and darknesses were made on all the earth, into [*or till*] the ninth hour.

45 And the sun was made dark, and the veil of the temple was rent atwo [*or was cut down the middle*].

46 And Jesus crying with a great voice, said, Father, into thine hands I betake my spirit. And he saying these things, gave up the ghost, [*or sent out the spirit, or died*].

47 And the centurion seeing that thing that was done, glorified God, and said, Verily, this man was just.

48 And all the people of them that were there together at this spectacle, and saw those things that were done, smote their breasts, and turned again.

49 But all his known stood afar, and women that pursued him from Galilee, seeing these things.

50 And lo! a man, Joseph by name, of Arimathaea, a city of Judea, that was a decurion, [*that is, having ten men under him*], a good man and a just [*or a good man and just*],

51 this *man* consented not to the counsel and to the deeds of them; and he abode the kingdom of God.

52 This *Joseph* came to Pilate, and asked the body of Jesus,

53 and took it down, and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and laid him in a grave hewn, in which not yet any man had been laid [*or was put*].

<sup>54</sup> And the day was the evening of the holiday, [*+or of the holy day, or the making ready of pask*], and the sabbath began to shine.

<sup>55</sup> And the women pursuing, that came with him from Galilee, saw the grave, and how his body was laid.

<sup>56</sup> And they turned again, and made ready sweet smelling spices, and ointments; but in the sabbath they rested, after the commandment.

## CHAPTER 24

<sup>1</sup> But in one day of the week full early, they came to the grave, and brought sweet smelling spices, that they had arrayed [*for which they had made ready*].

<sup>2</sup> And they found the stone turned away from the grave.

<sup>3</sup> And they went in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>4</sup> And it was done, the while they were astonied in thought of this thing, lo! two men stood beside them in shining cloth [*or shining clothing*].

<sup>5</sup> And when they dreaded, and bowed their semblance into the earth, they said to them, What seek ye him that liveth with dead men? [*or What seek ye the living with the dead?*]

<sup>6</sup> He is not here, but is risen. Have ye mind, how he spake to you, when he was yet in Galilee,

<sup>7</sup> and said, For it behooveth man's Son to be betaken into the hands of sinful men, and to be crucified, and the third day to rise again.

<sup>8</sup> And they bethought on his words.

<sup>9</sup> And they went again from the grave, and told all these things to the eleven, and to all [*the*] others.

<sup>10</sup> And there was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary of James, and other women that were with them, that said to the apostles these things [*or that said these things to the apostles*].

<sup>11</sup> And these words were seen to them as madness, and they believed not to them.

<sup>12</sup> But Peter rose up, and ran to the grave; and he bowed down, and saw the linen clothes lying alone. And he went by himself, wondering on that that was done.

<sup>13</sup> And lo! twain of them went in that day into a castle, that was from Jerusalem the space of sixty furlongs, by name Emmaus.

<sup>14</sup> And they spake together of all these things that had befallen.



15 And it was done, the while they talked, and sought by themselves, Jesus himself nighed, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they knew him not.

17 And he said to them, What be these words, that ye speak together wandering, and ye be sorrowful?

18 And one, whose name was Cleopas, answered, and said [*to him*], Thou thyself art a pilgrim in Jerusalem, and hast thou not known, what things be done in it in these days?

19 To whom he said, What things? And they said to him, Of Jesus of Nazareth, that was a man prophet, mighty in work and word before God and all the people;

20 and how the high priests and our princes betook him into condemnation [*or into damnation*] of death, and crucified him.

21 But we hoped, that he should have again-bought Israel. And now on all these things the third day is today, that these things were done.

22 But also some women of ours made us afeared, which before day-*[light]* were at the grave;

23 and when his body was not found, they came, and said, that they saw also a sight of angels, which said, that he liveth.

24 And some [*men*] of ours went to the grave, and they found so as the women said, but they found not him.

25 And he said to them, A! fools, and slow of heart to believe in all things that the prophets have spoken.

26 Whether it behooved not Christ to suffer these things, and so to enter into his glory?

27 And he began at Moses and at all the prophets, and declared [*or expounded*] to them in all scriptures, that were of him.

28 And they came nigh to the castle, whither they went. And he made countenance that he would go further.

29 And they constrained him, and said, Dwell with us, for it draweth to night, and the day is now bowed down. And he entered [*in*] with them.

30 And it was done, while he sat at the meat with them, he took bread, and blessed, and brake, and took [*or gave*] to them.

31 And the eyes of them were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished from their eyes.

32 And they said together, whether our heart was not burning in us, while he spake to us in the way, and [*he*] opened to us [*the*] scriptures?

<sup>33</sup> And they rose up in the same hour, and went again into Jerusalem [*or to Jerusalem*], and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

<sup>34</sup> saying, that the Lord is risen verily, and appeared to Simon.

<sup>35</sup> And they told what things were done in the way, and how they knew him in breaking of bread.

<sup>36</sup> And while they spake these things, Jesus stood in the middle of them, and said to them, Peace to you; I am, do not ye dread.

<sup>37</sup> But they were afraid and aghast, and guessed them to see a spirit.

<sup>38</sup> And he said to them, what be ye troubled, and thoughts come up into your hearts?

<sup>39</sup> See ye my hands and my feet, for I myself am. Feel ye, and see you; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see that I have.

<sup>40</sup> And when he had said this thing, he showed hands and feet to them.

<sup>41</sup> And yet while they believed not, and wondered for joy, he said, Have ye here anything [*or Have ye any-thing here*] that shall be eaten?

<sup>42</sup> And they proffered [*or offered*] to him a part of a fish roasted, and a honeycomb.

<sup>43</sup> And when he had eaten before them, he took that that left [*or the remnants*], and gave to them;

<sup>44</sup> and [*he*] said to them, These be the words that I spake to you, when I was yet with you; for it is need that all things be fulfilled, that be written in the law of Moses, and in prophets, and in psalms, of me.

<sup>45</sup> Then he opened to them wit, that they should understand [*the*] scriptures.

<sup>46</sup> And he said to them, For thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and rise again from death the third day;

<sup>47</sup> and penance, and remission of sins to be preached in his name to all folks, beginning at Jerusalem.

<sup>48</sup> And ye be witnesses of these things.

<sup>49</sup> And I shall send the promise of my Father into you; but sit ye in the city, till ye be clothed with virtue from on high.

<sup>50</sup> And he led them forth into Bethany, and when his hands were lifted up, he blessed them.

<sup>51</sup> And it was done, the while he blessed them [*or while he blessed them*], he departed from them, and was borne into heaven.

<sup>52</sup> And they worshipped, and went again into Jerusalem with great joy,

<sup>53</sup> and were evermore in the temple, praising and blessing God.

## JOHN

<sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the word, [*that is, God's son*], and the word was at God, and God was the word.

<sup>2</sup> This was in the beginning at God.

<sup>3</sup> All things were made by him, and without him was made nothing [*or nought*], that thing that was made.

<sup>4</sup> In him was life, and the life was the light of men;

<sup>5</sup> and the light shineth in darknesses, and [*the*] darknesses comprehended not it.

<sup>6</sup> A man was sent from God, to whom the name was John.

<sup>7</sup> This man came into witnessing, that he should bear witnessing of the light, that all men should believe by him.

<sup>8</sup> He was not that light, but that he should bear witnessing of the light.

<sup>9</sup> There was a very light, which enlighteneth each man that cometh into this world.

<sup>10</sup> He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

<sup>11</sup> He came into his own things, and his received him not.

<sup>12</sup> But how many ever received him, he gave to them power to be made the sons of God, to them that believe in his name;

<sup>13</sup> the which not of bloods, neither of the will of flesh, neither of the will of man, but be born of God.

<sup>14</sup> And the word, [*that is, God's son*], was made man [*or flesh*], and dwelled among us, and we have seen the glory of him, as the glory of the one begotten Son of the Father, full of grace and of truth.

<sup>15</sup> John beareth witnessing of him, and crieth, and saith, This is he of whom I said, He that shall come after me, is made before me, for he was before me;

<sup>16</sup> and of the plenty of him we all have taken, and grace for grace.

<sup>17</sup> For the law was given by Moses; but grace and truth is made by Jesus Christ.

<sup>18</sup> No man saw ever [*or ever saw*] God, but the one begotten Son, that is in the bosom of the Father, he hath told out.

<sup>19</sup> And this is the witnessing of John, when Jews sent from Jerusalem priests and deacons to him, that they should ask him, Who art thou?

<sup>20</sup> He acknowledged, and denied not, and he acknowledged, For I am not Christ.

<sup>21</sup> And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he said, I am not. Art thou a prophet? [*or the prophet?*] And he answered, Nay.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore they said to him, Who art thou? That we give an answer to these that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

<sup>23</sup> He said, I *am* a voice of a crier [*or a voice of a man crying*] in desert, Dress ye the way of the Lord, as Isaiah the prophet, said.

<sup>24</sup> And they that were sent, were of the Pharisees.

<sup>25</sup> And they asked him, and said to him, What then baptizest thou, if thou art not Christ, neither Elijah, neither a prophet?

<sup>26</sup> John answered to them, and said, I baptize in water, but in the middle of you hath stand [*or stood*] one, that ye know not;

<sup>27</sup> he it is, that shall come after me, that was made before me, of whom I am not worthy to loosen the thong of his shoe.

<sup>28</sup> These things were done in Bethany beyond [*or over*] Jordan, where John was baptizing.

<sup>29</sup> Another day John saw Jesus coming to him, and he said, Lo! the lamb of God; lo! he that doeth away the sins of the world.

<sup>30</sup> This is he, that I said of, After me is come a man [*or After me cometh a man*], which was made before me; for he was rather [*or former*] than I.

<sup>31</sup> And I knew him not, but that he be showed in Israel, therefore I came baptizing in water.

<sup>32</sup> And John bare witnessing, and said, I saw the Spirit coming down as a culver from heaven, and dwelled on him.

<sup>33</sup> And I knew him not; but he that sent me to baptize in water, said to me, On whom thou seest the Spirit coming down, and dwelling on him, this is he, that baptizeth in the Holy Ghost.

<sup>34</sup> And I saw, and bare witnessing, that this is the Son of God.

<sup>35</sup> Another day John stood, and two of his disciples;

<sup>36</sup> and he beheld Jesus walking, and saith, Lo! the lamb of God.

<sup>37</sup> And two disciples heard him speaking, and [*they*] followed Jesus.

<sup>38</sup> And Jesus turned, and saw them pursuing him, and saith to them, What seek ye? And they said to him, Rabbi, that is to say, Master, where dwellest thou?

<sup>39</sup> And he saith to them, Come ye, and see. And they came, and saw where he dwelled; and dwelt with him that day. And it was as the tenth hour.

<sup>40</sup> And Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, was one of the twain, that heard of John, and had pursued him.

<sup>41</sup> This found first his brother Simon, and he said to him, We have found Messiah, that is to say, Christ;

<sup>42</sup> and he led him to Jesus. And Jesus beheld him, and said, Thou art Simon, the son of Jonah; thou shalt be called Cephas, that is to say, Peter.

<sup>43</sup> And on the morrow he would go out into Galilee, and he found Philip; and he saith to him, Pursue thou me.

<sup>44</sup> Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and of Peter.

<sup>45</sup> Philip found Nathanael, and said to him, We have found Jesus, the son of Joseph, of Nazareth, whom Moses wrote in the law and the prophets.

<sup>46</sup> And Nathanael said to him, Of Nazareth may some good thing be? Philip said to him, Come, and see.

<sup>47</sup> Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and said of him, Lo! verily a man of Israel, in whom is no guile.

<sup>48</sup> Nathanael said to him, Whereof hast thou known me? Jesus answered, and said to him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou were under the fig tree, I saw thee.

<sup>49</sup> Nathanael answered to him, and said, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art king of Israel.

<sup>50</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, For I said to thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, thou believest; thou shalt see more than these things [*or thou shalt see more things than these*].

<sup>51</sup> And he said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, ye shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God going up and coming down on man's Son.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And the third day weddings were made in the Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there.

<sup>2</sup> And Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the weddings.

<sup>3</sup> And when wine failed, the mother of Jesus said to him, They have not wine.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus saith to her, What to me and to thee, woman? mine hour came not yet.

<sup>5</sup> His mother saith to the ministers, Whatever thing he saith to you, do ye.

<sup>6</sup> And there were set six stone cans [*or pots*], after the cleansing of the Jews, holding each two or three metretes [*or measures*].

<sup>7</sup> And Jesus saith to them, Fill ye the pots with water. And they filled them, up to the mouth [*or unto the highest part*].

<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said to them, Draw ye now, and bear ye to the master of the feast. And they bare.

<sup>9</sup> And when the master of the feast had tasted the water made wine, and knew not whereof it was, but the ministers knew that drew the water, the master of the feast calleth the spouse,

<sup>10</sup> and saith to him, Each man setteth first good wine, and when men be [*full*]-filled, then that that is worse; but thou hast kept the good wine into this time.

<sup>11</sup> Jesus did this the beginning of signs, in the Cana of Galilee, and showed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

<sup>12</sup> After these things he came down to Capernaum, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples; and they dwelled there not many days.

<sup>13</sup> And the pask of Jews was nigh, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

<sup>14</sup> And he found in the temple men selling oxen, and sheep, and culvers, and [*money*]-changers sitting.

<sup>15</sup> And when he had made as it were a scourge of small cords, he drove out all [*or cast all out*] of the temple, and oxen, and sheep; and he shedded [*out*] the money of changers, and turned upside-down the boards.

<sup>16</sup> And he said to them that sold culvers, Take away from hence these things, and do not ye make the house of my Father an house of merchandise.

<sup>17</sup> And his disciples had mind, for it was written, The fervent love [*or zeal*] of thine house hath eaten me.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore the Jews answered, and said to him, What token [*or sign*] showest thou to us, that thou doest these things?

<sup>19</sup> Jesus answered, and said to them, Undo ye this temple, and in three days I shall raise it.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore the Jews said to him, In forty and six years this temple was builded, and shalt thou in three days raise it?

<sup>21</sup> But he said of the temple of his body.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore when he was risen from death, his disciples had mind, that he said these things *of his body*; and they believed to the scripture, and to the word that Jesus said.

<sup>23</sup> And when Jesus was at Jerusalem in pask, in the feast day, many believed in his name, seeing his signs that he did.

<sup>24</sup> But Jesus trusted not himself to them, for he knew all men;

<sup>25</sup> and for it was not need to him, that any man should bear witnessing of man, for he knew, what was in man.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> And there was a man of the Pharisees, Nicodemus by name, a prince of the Jews.

<sup>2</sup> And he came to Jesus by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know, that thou art come from God a master [*or for of God thou hast come a master*]; for no man may do these signs, that thou doest, but God be with him.

<sup>3</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, Truly, truly, I say to thee, but a man be born again, he may not see the kingdom of God.

<sup>4</sup> Nicodemus said to him, How may a man be born, when he is old? whether he may enter again into his mother's womb, and be born again?

<sup>5</sup> Jesus answered, Truly, truly, I say to thee, but a man be born again of water, and of the Holy Ghost, he may not enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>6</sup> That that is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that that is born of the Spirit, is spirit.

<sup>7</sup> Wonder thou not, for I said to thee, It behooveth you to be born again.

<sup>8</sup> The Spirit breatheth where he will, and thou hearest his voice, but thou knowest not, from whence he cometh, nor whither he goeth; so is each man that is born of the Spirit.

<sup>9</sup> Nicodemus answered, and said to him, How may these things be done?

<sup>10</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, Thou art a master in Israel, and knowest not these things?

<sup>11</sup> Truly, truly, I say to thee, for we speak that that we know, and we witness that that we have seen, and ye take not our witnessing.

<sup>12</sup> If I have said to you earthly things, and ye believe not, how if I say to you heavenly things, shall ye believe?

<sup>13</sup> And no man ascendeth [*or goeth up*] into heaven, but he that came down from heaven, man's Son that is in heaven [*or the Son of man which is in heaven*].

<sup>14</sup> And as Moses areared [*or reared up*] a serpent in desert, so it behooveth man's Son to be raised [*up*],

<sup>15</sup> that each man that believeth in him, perish not, but have everlasting life.

<sup>16</sup> For God loved so the world [*or Forsooth God so loved the world*], that he gave his one begotten Son, that each man that believeth in him perish not, but have everlasting life.



17 For God sent not his Son into the world, that he judge the world, but that the world be saved by him.

18 He that believeth in him, is not deemed, [*or condemned*]; but he that believeth not, is now deemed [*or condemned*], for he believeth not in the name of the one [*or the only*] begotten Son of God.

19 And this is the doom, for light came into the world, and men loved more darknesses than light; for their works were evil.

20 For each man that doeth evil, hateth the light; and he cometh not to the light, that his works be not reprov'd.

21 But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his works be showed, that they be done in God.

22 After these things Jesus came, and his disciples, into the land of Judea, and there he dwelled with them, and baptized.

23 And John was baptizing in Aenon, beside Salim, for many waters were there; and they came, and were baptized [*or christened*].

24 And John was not yet sent into prison.

25 Therefore a question was made of John's disciples with the Jews, of the purification, [*or cleansing*].

26 And they came to John, and said to him, Master [*or Rabbi*], he that was with thee beyond [*or over*] Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witnessing, lo! he baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John answered, and said, A man may not take anything, but it be given to him from heaven.

28 Ye yourselves bear witnessing to me, that I said, I am not Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath a wife, is the husband [*or the spouse*]; but the friend of the spouse that standeth, and heareth him, joyeth with joy, for the voice of the spouse. Therefore in this thing my joy is fulfilled.

30 It behooveth him to wax, but me to be made less [*or to be diminished*].

31 He that came from above, is above all; he that is of the earth, speaketh of the earth; he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32 And he witnesseth that thing that he hath seen, and heard, and no man taketh his witnessing.

33 But he that taketh his witnessing, hath confirmed that God is soothfast.

34 But he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God; for not to measure God giveth the Spirit.

<sup>35</sup> The Father loveth the Son, and he hath given all things into his hand.

<sup>36</sup> He that believeth in the Son, hath everlasting life; but he that is unbelievful to the Son, shall not see everlasting life, but the wrath of God dwelleth on him.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore as Jesus knew, that the Pharisees heard, that Jesus maketh and baptizeth more disciples than John,

<sup>2</sup> though Jesus baptized not, but his disciples,

<sup>3</sup> he left Judea, and went again into Galilee.

<sup>4</sup> And it behooved him to pass by Samaria.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore Jesus came into a city of Samaria, that is called Sychar, beside the place [*or the field*] that Jacob gave to Joseph, his son.

<sup>6</sup> And the well of Jacob was there; and Jesus was weary of the journey, and sat thus upon the well. And the hour was, as it were the sixth.

<sup>7</sup> And a woman came from Samaria, to draw water. And Jesus saith to her, Give me drink.

<sup>8</sup> And his disciples were gone into the city, to buy meat.

<sup>9</sup> Therefore that woman of Samaria saith to him, How thou, that art a Jew, askest of me a drink, that am a woman of Samaria? for [*the*] Jews used not to deal with [*the*] Samaritans.

<sup>10</sup> Jesus answered, and said to her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is, that saith to thee, Give me drink, thou peradventure wouldest have asked of him, and he should have given to thee quick water.

<sup>11</sup> The woman saith to him, Sire, thou hast not wherein to draw, and the pit is deep; whereof then hast thou quick water?

<sup>12</sup> Whether thou art greater than our father Jacob, that gave to us the pit? and he drank thereof, and his sons, and his beasts.

<sup>13</sup> Jesus answered, and said to her, Each man that drinketh of this water, shall thirst again;

<sup>14</sup> but he that drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall not thirst without end; but the water that I shall give him, shall be made in him a well of water, springing up into everlasting life.

<sup>15</sup> The woman saith to him, Sire, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

<sup>16</sup> Jesus saith to her, Go, call thine husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I have none husband [*or I have not an husband*]. Jesus saith to her, Thou saidest well, That I have none husband [*or I have not an husband*];

18 for thou hast had five husbands, and he that thou hast [*now*], is not thine husband. This thing thou saidest soothly.

19 The woman saith to him, Lord, I see, that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this hill, and ye say, that at Jerusalem is a place, where it behooveth to worship.

21 Jesus saith to her, Woman, believe thou to me, for the hour shall come, when neither in this hill, neither in Jerusalem, ye shall worship the Father.

22 Ye worship that that ye know not; we worship that that we know; for health is of the Jews.

23 But the time is come, and now it is, when true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth; for also the Father seeketh such, that worship him.

24 God is a Spirit, and it behooveth them that worship him, to worship in spirit and truth.

25 The woman saith to him, I know that Messiah is come, that is said Christ; therefore when he cometh, he shall tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith to her, I am he [*or I am*], that speaketh with thee.

27 And anon his disciples came, and wondered, that he spake with the woman; nevertheless no man said to him, What seekest thou, or, What speakest thou with her?

28 Therefore the woman left her water pot, and went into the city, and said to the men,

29 Come ye, and see a man, that said to me all things that I have done; whether he be Christ?

30 And they went out of the city, and came to him.

31 In the meanwhile his disciples prayed him, and said, Master [*or Rabbi*], eat.

32 But he said to them, I have meat to eat, that ye know not.

33 Therefore the disciples said together, Whether any man hath brought him meat to eat?

34 Jesus saith to them, My meat is that I do the will of him that sent me, [*and*] that I perform the work of him.

35 Whether ye say not, that yet four months be, and ripe corn cometh? Lo! I say to you, lift up your eyes, and see ye the fields, for now they be white to reap.

36 And he that reapeth taketh hire, and gathereth fruit into everlasting life; that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, have joy together.

<sup>37</sup> In this thing is the word true, For one is that soweth, and another that reapeth.

<sup>38</sup> I sent you to reap, that that ye have not travailed; other men have travailed, and ye have entered into their travails.

<sup>39</sup> And of that city many [*of the*] Samaritans believed in him, for the word of the woman, that bare witnessing, That he said to me all things that I have done.

<sup>40</sup> Therefore when Samaritans came to him, they prayed him to dwell there; and he dwelt there two days.

<sup>41</sup> And many more believed for his word,

<sup>42</sup> and said to the woman, That now not for thy speech we believe; for we have heard, and we know, that this is verily the Saviour of the world.

<sup>43</sup> And after two days he went out from thence, and went into Galilee.

<sup>44</sup> And he bare witnessing, that a prophet in his own country hath none honour, [*or worship*].

<sup>45</sup> Therefore when he came into Galilee, men of Galilee received him, when they had seen all things that he had done in Jerusalem in the feast day; for also they had come to the feast day.

<sup>46</sup> Therefore he came again into the Cana of Galilee, where he made the water [*into*] wine. And there was a little king, whose son was sick at Capernaum.

<sup>47</sup> When this had heard, that Jesus should come from Judea into Galilee, he went to him, and prayed him, that he should come down, and heal his son; for he began to die.

<sup>48</sup> Therefore Jesus said to him, But ye see tokens, and great wonders, ye believe not.

<sup>49</sup> The little king saith to him, Lord, come down, before that my son die.

<sup>50</sup> Jesus saith to him, Go, thy son liveth. The man believed to the word, that Jesus said to him, and he went.

<sup>51</sup> And now when he came down, the servants came to meet him, and told to him, and said, That his son lived.

<sup>52</sup> And he asked of them the hour, in which he was amended. And they said to him, For yesterday in the seventh hour the fever left him.

<sup>53</sup> Therefore the father knew, that that hour it was, in which Jesus said to him, Thy son liveth; and he believed, and all his house.

<sup>54</sup> Jesus did again this second token, when he came from Judea into Galilee.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> After these things there was a feast day of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

<sup>2</sup> And in Jerusalem is a washing place, that in Hebrew is called Bethesda, and hath five porches. [*Forsooth at Jerusalem is a standing water of beasts, that in Hebrew is called Bethesda, having five little gates, or entries.*]

<sup>3</sup> In these lay a great multitude of sick men, blind, crooked, and dry, abiding the moving [*or the stirring*] of the water.

<sup>4</sup> For the angel of the Lord came down certain times into the [*standing*] water, and the water was moved; and he that first came down into the cistern, after the moving of the water, was made whole of whatever sickness he was held.

<sup>5</sup> And a man was there, having eight and thirty years in his sickness.

<sup>6</sup> And when Jesus had seen him lying, and had known, that he had much time, he saith to him, Wilt thou be made whole?

<sup>7</sup> The sick man answered to him, Lord, I have no man, that when the water is moved [*or troubled*], to put me into the cistern; for while I come, another goeth down before me.

<sup>8</sup> Jesus saith to him, Rise up, take thy bed, and go.

<sup>9</sup> And anon the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and went forth. And it was sabbath in that day.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore the Jews said to him that was made whole, It is sabbath, it is not leaveful to thee, to take away thy bed.

<sup>11</sup> He answered to them, He that made me whole, said to me, Take thy bed, and go.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore they asked him, What man is that [*or Who is that man*], that said to thee, Take up thy bed, and go?

<sup>13</sup> But he that was made whole, wist not who it was. And Jesus bowed away from the people, that was set in the place.

<sup>14</sup> Afterward Jesus found him in the temple, and said to him, Lo! thou art made whole; now do not thou do sin [*or now do not thou sin*], lest any worse thing befall to thee.

<sup>15</sup> That man went, and told to the Jews, that it was Jesus that made him whole.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore the Jews pursued Jesus, for he did this thing in the sabbath.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered to them, My Father worketh till now, and I work.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore the Jews sought more to slay him, for not only he brake the sabbath, but he said that God was his Father, and made him even to God.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore Jesus answered, and said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son may not of himself do anything,

but that thing that he seeth the Father doing; for whatever things he doeth, the Son doeth in like manner those things.

<sup>20</sup> For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth to him all things that he doeth; and he shall show to him greater works than these, that ye wonder.

<sup>21</sup> For as the Father raiseth dead men, and quickeneth, so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

<sup>22</sup> For neither the Father judgeth any man, but hath given every doom to the Son,

<sup>23</sup> that all men honour the Son, as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father that sent him.

<sup>24</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, that he that heareth my word, and believeth in him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and he cometh not into doom, but passeth from death into life.

<sup>25</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, for the hour cometh, and now it is, when dead men shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear, shall live.

<sup>26</sup> For as the Father hath life in him-self, so he gave to the Son, to have life in himself;

<sup>27</sup> and he gave to him power to make doom, for he is man's Son.

<sup>28</sup> Do not ye wonder in this, for the hour cometh, in which all men that be in burials, shall hear the voice of God's Son.

<sup>29</sup> And they that have done good things, shall go into again-rising of life; but they that have done evil things, into again-rising of doom.

<sup>30</sup> I may nothing do of myself, but as I hear, I deem, [*or I may not of myself do anything, but as I hear, I judge*], and my doom is just, for I seek not my will, but the will of the Father that sent me.

<sup>31</sup> If I bear witnessing of myself, my witnessing is not true;

<sup>32</sup> another is that beareth witnessing of me, and I know that his witnessing is true, that he beareth of me.

<sup>33</sup> Ye sent to John, and he bare witnessing to [*the*] truth.

<sup>34</sup> But I take not witnessing of man; but I say these things, that ye be safe.

<sup>35</sup> He was a lantern burning and shining, [*or giving light*]; but ye would glad, *or joy*, at an hour in his light.

<sup>36</sup> But I have more witnessing than John, for the works that my Father gave to me to perform them [*or the works that my Father gave me that I perform them*], those works that I do bear wit-nessing of me, that the Father sent me.

<sup>37</sup> And the Father that sent me, he bare witnessing of me. Neither ye heard ever his voice, neither ye saw his likeness, [*or form*].

<sup>38</sup> And ye have not his word dwelling in you; for ye believe not to him, whom he sent.

<sup>39</sup> Seek ye the scriptures, in which ye guess to have everlasting life; and those it be, that bear witnessing of me.

<sup>40</sup> And ye will not come to me, that ye have life.

<sup>41</sup> I take not clearness of men;

<sup>42</sup> but I have known you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

<sup>43</sup> I came in the name of my Father, and ye took not me. If another come in his own name, ye shall receive him.

<sup>44</sup> How may ye believe, that receive glory each of other, and ye seek not the glory that is of God alone?

<sup>45</sup> Do not ye guess, that I am to accuse you with the Father; it is Moses that accuseth you, in whom ye hope.

<sup>46</sup> For if ye believed to Moses, peradventure ye should believe also to me; for he wrote of me.

<sup>47</sup> But if ye believe not to his letters, how shall ye believe to my words?

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, that is Tiberias.

<sup>2</sup> And a great multitude pursued him; for they saw the tokens that he did on them that were sick.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore Jesus went into an hill, and sat there with his disciples.

<sup>4</sup> And the pask was full nigh, a feast day of the Jews.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore when Jesus had lifted up his eyes, and had seen, that a great multitude came to him, he saith to Philip, Whereof shall we buy loaves, that these men eat?

<sup>6</sup> But he said this thing, tempting him; for he knew what he was to do.

<sup>7</sup> Philip answered to him, The loaves of two hundred pence suffice not to them, that each man take a little what.

<sup>8</sup> One of his disciples, Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, saith to him,

<sup>9</sup> A child is here, that hath five barley loaves and two fishes; but what be these among so many?

<sup>10</sup> Therefore Jesus saith, Make them sit to [*or at*] the meat. And there was much hay in the place. And so men sat to [*or at*] the meat, as five thousand in number.

<sup>11</sup> And Jesus took [*the*] five loaves, and when he had done thankings, he parted to the men that sat at the meat, and also of the fishes, as much as they would.

<sup>12</sup> And when they were [*full*]-filled or [*ful*] filled, he said to his disciples, Gather ye the remnants that be left, that they perish not.

<sup>13</sup> And so they gathered, and filled twelve coffins, of the remnants of the five barley loaves and two fishes, that left to them that had eaten.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore those men, when they had seen the sign [*or the token, or miracle*], that he had done, said, For this is verily the prophet, that is to come into the world.

<sup>15</sup> And when Jesus had known, that they were to come to take him, and make him king, he flew [*or fled*] alone again into an hill.

<sup>16</sup> And when eventide was come, his disciples went down to the sea.

<sup>17</sup> And they went up into a boat, and they came over the sea into Capernaum. And darkneses were made then, and Jesus was not [*or had not*] come to them.

<sup>18</sup> And for a great wind blew, the sea rose up.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore when they had rowed as five and twenty furlongs or thirty, they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and to be nigh the boat; and they dreaded.

<sup>20</sup> And he said to them, I am; do not ye dread.

<sup>21</sup> Therefore they would take him into the boat, and anon the boat was at the land, to which they went.

<sup>22</sup> On the tother day, the people, that stood over the sea, saw, that there was none other boat there but that one, and that Jesus entered not with his disciples into the boat, but his disciples alone went [*or went alone*].

<sup>23</sup> But other boats came from Tiberias beside the place, where they had eaten bread, and did thankings to God.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore when the people had seen, that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they went up into boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus.

<sup>25</sup> And when they had found him over the sea, they said to him, Rabbi, how camest thou hither?

<sup>26</sup> Jesus answered to them, and said, Truly, truly, I say to you ye seek me, not for ye saw the miracles, but for ye ate of the loaves, and were [*ful*] filled.

<sup>27</sup> Work ye not meat that perisheth, but that that dwelleth into everlasting life, which *meat* man's Son shall give to you; for God the Father hath marked him.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore they said to him, What shall we do, that we work the works of God?

<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered, and said to them, This is the work of God, that ye believe to him, whom he sent.



30 Therefore they said to him, What token then doest thou, that we see, and believe to thee? what workest thou?

31 Our fathers ate manna in desert, as it is written, He gave to them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Therefore Jesus saith to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, Moses gave you not bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you very bread from heaven;

33 for it is very bread that cometh down from heaven, and giveth life to the world.

34 Therefore they said to him, Lord, ever[*more*] give [*to*] us this bread.

35 And Jesus said to them, I am bread of life; he that cometh to me, shall not hunger; and he that believeth in me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said to you, that ye have seen me, and ye believe not.

37 All thing that the Father giveth to me, shall come to me; and I shall not cast him out, that cometh to me.

38 For I came down from heaven, not that I do my will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the will of the Father that sent me, that all thing that the Father gave to me, I lose not [*or nought*] of it, but again-raise it in the last day.

40 And this is the will of my Father that sent me, that each man that seeth the Son, and believeth in him, have everlasting life; and I shall again-raise him in the last day.

41 Therefore the Jews grutched of him, for he had said, I am bread that came down from heaven.

42 And they said, Whether this is not Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we have known. How then saith he this, That I came down from heaven?

43 Therefore Jesus answered, and said to them, Do not ye grutch together.

44 No man may come to me, but if [*or no but*] the Father that sent me, draw him; and I shall again-raise him in the last day.

45 It is written in the prophets, And all men shall be able to be taught of God. Each man that hath heard of the Father, and hath learned, cometh to me.

46 Not for any man hath seen the Father, but this that is of God, hath seen the Father.

47 Soothly, soothly, I say to you, he that believeth in me, hath everlasting life.

48 I am [*the*] bread of life.

49 Your fathers ate manna in desert, and be dead.

50 This is bread coming down from heaven, that if any man eat thereof, he die not.

51 I am living bread, that came down from heaven. If any man eat of this bread, he shall live without end. And the bread that I shall give, is my flesh for the life of the world.

52 Therefore the Jews chided together, and said, How may this give to us his flesh to eat?

53 Therefore Jesus saith to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, but ye eat the flesh of man's Son, and drink his blood, ye shall not have life in you.

54 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath everlasting life, and I shall again-raise him in the last day.

55 For my flesh is very meat, and my blood is very drink.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As my Father living sent me, and I live for the Father, and he that eateth me, he shall live for me.

58 This is bread, that came down from heaven. Not as your fathers ate manna, and be dead; he that eateth this bread, shall live without end.

59 He said these things in the syna-gogue, teaching in Capernaum.

60 Therefore many of his disciples hearing [*this*], said, This word is hard, who may hear it?

61 But Jesus witting at [*or within*] himself, that his disciples grutched of this thing, said to them, This thing offendeth you?

62 Therefore if ye see man's Son ascending [*or going up*], where he was before?

63 It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I have spoken to you, be spirit and life.

64 But there be some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, which were believing, and who was to betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore I said to you, that no man may come to me, but it were given to him of my Father.

66 From this time many of his disciples went aback, and went not now with him.

67 Therefore Jesus said to the twelve, Whether ye will also go away?

68 And Simon Peter answered to him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast words of everlasting life;

69 and we believe, and have known, [*or we have believed, and know*], that thou art Christ, the Son of God.

70 Therefore Jesus answered to them, Whether I chose not you twelve, and one of you is a fiend?

<sup>71</sup> And he said this of Judas of Simon Iscariot, for this was to betray him, when he was one of the twelve.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> After these things Jesus walked into Galilee, for he would not walk into Judea, for the Jews sought to slay him.

<sup>2</sup> And there was nigh a feast day of the Jews, Scenopegia, [*that is, a feast of tabernacles*].

<sup>3</sup> And his brethren said to him, Pass from hence, and go into Judea, that also thy disciples see thy works that thou doest;

<sup>4</sup> for no man doeth anything in huddles, and himself seeketh to be open, [*+or forsooth no man doeth anything in hid place, or privy, and he seeketh to be in open*]. If thou doest these things, show thyself to the world.

<sup>5</sup> For neither his brethren believed in him.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore Jesus saith to them, My time came not yet, but your time is evermore ready.

<sup>7</sup> The world may not hate you, soothly it hateth me; for I bear witnessing thereof, that the works of it be evil.

<sup>8</sup> Go ye up to this feast day, but I shall not go up to this feast day, for my time is not yet fulfilled [*or full-filled*].

<sup>9</sup> When he had said these things, he dwelt in Galilee.

<sup>10</sup> And after that his brethren were gone up, then he went up to the feast day, not openly, but as in private.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore the Jews sought him in the feast day, and said, Where is he?

<sup>12</sup> And much grutching was of him among the people. For some said, That he is good; and others said, Nay, but he deceiveth the people;

<sup>13</sup> nevertheless no man spake openly of him, for dread of the Jews.

<sup>14</sup> But when the middle feast day came, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

<sup>15</sup> And the Jews wondered, and said, How knoweth this *man* letters, since he hath not learned?

<sup>16</sup> Jesus answered to them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

<sup>17</sup> If any man will do his will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it be of God, or I speak of myself.

<sup>18</sup> He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory; but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, is soothfast, and unrightwiseness is not in him.

<sup>19</sup> Whether Moses gave not to you a law, and none of you doeth [*or keep-eth*] the law? What seek ye to slay me?

<sup>20</sup> And the people answered, and said, Thou hast a devil; who seeketh to slay thee?

<sup>21</sup> Jesus answered, and said to them, I have done one work, and all ye wonder.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore Moses gave to you circumcision; not for it is of Moses, but of the fathers; and in the sabbath ye circumcise a man.

<sup>23</sup> If a man take circumcision in the sabbath, that the law of Moses be not broken, have ye indignation, [*for wrath*], to me, for I made all a man whole in the sabbath?

<sup>24</sup> Do not ye deem after the face, but deem ye a rightful doom.

<sup>25</sup> Therefore some of Jerusalem said, Whether this is not he, whom the Jews seek to slay?

<sup>26</sup> and lo! he speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him. Whether the princes know verily that this is Christ?

<sup>27</sup> But we know this *man*, of whence he is; but when Christ shall come, no man knoweth of whence he is.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore Jesus cried in the temple teaching, and said, Ye know me, and ye know of whence I am; and I came not of myself, but he is true that sent me, whom ye know not.

<sup>29</sup> I know him, and if I say that I know him not, I shall be like to you, a liar; but I know him, for of him I am, and he sent me.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore they sought to take him, and no man set on him hands, for his hour came not yet.

<sup>31</sup> And many of the people believed in him, and said, When Christ shall come, whether he shall do more tokens than those that this doeth?

<sup>32</sup> The Pharisees heard the people musing of him, these things; and the princes and the Pharisees sent min-isters, to take him.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore Jesus said to them, Yet a little time I am with you, and I go to the Father, that sent me.

<sup>34</sup> Ye shall seek me, and ye shall not find *me*; and where I am, ye may not come.

<sup>35</sup> Therefore the Jews said to them-selves, Whither shall this go, for we shall not find him? whether he will go into the scattering of heathen men, and will teach the heathen?

<sup>36</sup> What is this word, which he said, Ye shall seek me, and ye shall not find *me*; and where I am, ye may not come?

<sup>37</sup> But in the last day of the great feast, Jesus stood, and cried, and said, If any man thirsteth, come he to me, and drink.

<sup>38</sup> He that believeth in me, as the scripture saith, Floods of quick water shall flow out of his womb.

<sup>39</sup> But he said this thing of the Spirit [*or of the Holy Ghost*], whom men that believed in him should take; for the Spirit was not yet given, for Jesus was not yet glorified.

<sup>40</sup> Therefore of that company, when they had heard these words of him, they said, This is verily a prophet.

<sup>41</sup> Others said, This is Christ. But some said, Whether Christ cometh from Galilee?

<sup>42</sup> Whether the scripture saith not, that of the seed of David, and of the castle of Bethlehem, where David was, Christ cometh?

<sup>43</sup> Therefore dissension was made among the people for him.

<sup>44</sup> And some of them would have taken him, but no man set hands on him.

<sup>45</sup> Therefore the ministers came to the bishops, and Pharisees, and they said to them, Why brought ye not him?

<sup>46</sup> The ministers answered, Never man spake so, as this *man* speaketh.

<sup>47</sup> Therefore the Pharisees answered to them, Whether ye be deceived also?

<sup>48</sup> whether any of the princes, or of the Pharisees believed in him?

<sup>49</sup> But this people, that knoweth not the law, be cursed.

<sup>50</sup> Nicodemus saith to them, he that came to him by night, that was one of them,

<sup>51</sup> Whether our law deemeth a man, but it have first heard of him [*or no but first it have heard of him*], and know what he doeth?

<sup>52</sup> They answered, and said to him, Whether thou art a man of Galilee also? Seek thou scriptures, and see thou, that a prophet riseth not of Galilee.

<sup>53</sup> And they turned again, each into his house.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But Jesus went into the mount of Olivet.

<sup>2</sup> And early again he came into the temple; and all the people came to him; and he sat, and taught them.

<sup>3</sup> And scribes and Pharisees brought a woman taken in adultery, and they setted her in the middle,

<sup>4</sup> and said to him, Master, this woman is now taken in adultery.

<sup>5</sup> And in the law Moses commanded us to stone such; therefore what sayest thou?

<sup>6</sup> And they said this thing tempting him, that they might accuse him. And Jesus bowed himself down, and wrote with his finger in the earth.

<sup>7</sup> And when they abided [*or con-tinued*] asking him, he raised himself, and said to them, He of you that is without sin, first cast a stone into her.

<sup>8</sup> And again he bowed [*down*] himself, and wrote in the earth.

<sup>9</sup> And they hearing these things, went away one after another, and they began from the elder men; and Jesus dwelt alone, and the woman standing in the middle.

<sup>10</sup> And Jesus raised himself, and said to her, Woman, where be they that accused thee? no man hath con-demned thee.

<sup>11</sup> She said, No man, Lord. Jesus said *to her*, Neither I shall condemn thee; go thou, and now afterward do not thou sin more [*or do not thou do sin*].

<sup>12</sup> Therefore again Jesus spake to them, and said, I am the light of the world; he that pursueth me, walketh not in darkneses, but shall have the light of life.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore the Pharisees said, Thou bearest witnessing of thyself; thy witnessing is not true.

<sup>14</sup> Jesus answered, and said to them, And if I bear witnessing of myself, my witnessing is true; for I know from whence I came, and whither I go. But ye know not from whence I came, nor whither I go.

<sup>15</sup> For ye deem after the flesh, but I deem no man;

<sup>16</sup> and if I deem, my doom is true, for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

<sup>17</sup> And in your law it is written, that the witnessing of two men is true.

<sup>18</sup> I am, that bear witnessing of myself, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnessing of me.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore they said to him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Neither ye know me, nor ye know my Father; if ye knew me, peradventure ye should know also my Father.

<sup>20</sup> Jesus spake these words in the treasury, teaching in the temple; and no man took him, for his hour came not yet.

<sup>21</sup> Therefore again Jesus said to them, Lo! I go, and ye shall seek me, and ye shall die in your sin; whither I go, ye may not come.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore the Jews said, Whether he shall slay himself, for he saith, Whither I go, ye may not come?

<sup>23</sup> And he said to them, Ye be of beneath, I am of above; ye be of this world, I am not of this world.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore I said to you, that ye shall die in your sins; for if ye believe not that I am, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Therefore they said to him, Who art thou? Jesus said to them, The beginning, *[or the first of all thing]*, which *[and I]* also speak to you.

26 I have many things to speak, and to deem of you, but he that sent me is soothfast; and I speak in the world these things, that I heard of him.

27 And they knew not, that he called his Father God.

28 Therefore Jesus said to them, When ye have araised man's Son, then ye shall know, that I am, and of myself I do nothing; but as my Father taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me is with me, and left me not alone; for I do ever-more those things, that be pleasing to him.

30 When he spake these things, many believed in him.

31 Therefore Jesus said to the Jews, that believed in him, If ye dwell in my word, verily, ye shall be my disciples;

32 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 Therefore the Jews answered to him, We be the seed of Abraham, and we served never to man *[or and to no man we served ever]*; how sayest thou, That ye shall be free?

34 Jesus answered to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, each man that doeth sin, is *[the]* servant of sin.

35 And the servant dwelleth not in the house without end, but the Son dwelleth without end.

36 Therefore if the Son make you free, verily, ye shall be free.

37 I know that ye be Abraham's sons, but ye seek to slay me, for my word taketh not in you.

38 I speak those things, that I saw at my Father; and ye do those things, that ye saw at your father.

39 They answered, and said to him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith to them, If ye be the sons of Abraham, do ye the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to slay me, a man that have spoken to you *[the]* truth, that I heard of God; Abraham did not this thing.

41 Ye do the works of your father. Therefore they said to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, God.

42 But Jesus saith to them, If God were your Father, soothly ye should love me; for I passed forth of God, *[or I proceeded, or came forth, of God]*, and came; for neither I came of myself, but he sent me.

43 Why know ye not my speech? for ye may not hear my word.

<sup>44</sup> Ye be of the father, the devil, and ye will do the desires of your father. He was a manslayer from the beginning, and he stood not in truth; for truth is not in him. When he speaketh leasing, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and father of it.

<sup>45</sup> But for I say truth, ye believe not to me.

<sup>46</sup> Who of you shall reprove me of sin? if I say truth, why believe ye not to me?

<sup>47</sup> He that is of God, heareth the words of God; therefore ye hear not, for ye be not of God.

<sup>48</sup> Therefore the Jews answered, and said [*to him*], Whether we say not well, that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

<sup>49</sup> Jesus answered, and said, I have not a devil, but I honour my Father, and ye have unhonoured me.

<sup>50</sup> For I seek not my glory; there is he, that seeketh, and deemeth.

<sup>51</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, if any man keep my word, he shall not taste death without end.

<sup>52</sup> Therefore the Jews said, Now we have known, that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest, If any man keep my word, he shall not taste death without end.

<sup>53</sup> Whether thou art greater than our father Abraham, that is dead, and the prophets be dead; whom makest thou thyself?

<sup>54</sup> Jesus answered, If I glorify myself, my glory is nought; my Father is, that glorifieth me, whom ye say, that he is your God.

<sup>55</sup> And ye have not known him, but I have known him; and if I say that I know him not, I shall be a liar like to you; but I know him, and I keep his word.

<sup>56</sup> Abraham, your father, gladdened [*or full out joyed*] to see my day; and he saw, and joyed.

<sup>57</sup> Then the Jews said to him, Thou hast not yet fifty years, and hast thou seen Abraham?

<sup>58</sup> Therefore Jesus said to them, Truly, truly I say to you, before that Abraham should be [*or was made*], I am.

<sup>59</sup> Therefore they took stones, to cast to him; but Jesus hid him, and went out of the temple.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus passing, saw a man blind from the birth.

<sup>2</sup> And his disciples asked him, Master, who sinned, this man, or his elders, [*or Rabbi, who sinned, this man, or his father and mother*], that he should be born blind?



<sup>3</sup> Jesus answered, Neither this man sinned, neither his elders [*or neither his father and mother*]; but that the works of God be showed in him.

<sup>4</sup> It behooveth me to work the works of him that sent me, as long as the day is [*or the while the day is*]; the night shall come, when no man may work.

<sup>5</sup> As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

<sup>6</sup> When he had said these things, he spat into the earth, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the clay on his eyes,

<sup>7</sup> and said to him, Go, and be thou washed in the water, [*or cistern*], of Siloam, that is to say, Sent. Then he went, and washed, and came seeing.

<sup>8</sup> And so neighbours, and they that had seen him before, for he was a beggar, said, Whether this is not he, that sat, and begged?

<sup>9</sup> Other men said, That this it is; and other men said, Nay, but he is like him. But he said, That I am [*he*].

<sup>10</sup> Therefore they said to him, How be thine eyes opened?

<sup>11</sup> He answered, That man, that is said Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said to me, Go thou to the water, [*or cistern*], of Siloam, and wash; and I went, and washed, and saw.

<sup>12</sup> And they said to him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

<sup>13</sup> They led him that was blind to the Pharisees.

<sup>14</sup> And it was sabbath, when Jesus made clay, and opened his eyes.

<sup>15</sup> Again the Pharisees asked him, how he had seen. And he said to them, He laid [*or put*] to me clay on the eyes; and I washed, and I see.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore some of the Pharisees said, This man is not of God, that keepeth not the sabbath. Other men said, How may a sinful man do these signs, [*or miracles*]. And strife [*or division*] was among them.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore they said again to the blind man, What sayest thou of him, that opened thine eyes? And he said, That he is a prophet.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore the Jews believed not of him, that he was blind, and had seen, till they called his father and mother, that had seen.

<sup>19</sup> And they asked them, and said, Is this your son, which ye say was born blind? how then seeth he now?

<sup>20</sup> His father and mother answered to them, and said, We know, that this is our son, and that he was born blind;

<sup>21</sup> but how he seeth now, we know not, or who opened his eyes, we know not; ask ye him, he hath age, speak he of himself.

<sup>22</sup> His father and mother said these things, for they dreaded the Jews; for then the Jews had conspired, that if any man acknowledged him Christ, he should be done out of the synagogue.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore his father and mother said, That he hath age, ask ye him.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore again they called the man, that was blind, and said to him, Give thou glory to God; we know, that this man is a sinner.

<sup>25</sup> Then he said, If he is a sinner, I know not; one thing I know, that when I was blind, now I see.

<sup>26</sup> Therefore they said to him, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

<sup>27</sup> He answered to them, I said to you now, and ye heard; what will ye again hear? whether ye will be made his disciples?

<sup>28</sup> Therefore they cursed him, and said, Be thou his disciple; we be [*the*] disciples of Moses.

<sup>29</sup> We know, that God spake to Moses; but we know not this, of whence he is.

<sup>30</sup> That man answered, and said to them, For in this is a wonderful thing, that ye know not, of whence he is, and he hath opened mine eyes.

<sup>31</sup> And we know, that God heareth not sinful men, but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, he heareth him.

<sup>32</sup> From the world it is not heard, that any man opened the eyes of a blind-born man;

<sup>33</sup> but this *man* were of God, he might not do anything.

<sup>34</sup> They answered, and said to him, Thou art all born in sins, and teachest thou us? [*or thou teachest us?*] And they put him out.

<sup>35</sup> Jesus heard, that they had put him out; and when he had found him, he said to him, Believest thou in the Son of God?

<sup>36</sup> He answered, and said, Lord, who is he, that I believe in him?

<sup>37</sup> And Jesus said to him, And thou hast seen him, and he it is, that speaketh with thee.

<sup>38</sup> And he said, Lord, I believe. And he fell down, and worshipped him.

<sup>39</sup> Therefore Jesus said to him, I came into this world, in doom, that they that see not, see, and they that see, be made blind.

<sup>40</sup> And some of the Pharisees heard, that were with him, and they said to him, Whether we be blind?

<sup>41</sup> Jesus said to them, If ye were blind, ye should not have sin; but now ye say, That we see, your sin dwelleth still.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, he that cometh not in by the door into the fold of *[the]* sheep, but ascendeth *[or goeth up]* by another way, is a night thief and a day thief.

<sup>2</sup> But he that entereth by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep.

<sup>3</sup> To this the porter openeth, and the sheep hear his voice, and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

<sup>4</sup> And when he hath done out *[or hath sent out]* his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep pursue him; for they know his voice.

<sup>5</sup> But they pursue not an alien, but flee from him; for they have not known the voice of aliens.

<sup>6</sup> Jesus said to them this proverb; but they knew not what he spake to them.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore Jesus said to them again, Truly, truly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep.

<sup>8</sup> As many as have come, were night thieves and day thieves, but the sheep heard not them.

<sup>9</sup> I am the door. If any man shall enter by me, he shall be saved; and he shall go in, and shall go out, and he shall find pastures.

<sup>10</sup> A night thief cometh not, but that he steal, slay, and lose; and I came, that they have life, and have more plenteously.

<sup>11</sup> I am a good shepherd; a good shepherd giveth his life for his sheep.

<sup>12</sup> But an hired hind, and that is not the shepherd, whose be not the sheep his own *[or whose the sheep be not his own]*, seeth a wolf coming, and he leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf ravisheth, and disperseth, *[or scattereth]*, the sheep.

<sup>13</sup> And the hired hind fleeth, for he is an hired hind, and it pertaineth not to him of the sheep.

<sup>14</sup> I am a good shepherd, and I know my sheep, and my sheep know me.

<sup>15</sup> As the Father hath known me, I know the Father; and I put my life for my sheep.

<sup>16</sup> I have other sheep, that be not of this fold, and it behooveth me to bring them together, and they shall hear

my voice; and there shall be made one fold and one shepherd.

17 Therefore the Father loveth me, for I put my life, that again I take it.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I put it of myself. I have power to put it, and I have power to take it again. This commandment I have taken of my Father.

19 Again dissension was made among the Jews for these words.

20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and maddeth, [*or waxeth mad*]; what hear ye him?

21 Other men said, These words be not of *a man* that hath a devil. Whether the devil [*or a devil*] may open the eyes of blind men?

22 But the feasts of hallowing of the temple were made in Jerusalem, and it was winter.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple, in the porch of Solomon.

24 Therefore the Jews came about him, and said to him, How long takest thou away our soul? if thou art Christ, say thou to us openly [*or plainly*].

25 Jesus answered to them, I speak to you, and ye believe not; the works that I do in the name of my Father, bear witnessing of me.

26 But ye believe not, for ye be not of my sheep.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they pursue me.

28 And I give to them everlasting life, and they shall not perish without end, and none shall ravish them out of mine hand.

29 That thing that my Father gave to me, is more than all things; and no man may ravish from my Father's hand.

30 I and the Father be one.

31 The Jews took up stones, to stone him.

32 Jesus answered to them, I have showed to you many good works of my Father, for which work of them stone ye me?

33 The Jews answered to him, We stone thee not of good work, but of blasphemy, and for thou, since thou art a man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered to them, Whether it is not written in your law, That I said, Ye be gods?

35 If he said that they were gods, to whom the word of God was made, and the scripture may not be undone,

<sup>36</sup> that that the Father hath hallowed, and hath sent into the world, ye say, That thou blasphemest, for I said, I am God's Son?

<sup>37</sup> If I do not the works of my Father, do not ye believe to me;

<sup>38</sup> but if I do, though ye will not believe to me, believe ye to the works; that ye know and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in the Father.

<sup>39</sup> Therefore they sought to take him, and he went out of their hands.

<sup>40</sup> And he went again over Jordan, into that place where John was first baptizing, and he dwelt there.

<sup>41</sup> And many came to him, and said, For John did no miracle [*or sign*]; and all things whatever John said of this, were sooth.

<sup>42</sup> And many believed in him.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And there was a sick man, Lazarus of Bethany, of the castle of Mary and Martha, his sisters.

<sup>2</sup> And it was Mary, which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hairs, whose brother Lazarus was sick.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore his sisters sent to him, and said, Lord, lo! he whom thou lovest, is sick.

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus heard, and said to them, This sickness is not to the death, but for the glory of God, that man's Son be glorified by him [*or that God's Son be glorified by it*].

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus loved Martha, and her sister Mary, and Lazarus.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore when Jesus heard, that he was sick, then he dwelled in the same place two days.

<sup>7</sup> And after these things he said to his disciples, Go we again into Judea.

<sup>8</sup> The disciples say to him, Master [*or Rabbi*], now the Jews sought to stone thee, and again goest thou thither?

<sup>9</sup> Jesus answered, Whether there be not twelve hours of the day? If any man wander in the day [*or Whoever walketh in the day*], he hurteth not, for he seeth the light of this world.

<sup>10</sup> But if he wander in the night, he stumbleth, for light is not in him.

<sup>11</sup> He said these things, and after these things he saith to them, Lazarus, our friend, sleepeth, but I go to raise him from sleep.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore his disciples said, Lord, if he sleepeth, he shall be safe.

13 But Jesus had said of his death; but they guessed, that he said of [*the*] sleeping of sleep.

14 Then therefore Jesus said to them openly, Lazarus is dead;

15 and I have joy for you, that ye believe, for I was not there; but go we to him.

16 Therefore Thomas, that is said Didymus, said to even-disciples, Go we also, that we die with him.

17 And so Jesus came, and found him having then four days in the grave.

18 And Bethany was beside Jerusalem, as it were fifteen furlongs.

19 And many of the Jews came to Mary and Martha, to comfort them of their brother.

20 Therefore as Martha heard, that Jesus came, she ran to him; but Mary sat at home.

21 Therefore Martha said to Jesus, Lord, if thou haddest been here, my brother had not be dead.

22 But now I know, that whatever things thou shalt ask of God, God shall give to thee.

23 Jesus saith to her, Thy brother shall rise again.

24 Martha saith to him, I know, that he shall rise again in the again-rising in the last day.

25 Jesus saith to her, I am again-rising and life; he that believeth in me, yea, though he be dead, he shall live;

26 and each that liveth [*for all that liveth*], and believeth in me, shall not die without end. Believest thou this thing?

27 She saith to him, Yea, Lord, I have believed, that thou art Christ, the Son of the living God, that hast come into this world.

28 And when she had said this thing, she went, and called Mary, her sister, in silence, and said, The Master is come, and calleth thee.

29 She, as she heard, arose anon, and came to him.

30 And Jesus came not yet into the castle, but he was yet in that place, where Martha had come to meet him.

31 Therefore the Jews that were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose swiftly, and went out, they pursued her, and said, For she goeth to the grave, to weep there.

32 But when Mary was come where Jesus was, she seeing him felled down to his feet, and said to him, Lord, if thou haddest been here, my brother had not be dead.

33 Therefore when Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews weeping that were with her, he made noise in spirit, and troubled himself,

<sup>34</sup> and said, Where have ye laid him? They said to him, Lord, come, and see.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus wept.

<sup>36</sup> Therefore the Jews said, Lo! how he loved him.

<sup>37</sup> And some of them said, Whether this *man* that opened the eyes of the born-blind *man*, might not make that this should not die?

<sup>38</sup> Therefore Jesus again making noise in himself, came to the grave. And there was a den, and a stone was laid thereon.

<sup>39</sup> And Jesus saith, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith to him, Lord, he stinketh now, for he hath lain four days [*or soothly he is of four days dead*].

<sup>40</sup> Jesus saith to her, Have I not said to thee, that if thou believest, thou shalt see the glory of God?

<sup>41</sup> Therefore they took away the stone. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I do thankings to thee, for thou hast heard me;

<sup>42</sup> and I wist, that thou evermore hearest me, but for the people that standeth about, I said, that they believe, that thou hast sent me.

<sup>43</sup> When he had said these things, he cried with a great voice, Lazarus, come forth, [*or Lazarus, come thou out*].

<sup>44</sup> And anon he that was dead, came out, bound the hands and feet with bonds, and his face bound with a sudarium, [*or sweating cloth*]. And Jesus saith to them, Unbind ye him, and suffer ye him to go forth.

<sup>45</sup> Therefore many of the Jews that came to Mary and Martha, and saw what things Jesus did, believed in him.

<sup>46</sup> But some of them went to the Pharisees, and said to them, what things Jesus had done.

<sup>47</sup> Therefore the bishops, and the Pharisees gathered a council against Jesus, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles [*or signs*].

<sup>48</sup> If we leave him thus, all men shall believe in him; and Romans shall come, and shall take our place, and our folk.

<sup>49</sup> But one of them, Caiaphas by name, when he was bishop of that year, said to them, Ye know nothing,

<sup>50</sup> nor think, that it speedeth to you, that one man die for the people, and that all the folk perish not.

<sup>51</sup> But he said not this thing of himself, but when he was bishop of that year, he prophesied, that Jesus was to die for the folk,

<sup>52</sup> and not only for the folk, but that he should gather into one the sons of God that were scattered.

<sup>53</sup> Therefore from that day they thought for to slay him.

<sup>54</sup> Therefore Jesus walked not then openly among the Jews; but he went into a country beside [*the*] desert, into a city, that is said Ephraim, and there he dwelled with his disciples.

<sup>55</sup> And the pask of the Jews was nigh, and many of the country went up to Jerusalem before the pask, to hallow themselves.

<sup>56</sup> Therefore they sought Jesus, and spake together, standing in the temple, What guess ye, for he cometh not to the feast day?

<sup>57</sup> For the bishops, and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man know where he is, that he show, that they take him.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> Therefore Jesus before six days of pask came to Bethany, where Lazarus had been dead, whom Jesus raised.

<sup>2</sup> And they made to him a supper there, and Martha ministered to him; and Lazarus was one of the men that sat at the meat with him.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore Mary took a pound of ointment of true nard [*or spikenard*] precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hairs; and the house was full-filled with the savour of the ointment.

<sup>4</sup> Therefore Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, that was to betray him, said,

<sup>5</sup> Why is not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to poor men?

<sup>6</sup> But he said this thing, not for it pertained to him of needy men, but for he was a thief, and had the purses, and bare those things that were sent.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore Jesus said, Suffer ye her, that into the day of my burying she keep that;

<sup>8</sup> for ye shall evermore have poor men with you, but ye shall not ever-more have me.

<sup>9</sup> Therefore much people of the Jews knew, that Jesus was there; and they came, not only for Jesus, but to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from death.

<sup>10</sup> But the princes of priests thought to slay Lazarus,

<sup>11</sup> for many of the Jews went away for him, and believed in Jesus.

<sup>12</sup> But on the morrow much people, that came together to the feast day, when they had heard, that Jesus came to Jerusalem,



<sup>13</sup> took branches of palms, and came forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the king of Israel, that cometh in the name of the Lord.

<sup>14</sup> And Jesus found a young ass, and sat on him, as it is written,

<sup>15</sup> The daughter of Zion, do not thou dread; lo! thy king cometh, sitting on an ass's foal [*or on the colt of a she-ass*].

<sup>16</sup> His disciples knew not first these things, but when Jesus was glorified, then they had mind, that these things were written of him, and these things they did to him.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore the people bare witness-ing, that was with him, when he called Lazarus from the grave, and raised him from death.

<sup>18</sup> And therefore the people came, and met with him, for they heard that he had done this sign.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore the Pharisees said to themselves, Ye see, that we profit nothing; lo! all the world hath gone after him.

<sup>20</sup> And there were some heathen men, of them that had come up to worship in the feast day.

<sup>21</sup> And these came to Philip, that was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and prayed him, and said, Sire, we will see Jesus [*or we would see Jesus*].

<sup>22</sup> Philip cometh, and saith to Andrew; and again Andrew and Philip said to Jesus.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus answered to them, and said, The hour cometh, that man's Son be clarified.

<sup>24</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, but a corn of wheat fall into the earth, and be dead, it dwelleth alone; but if it be dead, it bringeth [*forth*] much fruit.

<sup>25</sup> He that loveth his life, shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world, keepeth it into everlasting life.

<sup>26</sup> If any man serve me, pursue he me; and where I am, there my minister [*or my servant*] shall be. If any man serve me, my Father shall worship him.

<sup>27</sup> Now my soul is troubled, and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour; but therefore [*or but for that thing*] I came into this hour;

<sup>28</sup> Father, clarify thy name. And a voice came from heaven, and said, And I have clarified, and again I shall clarify.

<sup>29</sup> Therefore the people that stood, and heard, said, that thunder was made; other men said, an angel spake to him.

<sup>30</sup> Jesus answered, and said, This voice came not for me, but for you.

<sup>31</sup> Now is the doom of the world, now the prince of this world shall be cast out.

32 And if I shall be enhanced from the earth, I shall draw all things to myself.

33 And he said this thing, signifying by what death he was to die.

34 And the people answered to him, We have heard of the law, that Christ dwelleth without end; and how sayest thou, It behooveth man's Son to be areared? Who is this man's Son?

35 And then Jesus saith to them, Yet a little light is in you; walk ye, the while ye have light, that darkness catch you not; he that wandereth in darknesses, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, believe ye in the light, that ye be the children of light. Jesus spake these things, and went, and hid him from them.

37 And when he had done so many miracles [*or so many signs*] before them, they believed not in him;

38 that the word of Isaiah, the prophet, should be fulfilled, which he said, Lord, who hath believed to our hearing, and to whom is the arm of the Lord showed?

39 Therefore they might not believe, for again Isaiah said,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and hath made hard the heart of them, that they see not with eyes, and understand [*not*] with heart; and that they be converted, and I heal them.

41 Isaiah said these things, when he saw the glory of him, and spake of him.

42 Nevertheless of the princes, many believed in him, but for the Pharisees they acknowledged not, that they should not be put out of the synagogue;

43 for they loved the glory of men, more than the glory of God.

44 And Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth in me, believeth not in me, but in him that sent me.

45 He that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I light came into the world, that each that believeth in me, dwell not in darknesses.

47 And if any man heareth my words, and keepeth them not, I deem him not; for I came not, that I deem the world, but that I make the world safe.

48 He that despiseth me, and taketh not my words, hath him that shall judge him; that word [*or the word*] that I have spoken, shall deem him in the last day.

49 For I have not spoken of myself, but that Father that sent me, [*he*] gave to me a commandment, what I shall say, and what I shall speak.

<sup>50</sup> And I know, that his commandment is everlasting life; therefore those things that I speak, as the Father said to me, so I speak.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> But before the feast day of pask, Jesus witting, that his hour is come, [*for Jesus witting, for his hour cometh*], that he pass from this world to the Father, when he had loved his that were in the world, into the end he loved them.

<sup>2</sup> And when the supper was made, when the devil had put then into the heart, that Judas of Simon Iscariot should betray him, [*And the supper made, when the devil had sent now into the heart of Judas of Simon Iscariot, that he should betray him,*]

<sup>3</sup> he witting that the Father gave all things to him into his hands, and that he went out from God, and goeth to God,

<sup>4</sup> he riseth from the supper, and doeth off his clothes; and when he had taken a linen cloth, he girded him.

<sup>5</sup> And afterward he put water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe with the linen cloth, with which he was girded.

<sup>6</sup> And so he came to Simon Peter, and Peter saith to him, Lord, washest thou my feet?

<sup>7</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, What I do, thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know afterward.

<sup>8</sup> Peter saith to him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered to him, If I shall not wash thee, thou shalt not have part with me.

<sup>9</sup> Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, not only my feet, but both the hands and the head.

<sup>10</sup> Jesus saith to him, He that is washed, hath no need but that he wash the feet, but he is all clean; and ye be clean, but not all.

<sup>11</sup> For he knew, who it was that should betray him; therefore he said, Ye be not all clean.

<sup>12</sup> And so after that he had washed their feet, he took his clothes; and when he was set to meat again, again he said to them, Ye know what I have done to you, [*for Know ye what I have done to you?*].

<sup>13</sup> Ye call me Master and Lord, and ye say well; for I am.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore if I, Lord and Master, have washed your feet, and ye shall wash [*or ye owe to wash*] one another's feet;

<sup>15</sup> for I have given to you ensample, that as I have done to you, so do ye.

<sup>16</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, the servant is not greater than his lord, neither an apostle is greater than he that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, ye shall be blessed, if ye do them.

18 I say not of all you, I know which I have chosen; but that the scripture be fulfilled, He that eateth my bread, shall raise his heel against me.

19 Truly, I say to you before it be done, that when it is done, ye believe that I am.

20 Truly, truly, I say to you, he that taketh whomever I shall send, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

21 When Jesus had said these things, he was troubled in spirit, and witness-ed, and said, Truly, truly, I say to you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Therefore the disciples looked together, doubting of whom he said.

23 And so one of his disciples was resting in the bosom of Jesus, whom Jesus loved.

24 Therefore Simon Peter beckoned to him, and said to him, Who is it, of whom he saith?

25 And so when he had rested again on the breast of Jesus, he saith to him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall areach a sop of bread. And when he had wet bread [*or had dipped in bread*], he gave to Judas of Simon Iscariot.

27 And after the morsel, then Satan entered into him. And Jesus saith to him, That thing that thou doest, do thou swiftly.

28 And none of them that sat at the meat knew, whereto [*or what thing*] he said to him.

29 For some guessed, for Judas had purses, that Jesus had said to him, Buy thou those things, that be needful to us to the feast day, or that he should give something to needy men.

30 Therefore when he had taken the morsel, he went out anon; and it was night.

31 Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now man's Son is clarified, and God is clarified in him.

32 If God is clarified in him, and God shall clarify him in himself, and anon he shall clarify him.

33 Little sons, yet a little I am with you; ye shall seek me, and, as I said to the Jews, Whither I go, ye may not come; and to you I say now.

34 I give to you a new commandment, that ye love together, as I have loved you, and that ye love together.

35 In this thing all men shall know, that ye be my disciples, if ye have love together.

<sup>36</sup> Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered, Whither I go, thou mayest not pursue me now, but thou shalt pursue me afterward.

<sup>37</sup> Peter saith to him, Why may I not pursue thee now? I shall put my life for thee.

<sup>38</sup> Jesus answered, Thou shalt put thy life for me? Truly, truly, I say to thee, the cock shall not crow, till thou shalt deny me thrice.

<sup>39</sup> And he saith to his disciples,

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> Be not your heart afraid, [*or disturbed, or distroubled*], nor dread it; ye believe in God, and believe ye in me.

<sup>2</sup> In the house of my Father be many dwellings; if anything less, I had said to you, for I go to make ready to you a place.

<sup>3</sup> And if I go, and make ready to you a place, again I [*shall*] come, and I shall take you to myself, that where I am, ye be.

<sup>4</sup> And whither I go, ye know, and ye know the way.

<sup>5</sup> Thomas saith to him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how may we know the way?

<sup>6</sup> Jesus saith to him, I am way, truth, and life; no man cometh to the Father, but by me.

<sup>7</sup> If ye had known me, soothly ye had known also my Father; and afterward ye shall know him, and ye have seen him.

<sup>8</sup> Philip saith to him, Lord, show to us the Father, and it sufficeth to us.

<sup>9</sup> Jesus saith to him, So long time I am with you, and have ye not known me? Philip, he that seeth me, seeth also the Father. How sayest thou, show to us the Father?

<sup>10</sup> Believest thou not, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father is in me? The words that I speak to you, I speak not of myself; but the Father himself that dwelleth in me, [*he*] doeth the works.

<sup>11</sup> Believe ye not, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me? Else believe ye for those works.

<sup>12</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, if a man believeth in me [*or he that believeth in me*], also he shall do the works that I do; and he shall do greater works than these, for I go to the Father.

<sup>13</sup> And whatever thing ye ask the Father in my name, I shall do this thing, that the Father be glorified in the Son.

<sup>14</sup> If ye ask anything in my name, I shall do it.

<sup>15</sup> If ye love me, keep ye my com-mandments.

<sup>16</sup> And I shall pray the Father, and he shall give to you another Comforter, the Spirit of truth, to dwell with you without end;

<sup>17</sup> which *Spirit* the world may not take, for it seeth him not, neither knoweth him. But ye shall know him, for he shall dwell with you, and he shall be in you.

<sup>18</sup> I shall not leave you fatherless, I shall come to you.

<sup>19</sup> Yet a little, and the world seeth not now me [*for the world seeth not me now*]; but ye shall see me, for I live, and ye shall live.

<sup>20</sup> In that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

<sup>21</sup> He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me; and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I shall love him, and I shall show to him myself.

<sup>22</sup> Judas saith to him, not he of Iscariot, Lord, what is done, that thou shalt show thyself to us, and not to the world?

<sup>23</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, If any man loveth me, he shall keep my word; and my Father shall love him, and we shall come to him, and we shall dwell with him.

<sup>24</sup> He that loveth me not, keepeth not my words; and the word which ye have heard, is not mine, but the Father's, that sent me.

<sup>25</sup> These things I have spoken to you, dwelling among you;

<sup>26</sup> but that Holy Ghost, the Comfort-er, whom the Father shall send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and shall show, [*for remember*], to you all things, whatever things I shall say to you.

<sup>27</sup> Peace I leave to you, my peace I give to you; not as the world giveth, I give to you; be not your heart afraid [*for troubled*], nor dread it.

<sup>28</sup> Ye have heard, that I said to you, I go, and come to you. If ye loved me, forsooth ye should have joy, for I go to the Father, for the Father is greater than I.

<sup>29</sup> And now I have said to you, before that it be done, that when it is done, ye believe.

<sup>30</sup> Now I shall not speak many things with you; for the prince of this world cometh, and hath not in me anything [*for he hath not anything in me*].

<sup>31</sup> But that the world know, that I love the Father; and as the Father gave a commandment to me, so I do. Rise ye, go we hence.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> I am a very vine, and my Father is an earth-tiller.

<sup>2</sup> Each branch in me that beareth not fruit, he shall take away it [*or do it away*]; and each that beareth fruit, he shall purge it, that it bear the more fruit.

<sup>3</sup> Now ye be clean, for the word that I have spoken to you.

<sup>4</sup> Dwell ye in me, and I in you; as a branch may not make fruit of itself, but it dwell in the vine, so neither ye, but ye dwell in me.

<sup>5</sup> I am the vine, ye *be* the branches. Who [*or He*] that dwelleth in me, and I in him, this beareth much fruit, for without me ye may nothing do.

<sup>6</sup> If any man dwelleth not in me, he shall be cast out as a branch, and shall wax dry; and they shall gather him, and they shall cast him into the fire, and he shall burn.

<sup>7</sup> If ye dwell in me, and my words dwell in you, whatever thing ye will, ye shall ask, and it shall be done to you.

<sup>8</sup> In this thing my Father is clarified, that ye bring forth full much fruit, and that ye be made my disciples.

<sup>9</sup> As my Father loved me, I have loved you; dwell ye in my love.

<sup>10</sup> If ye keep my commandments, ye shall dwell in my love; as I have kept the commandments of my Father, and dwell in his love.

<sup>11</sup> These things I spake to you, that my joy be in you, and your joy be full-filled.

<sup>12</sup> This is my commandment, that ye love together, as I have loved you.

<sup>13</sup> No man hath more love than this, that a man put his life for his friends.

<sup>14</sup> Ye be my friends if ye do those things, that I command to you.

<sup>15</sup> Now I shall not call you servants, for the servant knoweth not, what his lord shall do; but I have called you friends, for all things whatever I heard of my Father, I have made known to you.

<sup>16</sup> Ye have not chosen me, but I chose you; and I have put you, that ye go, and bring forth fruit, and your fruit dwell; that whatever thing ye ask the Father in my name, he give to you.

<sup>17</sup> These things I command to you, that ye love together.

<sup>18</sup> If the world hate you, know ye, that it had me in hate rather than you.

<sup>19</sup> If ye had been of the world, the world should love that thing that was his; but for ye be not of the world, but I chose you from the world, therefore the world hateth you.

<sup>20</sup> Have ye mind of my word, which I said to you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have pursued

me, they shall pursue you also; if they have kept my word, they shall keep yours also.

<sup>21</sup> But they shall do to you all these things for my name, for they know not him that sent me.

<sup>22</sup> If I had not come, and had not spoken to them, they should not have sin; but now they have none excusation [*or not excusing*] of their sin.

<sup>23</sup> He that hateth me, hateth also my Father.

<sup>24</sup> If I had not done the works in them, which none other man did, they should not have sin; but now both they have seen, and have hated me and my Father.

<sup>25</sup> But that the word be fulfilled, that is written in their law, For they had me in hate without cause.

<sup>26</sup> But when the Comforter shall come, which I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth, which cometh forth [*or proceedeth*] of the Father, he shall bear witnessing of me;

<sup>27</sup> and ye shall bear witnessing, for ye be with me from the beginning.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> These things I have spoken to you, that ye be not caused to stumble.

<sup>2</sup> They shall make you without the synagogues, but the hour cometh, that each man that slayeth you, deem that he doeth service to God.

<sup>3</sup> And they shall do to you these things, for they have not known the Father, neither me.

<sup>4</sup> But these things I spake to you, that when the hour of them shall come, ye have mind, that I said to you. I said not to you these things from the beginning, for I was with you.

<sup>5</sup> And now I go to him that sent me, and no man of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

<sup>6</sup> but for I have spoken to you these things, heaviness [*or sorrow*] hath full-filled your heart.

<sup>7</sup> But I say to you truth, it speedeth to you, that I go; for if I go not forth [*or go away*], the Comforter shall not come to you; but if I go forth [*or go away*], I shall send him to you.

<sup>8</sup> And when he cometh, he shall reprove the world of sin, and of rightwiseness, and of doom,

<sup>9</sup> Of sin, for they have not believed in me;

<sup>10</sup> and of rightwiseness, for I go to the Father, and now ye shall not see me;

<sup>11</sup> but of doom, for the prince of this world is now deemed.

<sup>12</sup> Yet I have many things to say to you, but ye may not bear them now.



<sup>13</sup> But when the Spirit of truth cometh, he shall teach you all truth; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatever things he shall hear, he shall speak; and he shall tell to you those things that be to come.

<sup>14</sup> He shall clarify me, for of mine he shall take, and shall tell to you.

<sup>15</sup> All things, whatever [*things*] the Father hath, be mine; therefore I said to you, that of mine he shall take, and shall tell to you.

<sup>16</sup> A little, and then ye shall not see me; and again a little, and ye shall see me, for I go to the Father.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore some of his disciples said together, What is this thing that he saith to us, A little, and ye shall not see me; and again a little, and ye shall see me, for I go to the Father?

<sup>18</sup> Therefore they said, What is this that he saith to us, A little? we know not what he speaketh.

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus knew, that they would ask him, and he said to them, Of this thing ye seek among you, for I said, A little, and ye shall not see me; and again a little, and ye shall see me.

<sup>20</sup> Truly, truly, I say to you, that ye shall mourn and weep, but the world shall have joy; and ye shall be sorrow-ful, but your sorrow shall turn into joy.

<sup>21</sup> A woman when she beareth child, hath heaviness [*or sorrow*], for her time is come; but when she hath born a son, now she thinketh not on the pain, for joy, for a man is born into the world.

<sup>22</sup> And therefore ye have now sorrow, but again I shall see you, and your heart shall have joy, and no man shall take from you your joy.

<sup>23</sup> And in that day ye shall not ask me anything; truly, truly, I say to you, if ye ask the Father anything in my name, he shall give [*it*] to you.

<sup>24</sup> Till now ye asked nothing in my name; ask ye, and ye shall take, that your joy be full.

<sup>25</sup> I have spoken to you these things in proverbs; the hour cometh, when now I shall not speak to you in proverbs, but openly of my Father I shall tell to you.

<sup>26</sup> In that day ye shall ask in my name; and I say not to you, that I shall pray the Father for you;

<sup>27</sup> for the Father himself loveth you, for ye have loved me, and have believed, that I went out from God.

<sup>28</sup> I went out from the Father, and I came into the world; again I leave the world, and go to the Father.

<sup>29</sup> His disciples said to him, Lo! now thou speakest openly, and thou sayest no proverb.

<sup>30</sup> Now we know, that thou know-est all things; and it is not need [*or no need*] to thee, that any man ask thee. In this thing we believe, that thou wentest out from God.

<sup>31</sup> Jesus answered to them, Now ye believe.

<sup>32</sup> Lo! the hour cometh, and now it cometh, that ye be dispersed, [*or scattered*], each into his own things, and that ye leave me alone; and I am not alone, for the Father is with me.

<sup>33</sup> These things I have spoken to you, that ye have peace in me; in the world ye shall have dis-ease, [*or have pressing, or over-laying*], but trust ye, I have overcome the world.

## CHAPTER 17

<sup>1</sup> These things Jesus spake, and when he had cast up [*or lifted up*] his eyes into heaven, he said, Father, the hour cometh, clarify thy Son, that thy Son clarify thee.

<sup>2</sup> As thou hast given to him power on each flesh, [*or man*], that all thing that thou hast given to him, he give to them everlasting life.

<sup>3</sup> And this is everlasting life, that they know thee very God alone, and whom thou hast sent, Jesus Christ.

<sup>4</sup> I have clarified thee on the earth, I have ended the work, that thou hast given to me to do.

<sup>5</sup> And now, Father, clarify thou me at thyself, with the clearness that I had at thee, before the world was made.

<sup>6</sup> I have showed thy name to those men, which thou hast given to me of the world; they were thine, and thou hast given them to me, and they have kept thy word.

<sup>7</sup> And now they have known, that all things that thou hast given to me, be of thee.

<sup>8</sup> For the words that thou hast given to me, I gave to them; and they have taken, and have known verily, that I went out from thee; and they believed, that thou sentest me.

<sup>9</sup> I pray for them, *I pray* not for the world, but for them that thou hast given to me, for they be thine.

<sup>10</sup> And all my things be thine, and thy things be mine; and I am clarified in them.

<sup>11</sup> And now I am not in the world, and these be in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in thy name, which thou hast given to me, that they be one, as we *be*.

<sup>12</sup> While I was with them, I kept them in thy name; those that thou gavest to me, I kept, and none of them perished, but the son of perdition, that the scripture be fulfilled.

<sup>13</sup> But now I come to thee, and I speak these things in the world, that they have my joy fulfilled in them-selves.

<sup>14</sup> I gave to them thy word, and the world had them in hate; for they be not of the world, as I am not of the world.

<sup>15</sup> I pray not, that thou take them away from the world, but that thou keep them from evil.

<sup>16</sup> They be not of the world, as I am not of the world.

<sup>17</sup> Hallow thou them in truth; thy word is truth.

<sup>18</sup> As thou sentest me into the world, also I sent them into the world.

<sup>19</sup> And I hallow myself for them, that also they be hallowed in truth.

<sup>20</sup> And I pray not only for them, but also for them that shall believe into me by the word of them;

<sup>21</sup> that all [*they*] be one, as thou, Father, in me, and I in thee, that also they in us be one; that the world believe, that thou hast sent me.

<sup>22</sup> And I have given to them the clearness, that thou hast given to me, that they be one, as we be one;

<sup>23</sup> I in them, and thou in me, that they be ended into one; and that the world know, that thou sentest me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved also me.

<sup>24</sup> Father, they which thou hast given to me, I will that where I am, that they be with me, that they see my clearness, that thou hast given to me; for thou lovedest me before the making of the world.

<sup>25</sup> Father, rightfully the world knew thee not [*for Rightful Father; the world knew not thee*], but I knew thee, and these knew, that thou sentest me.

<sup>26</sup> And I have made thy name known to them, and shall make known; that the love by which thou hast loved me, be in them, and I in them.

## CHAPTER 18

<sup>1</sup> When Jesus had said these things, he went out with his disciples over the strand of Kidron, where was a yard, *or a garden*, into which he entered, and his disciples.

<sup>2</sup> And Judas, that betrayed him, knew the place, for oft Jesus came thither with his disciples.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore when Judas had taken a company of knights, and ministers of the bishops, and of the Pharisees, he came thither with lanterns, and brands, and arms.

<sup>4</sup> And so Jesus witting all things that were to come on him, went forth, and said to them, Whom seek ye?

<sup>5</sup> They answered to him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith to them, I am. And Judas that betrayed him, stood with them.

<sup>6</sup> And when he said to them, I am, they went aback, and fell down on the earth.

<sup>7</sup> And again he asked them, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

<sup>8</sup> He answered to them, I said to you, that I am; therefore if ye seek me, suffer ye these to go away.

<sup>9</sup> That the word which he said should be fulfilled, For I lost not any of them, which thou hast given to me.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore Simon Peter had a sword, and drew it out, and smote the servant of the bishop, and cut off his right ear. And the name of the servant was Malchus.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore Jesus said to Peter, Put thou thy sword into thy sheath; wilt thou not, that I drink the cup, that my Father gave to me?

<sup>12</sup> Therefore the company of knights, and the tribune, and the ministers of the Jews, took Jesus, and bound him,

<sup>13</sup> and led him first to Annas; for he was [*the*] father of Caiaphas' wife, that was bishop of that year.

<sup>14</sup> And it was Caiaphas, that gave counsel to the Jews, that it speedeth, that one man die for the people.

<sup>15</sup> But Simon Peter pursued Jesus, and another disciple; and that disciple was known to the bishop. And he entered with Jesus, into the hall of the bishop;

<sup>16</sup> but Peter stood at the door with-outforth. Therefore that other disciple, that was known to the bishop, went out, and said to the woman that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

<sup>17</sup> And the damsel, keeper of the door, said to Peter, Whether thou art also of this man's disciples? He said, I am not.

<sup>18</sup> And the servants and [*the*] ministers stood at the coals, for it was cold, and they warmed them; and Peter was with them, standing and warming him.

<sup>19</sup> And the bishop asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching.

<sup>20</sup> Jesus answered to him, I have spoken openly to the world; I taught evermore in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither all the Jews came together, and in huddles [*or in private*] I spake nothing.

<sup>21</sup> What askest thou me? ask them that heard me, what I have spoken to them; lo! they know, what things I have said.

<sup>22</sup> When he had said these things, one of the ministers standing nigh, gave a buffet to Jesus, and said, Answerest thou so to the bishop?

<sup>23</sup> Jesus answered to him, If I have spoken evil, bear thou witnessing of evil; but if I said well, why smitest thou me?

<sup>24</sup> And Annas sent him bound to Caiaphas, the bishop.

<sup>25</sup> And Simon Peter stood, and warmed him; and they said to him, Whether also thou art his disciple? He denied, and said, I am not.

<sup>26</sup> One of the bishop's servants, cousin of him, whose ear Peter cut off, said, Saw I thee not in the yard with him? [*+or Whether I saw thee not in the garden with him?*]

<sup>27</sup> And Peter again denied, and anon the cock crew.

<sup>28</sup> Then they led Jesus to (or from) Caiaphas, into the moot hall; and it was early, and they entered not into the moot hall, that they should not be defouled, but that they should eat pask.

<sup>29</sup> Therefore Pilate went withoutforth to them, and said, What accusing bring ye against this man?

<sup>30</sup> They answered, and said to him, If this were not a misdoer, we had not betaken him to thee.

<sup>31</sup> Then Pilate saith to them, Take ye him, and deem ye him, after your law. And *the Jews* said to him, It is not leaveful to us, to slay any man;

<sup>32</sup> that the word of Jesus should be fulfilled, which he said, signifying by what death he should die.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore again Pilate entered into the moot hall, and called Jesus, and said to him, Art thou king of Jews?

<sup>34</sup> Jesus answered, and said to him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or others have said to thee of me?

<sup>35</sup> Pilate answered, Whether I am a Jew? Thy folk and the bishops betook thee to me; what hast thou done?

<sup>36</sup> Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world; if my kingdom were of this world, my ministers would strive, that I should not be taken to the Jews; but now my kingdom is not here.

<sup>37</sup> And so Pilate said to him, Then thou art a king. Jesus answered, Thou sayest, that I am a king. To this thing I am born, and to this I came into the world, to bear witnessing to truth. Each [*man*] that is of truth, heareth my voice.

<sup>38</sup> Pilate saith to him, What is truth? And when he had said this thing, again he went out to the Jews, and said to them, I find no cause in him [*or against him*].

<sup>39</sup> But it is a custom to you, that I deliver one to you in pask; therefore will ye that I deliver to you the king of Jews?

<sup>40</sup> All they cried again, and said, Not this, but Barabbas. And Barabbas was a thief.

## CHAPTER 19

<sup>1</sup> Therefore Pilate took then Jesus [*or Therefore then Pilate took Jesus*], and scourged him.

<sup>2</sup> And knights wreathed a crown of thorns, and set [*or put*] on his head, and did about him a cloth of purple, and came to him,

<sup>3</sup> and said, Hail, king of Jews. And they gave to him buffets.

<sup>4</sup> Again Pilate went out, and said to them, Lo! I bring him out to you, that ye know, that I find no cause in him.

<sup>5</sup> And so Jesus went out, bearing a crown of thorns, and a cloth of purple. And he saith to them, Lo! the man.

<sup>6</sup> But when the bishops and ministers had seen him, they cried, and said, Crucify, crucify him. Pilate saith to them, Take ye him, and crucify ye [*him*], for I find no cause in him.

<sup>7</sup> The Jews answered to him, We have a law, and by the law he oweth to die, for he made him God's Son.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore when Pilate had heard this word, he dreaded the more [*or he dreaded more*].

<sup>9</sup> And he went into the moot hall again, and said to Jesus, Of whence art thou? But Jesus gave none answer to him.

<sup>10</sup> Pilate saith to him, Speakest thou not to me? Knowest thou not, that I have power to crucify thee, and I have power to deliver thee?

<sup>11</sup> Jesus answered, Thou shouldest not have any power against me, but it were given to thee from above; therefore he that betook me to thee, hath the more sin.

<sup>12</sup> From that time Pilate sought to deliver him; but the Jews cried, and said, If thou deliverest this *man*, thou art not the emperor's friend [*or the friend of Caesar*]; for each man that maketh himself king, gainsaith the emperor [*or against-saith Caesar*].

<sup>13</sup> And Pilate, when he had heard these words, led Jesus forth, and sat for doomsman in a place, that is said Lycostratos, but in Hebrew Golgotha (or Gabbatha).

<sup>14</sup> And it was pask eve [*or the making ready, or even, of pask*], as it were the sixth hour, [*or midday*]. And he saith to the Jews, Lo! your king.

<sup>15</sup> But they cried, and said, Take away, take away, [*or Do away, do away*]; crucify him. Pilate saith to them, Shall I crucify your king? The bishops answered, We have no king but the emperor [*or Caesar*].

<sup>16</sup> And then Pilate betook him to them, that he should be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led *him* out.

<sup>17</sup> And he bare to himself a cross, and went out into that place, that is said Calvary, in Hebrew Golgotha;

<sup>18</sup> where they crucified him, and others twain with him, *one* on this side and *one* on that side, and Jesus in the middle.

19 And Pilate wrote a title, and set [*or put*] on the cross; and it was written, Jesus of Nazareth, king of Jews.

20 Therefore many of the Jews read this title, for the place where Jesus was crucified, was nigh the city, and it was written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin.

21 Therefore the bishops of the Jews said to Pilate, Do not thou write king of Jews, but that he said, I am king of Jews.

22 Pilate answered, That that I have written, I have written.

23 Therefore the knights when they had crucified him, took his clothes, and made four parts, to each knight a part, and a coat. And the coat was without seam, and woven all about.

24 Therefore they said together, Cut we not it, but cast we lot, whose it is; that the scripture be fulfilled, saying, They parted my clothes to them, and on my cloth they cast lot. And the knights did these things.

25 But beside the cross of Jesus stood his mother, and the sister of his mother, Mary Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 Therefore when Jesus had seen his mother, and the disciple standing, whom he loved, he saith to his mother, Woman, lo! thy son.

27 Afterward he saith to the disciple, Lo! thy mother. And from that hour the disciple took her into his *mother*.

28 Afterward Jesus witting, that now all things be ended, that the scripture were fulfilled, he saith, I thirst.

29 And a vessel was set full of vinegar or eisell. And they laid in hyssop about the sponge full of vinegar, and put to his mouth./And they took a sponge full of eisell, putting it about with hyssop, and proffered it to his mouth.

30 Therefore when Jesus had taken the vinegar, he said, It is ended. And when his head was bowed down, he gave up the ghost./And when Jesus had tasted *this* eisell, he said, It is ended. And he bowed down the head, and sent out the spirit.

31 Therefore for it was the pask eve, that the bodies should not abide [*or dwell*] on the cross in the sabbath, for that was a great sabbath day, the Jews prayed Pilate, that the hips of them should be broken, and they [*should be*] taken away.

32 Therefore knights came, and they brake the thighs of the first, and of the other, that was crucified with him.

33 But when they were come [*or had come*] to Jesus, as they saw him dead then, they brake not his thighs;

34 but one of the knights opened his side with a spear, and anon blood and water went out.

<sup>35</sup> And he that saw, bare witnessing [*thereof*], and his witnessing is true; and he knoweth that he saith true things, that ye believe.

<sup>36</sup> And these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, Ye shall not break a bone of him.

<sup>37</sup> And again another scripture saith, They shall see in whom they pierced through.

<sup>38</sup> But after these things Joseph of Arimathaea prayed Pilate, that he should take away the body of Jesus, for that he was a disciple of Jesus, but privily for dread of the Jews. And Pilate suffered. And so he came, and took away the body of Jesus.

<sup>39</sup> And Nicodemus came also, that had come to him first by night, [*for that had come to Jesus first in the night*], and brought a meddling of myrrh and aloes, as it were an hundred pound.

<sup>40</sup> And they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen clothes with sweet smelling ointments [*or spices*], as it is custom to Jews for to bury.

<sup>41</sup> And in the place where he was crucified, was a garden, and in the garden a new grave, in which yet no man was laid [*or put*].

<sup>42</sup> Therefore there they put Jesus, for the vigil of Jews' feast [*or for the making ready of Jews*], for the sepulchre was nigh.

## CHAPTER 20

<sup>1</sup> And in one day of the week, Mary Magdalene came early to the grave, when it was yet dark. And she saw the stone moved away from the grave.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore she ran, and came to Simon Peter, and to another disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith to them, They have taken the Lord from the grave, and we know not, where they have laid him.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore Peter went out, and that other disciple, and they came to the grave.

<sup>4</sup> And they twain ran together, and that other disciple ran before Peter, and came first to the grave.

<sup>5</sup> And when he stooped, he saw the sheets lying, nevertheless he entered not.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore Simon Peter came pur-suing him, and he entered into the grave, and he saw the sheets laid,

<sup>7</sup> and the sudarium that was on his head, not laid with the sheets, but by itself wrapped into a place.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore then that disciple that came first to the grave, entered, and saw, and believed.



<sup>9</sup> For they knew not yet the scripture, that it behooved him to rise again from death.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore the disciples went again to themselves.

<sup>11</sup> But Mary stood at the grave withoutforth weeping. And while she wept, she bowed her, and beheld forth into the grave.

<sup>12</sup> And she saw two angels sitting in white, one at the head and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus was laid.

<sup>13</sup> And they say to her, Woman, what weepest thou? She said to them, For they have taken away my Lord, and I know not, where they have laid him.

<sup>14</sup> When she had said these things, she turned backward [*or she turned aback*], and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

<sup>15</sup> Jesus saith to her, Woman, what weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She guessing that he was the gardener, saith to him, Sire, if thou hast taken him up, say to me, where thou hast laid him, and I shall take him away.

<sup>16</sup> Jesus saith to her, Mary. She turned, and saith to him, Rabboni, that is to say, Master.

<sup>17</sup> Jesus saith to her, Do not thou touch me, for I have not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and say to them, I ascend to my Father and to your Father, to my God and to your God.

<sup>18</sup> Mary Magdalene came, telling to the disciples, That I saw the Lord, and these things he said to me.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore when it was even [*or eventide*] in that day, [*in*] one of the sabbaths, and the gates were shut, where the disciples were gathered, for dread of the Jews, Jesus came, and stood in the middle of the disciples, and he saith to them, Peace [*be*] to you.

<sup>20</sup> And when he had said this, he showed to them [*his*] hands and side; therefore the disciples joyed, for the Lord was seen.

<sup>21</sup> And he saith to them again, Peace to you; as the Father sent me, I send you.

<sup>22</sup> When he had said this, he blew on them, and said, Take ye the Holy Ghost;

<sup>23</sup> whose sins ye forgive, those be forgiven to them; and whose sins ye withhold, those be withheld.

<sup>24</sup> But Thomas, one of the twelve, that is said Didymus, was not with them, when Jesus came.

<sup>25</sup> Therefore the other disciples said, We have seen the Lord. And he said to them, But I see in his hands the printing of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put mine hand into his side, I shall not believe.

<sup>26</sup> And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus came, while the gates were shut, and stood in the middle, and said, Peace to you.

<sup>27</sup> Afterward he saith to Thomas, Put in here thy finger, and see mine hands, and put hither thine hand, and put [*it*] into my side, and do not thou be unbelievful, but faithful.

<sup>28</sup> Thomas answered, and said to him, My Lord and my God.

<sup>29</sup> Jesus saith to him, Thomas, for thou hast seen me, thou believedest; blessed be they, that saw not, and have believed.

<sup>30</sup> And Jesus did many other signs in the sight of his disciples, which be not written in this book.

<sup>31</sup> But these be written, that ye believe, that Jesus is Christ, the Son of God, and that ye believing have life in his name.

## CHAPTER 21

<sup>1</sup> Afterward Jesus again showed him to his disciples, at the sea of Tiberias. And he showed him thus.

<sup>2</sup> There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, that is said Didymus, and Nathanael, that was of the Cana of Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and twain other of his disciples.

<sup>3</sup> Simon Peter saith to them, I go to fish. They say to him, And we come with thee. And they went out, and went into a boat. And in that night they took nothing.

<sup>4</sup> But when the morrow was come, Jesus stood in the brink; nevertheless the disciples knew not, that it was Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore Jesus saith to them, Children, whether ye have any supping thing? They answered to him, Nay.

<sup>6</sup> He said to them, Put [*or Send*] ye the net into the right half of the rowing, and ye shall find. And they putted [*or sent*] the net; and then they might not draw it for multitude of fishes.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore that disciple, whom Jesus loved, said to Peter, It is the Lord. Simon Peter, when he had heard that it is the Lord, girt him with a coat, for he was naked, and went into the sea.

<sup>8</sup> But the other disciples came by boat, for they were not far from the land, but as a two hundred cubits [*or as it were two hundred cubits*], drawing the net of fishes.

<sup>9</sup> And as they came down into the land, they saw coals lying, and fish laid on, and bread.

<sup>10</sup> Jesus saith to them, Bring ye of the fishes, which ye have taken now.

<sup>11</sup> Simon Peter went up, and drew the net into the land, full of great fishes, an hundred fifty and three; and when they were so many, the net was not broken.

<sup>12</sup> Jesus saith to them, Come ye, and eat ye. And no man of them that sat at the meat, durst ask him, Who art thou, witting that it is the Lord.

<sup>13</sup> And Jesus came, and took bread, and gave to them, and fish also.

<sup>14</sup> Now this [*is the*] third time Jesus was showed to his disciples, when he had risen again from death.

<sup>15</sup> And when they had eaten, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon of John, lovest thou me more than these? He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith to him, Feed thou my lambs.

<sup>16</sup> Again he saith to him, Simon of John, lovest thou me? He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith to him, Feed thou my lambs.

<sup>17</sup> He saith to him the third time, Simon of John, lovest thou me? Peter was heavy, [*or sorry*], for he said to him the third time, Lovest thou me, and he saith to him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith to him, Feed my sheep.

<sup>18</sup> Truly, truly, I say to thee, when thou were younger, thou girdedest thee, and wanderdest where thou wouldest; but when thou shalt wax older, thou shalt hold forth thine hands, and another shall gird thee, and shall lead thee whither thou wilt not.

<sup>19</sup> He said this thing, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had said these things, he saith to him, Pursue thou me.

<sup>20</sup> Peter turned, and saw that disciple pursuing, whom Jesus loved, which also rested in the supper on his breast, and said to *him*, Lord, who is it, that shall betray thee?

<sup>21</sup> Therefore when Peter had seen this *disciple*, he saith to Jesus, Lord, but what this?

<sup>22</sup> Jesus saith to him, So I will, that he dwell till I come, what to thee? pursue thou me.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore this word went out among the brethren, that that disciple dieth not. And Jesus said not to him, that he dieth not, but, So I will, that he dwell till I come, what to thee?

<sup>24</sup> This is that disciple, that beareth witnessing of these things, and wrote them; and we know, that his witness-ing is true.

<sup>25</sup> And there be also many other things that Jesus did, which if they be written each by itself, I deem that the

world itself shall not [*be able to*] take the books, that be  
to be written. [*Amen.*]

## DEEDS OF APOSTLES

<sup>1</sup> Theophilus, first I made a sermon [*or a word*] of all [*the*] things, that Jesus began to do and teach,

<sup>2</sup> into the day of his ascension, in which he commanded by the Holy Ghost to his apostles, whom he had chosen; [*till into the day, in which he commanding to the apostles by the Holy Ghost, whom he chose, was taken up;*]

<sup>3</sup> to whom he showed himself alive after his passion, by many arguments, [*or provings*], appearing to them forty days, and speaking of the realm of God.

<sup>4</sup> And he ate with them, and commanded [*to them*], that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but abide the promise of the Father, which ye heard, he said, by my mouth;

<sup>5</sup> for John baptized in water, but ye shall be baptized in the Holy Ghost, after these few days.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore they that were come together, asked him, and said, Lord, whether in this time thou shalt restore the kingdom of Israel? [*Therefore they that came together, asked him, saying, Lord, if in this time shalt thou restore the kingdom of Israel?*]

<sup>7</sup> And he said to them, It is not yours to know the times either moments, which the Father hath put in his power;

<sup>8</sup> but ye shall take the virtue of the Holy Ghost coming from above into you, and ye shall be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and Samaria, and to the utmost [*or the uttermost*] of the earth.

<sup>9</sup> And when he had said these things, in their sight he was lifted up, and a cloud received him from their eyes.

<sup>10</sup> And when they beheld him going into heaven, lo! two men stood beside them in white clothing,

<sup>11</sup> and said, Men of Galilee, what stand ye beholding into heaven? This Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall come, as ye saw him going into heaven.

<sup>12</sup> Then they turned again to Jerusalem, from the hill that is called of Olivet, which is beside Jerusalem, an holiday's journey [*or having the journey of a sabbath*].

<sup>13</sup> And when they were entered into the house, where they dwelled, they went up into the solar, [*or into the higher things*], Peter and John, and James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas of James.

<sup>14</sup> All these were lastingly continuing [*or dwelling together*] with one will, in prayer, with women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

<sup>15</sup> In those days Peter rose up in the middle of the brethren, and said; and there was a company of men together, almost an hundred and twenty;

<sup>16</sup> Brethren, it behooveth that the scripture be [*ful*] filled, which the Holy Ghost before-said by the mouth of David, of Judas that was leader of them that took Jesus;

<sup>17</sup> and was numbered among us, and got a part of this service [*or this ministry*].

<sup>18</sup> And this Judas had a field of the hire of wickedness, and he was hanged, and burst apart the middle, and all his entrails were shed abroad.

<sup>19</sup> And it was made known to all men that dwelt in Jerusalem, so that that field was called Aceldama in the language of them, that is, the field of blood.

<sup>20</sup> And it is written in the book of Psalms, The habitation of them [*or of him*] be made desert, and be there none that dwell in it, and another take his bishopric.

<sup>21</sup> Therefore it behooveth of these men, that be gathered together with us in all the time, in which the Lord Jesus entered, and went out among us,

<sup>22</sup> and began from the baptism of John till into the day in which he was taken up from us, that one of these be made a witness of his resurrection with us.

<sup>23</sup> And they ordained twain, Joseph, that was called Barsabbas, that was named Justus, and Matthias.

<sup>24</sup> And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, that knowest the hearts of all men, show whom thou hast chosen of these twain,

<sup>25</sup> that one take the place of this service [*or this ministry*] and apostle-hood, of which Judas trespassed, that he should go into his place.

<sup>26</sup> And they gave lots to them, and the lot felled on Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And when the days of Pentecost were [*ful*] filled, all the disciples were together in the same place.

<sup>2</sup> And suddenly there was made a sound from heaven, as of a great wind coming, and it filled all the house where they sat.

<sup>3</sup> And diverse tongues [*or tongues diversely parted*] as fire appeared to them, and it sat on each of them.

<sup>4</sup> And all were filled with the Holy Ghost, and they began to speak in diverse languages [*or with diverse tongues*], as the Holy Ghost gave to them to speak.

<sup>5</sup> And there were in Jerusalem dwelling Jews, religious men, of each nation that is under heaven.

<sup>6</sup> And when this voice was made, the multitude came together, and were astonished, [*or was confounded*], in thought, for each man heard them speaking in his own language [*+or in his own tongue*].

<sup>7</sup> And all were astonished, and wondered, and said together, Whether not all these that speak be men of Galilee [*or be Galileans*],

<sup>8</sup> and how heard we [*or how have we heard*] each man our language in which we be born?

<sup>9</sup> Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and they that dwell at [*or in*] Mesopotamia, Judea, and Cappadocia, Pontus, and Asia,

<sup>10</sup> Phrygia, and Pamphylia, Egypt, and the parts of Libya, that is about Cyrene, and comelings, Romans, and Jews, and proselytes,

<sup>11</sup> men of Crete, and of Arabia, we have heard them speaking in our languages [*or our tongues*] the great things of God.

<sup>12</sup> And all were astonished, and wondered, saying together, What will this thing be?

<sup>13</sup> And others scorned, and said, For these men be full of must.

<sup>14</sup> But Peter stood with the eleven, and raised up his voice, and spake to them, Ye Jews, and all that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known to you, and with ears perceive ye my words.

<sup>15</sup> For not as ye ween [*or as ye guess*], these be drunken, when it is the third hour of the day;

<sup>16</sup> but this it is, that was said by the prophet Joel,

<sup>17</sup> And it shall be in the last days, the Lord saith, I shall pour out my Spirit on each flesh [*or on all flesh*]; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your elders shall dream swevens.

<sup>18</sup> And on my servants and on mine handmaidens in those days I shall pour out of my Spirit, and they shall prophesy.

<sup>19</sup> And I shall give great wonders in heaven above, and signs in earth beneath, blood, and fire, and heat [*or vapour*] of smoke.

<sup>20</sup> The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that the great and the open day of the Lord [*shall*] come.

<sup>21</sup> And it shall be, each man which-ever shall call to help [*or in-call*] the name of the Lord, shall be safe.

<sup>22</sup> Ye men of Israel, hear ye these words. Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God before you by virtues, and wonders, and tokens, which God did by him in the middle of you, as ye know,

<sup>23</sup> ye tormented, and killed him by the hands of wicked men, by counsel determined and betaken by the fore-knowing [*for the prescience*] of God.

<sup>24</sup> Whom God raised, when [*the*] sorrows of hell were unbound, by that that it was impossible that he were holden of it.

<sup>25</sup> For David saith of him, I saw afar the Lord before me evermore, for he is on my right half, that I be not moved.

<sup>26</sup> For this thing mine heart joyed, and my tongue made full out joy [*for gladdened*], and moreover my flesh shall rest in hope.

<sup>27</sup> For thou shalt not leave my soul in hell, neither thou shalt give thine Holy to see corruption.

<sup>28</sup> Thou hast made known to me the ways of life, thou shalt [*full*]-fill me in mirth with thy face.

<sup>29</sup> Brethren, be it leaveful boldly to say to you of the patriarch David, for he is dead and buried, and his sepulchre is among us into this day.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore when he was a prophet, and knew, that with a great oath God had sworn to him, that of the fruit of his loins should one sit on his seat,

<sup>31</sup> he seeing afar spake of the resurrection of Christ, for neither he was left in hell, neither his flesh saw corruption.

<sup>32</sup> God raised this Jesus, to whom we all be witnesses.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore he was enhanced by the right hand of God, and through the promise of the Holy Ghost that he took of the Father, he shedded out this *Spirit*, that ye see and hear.

<sup>34</sup> For David ascended not into heaven; but he saith, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right half,

<sup>35</sup> till I put thine enemies the stool of thy feet.

<sup>36</sup> Therefore most certainly know all the house of Israel, that God made him both Lord and Christ, this Jesus, whom ye crucified.

<sup>37</sup> When they heard these things, they were compunct in heart; and they said to Peter and [*to*] other apostles, Brethren, what shall we do?

<sup>38</sup> And Peter said to them, Do ye penance, and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ, into remission of your sins; and ye shall take the gift of the Holy Ghost.

<sup>39</sup> For the promise [*or repromission*] is to you, and to your sons, and to all that be far, whichever [*or whomever*] our Lord God hath called.



<sup>40</sup> Also with other words full many he witnessed to them, and admonished them, and said, Be ye saved from this shrewd [*or this wicked*] generation.

<sup>41</sup> Then they that received his word were baptized, and in that day souls were increased, about three thousand;

<sup>42</sup> and [*they*] were lasting stably in the teaching of the apostles, and in communing of the breaking of bread, and in prayers.

<sup>43</sup> And dread was made to each man. And many wonders and signs were done by the apostles in Jerusalem, and great dread was in all.

<sup>44</sup> And all that believed were together, and had all things common.

<sup>45</sup> They sold possessions and chattel, [*or substances, or goods*], and parted those things to all men, as it was need to each.

<sup>46</sup> And each day they dwelled stably with one will in the temple, and brake bread about houses, and took meat with full out joy [*or with gladness*] and simpleness of heart,

<sup>47</sup> and praised together God, and had grace to all the folk [*or all the people*]. And the Lord increased them that were made safe, each day into the same thing.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> And Peter and John went up into the temple, at the ninth hour of praying [*or of prayer*].

<sup>2</sup> And a man, that was lame from the womb of his mother, was borne, and was laid [*or was put*] each day at the gate of the temple, that is said Fair, to ask alms of men that entered into the temple.

<sup>3</sup> This, when he saw Peter and John beginning to enter into the temple, prayed, that he should take alms.

<sup>4</sup> And Peter with John beheld on him, and said, Behold thou into us.

<sup>5</sup> And he beheld into them, and hoped, that he should take somewhat [*or something*] of them.

<sup>6</sup> But Peter said, I have neither silver nor gold; but that that I have, I give to thee. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up, and go.

<sup>7</sup> And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up; and anon his legs and his feet were strengthened together;

<sup>8</sup> and he leaped, and stood, and wandered. And he entered with them into the temple, and wandered, and leaped, and praised God.

<sup>9</sup> And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

<sup>10</sup> And they knew him, that he it was that sat at alms at the Fair Gate of the temple. And they were filled with wondering, and astonishing, in that thing that befelled to him.

<sup>11</sup> But when they saw Peter and John, all the people ran to them at the porch that was called of Solomon, and wondered greatly.

<sup>12</sup> And Peter saw, and answered to the people, Men of Israel, what wonder ye in this thing? either what behold ye us, as by our virtue, either power, [*either piety*], we made this man for to walk?

<sup>13</sup> God of Abraham, and God of Isaac, and God of Jacob, [*and*] God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus, whom ye betrayed, and denied before the face of Pilate, when he deemed him to be delivered.

<sup>14</sup> But ye denied the holy and the rightful [*or just man*], and asked a manslayer to be given to you.

<sup>15</sup> And ye slew the maker of life, whom God raised from death, of whom we be witnesses.

<sup>16</sup> And in the faith of his name he hath confirmed this *man*, whom ye see and know; the name of him, and the faith that is by him, gave to this man full healing [*or full health*] in the sight of all you.

<sup>17</sup> And now, brethren, I wot that by unwitting ye did, as also your princes.

<sup>18</sup> But God that before-told by the mouth of all prophets, that his Christ should suffer, hath fulfilled so.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore be ye repentant, and be ye converted, that your sins be done away, that when the times of refreshing shall come from the sight of the Lord,

<sup>20</sup> and he shall send that Jesus Christ, that is now preached to you.

<sup>21</sup> Whom it behooveth heaven to receive, into the times of restitution of all things, which the Lord spake by the mouth of his holy prophets from the world.

<sup>22</sup> For Moses said, For the Lord your God shall raise to you a prophet, of your brethren; as me, ye shall hear him by [*or upon*] all things, whatever he shall speak to you.

<sup>23</sup> And it shall be, that every man [*or every soul*] that shall not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed, [*or exiled*], from the people.

<sup>24</sup> And all prophets from Samuel and afterward, that spake, told these days.

<sup>25</sup> But ye be the sons of prophets, and of the testament that God ordained to our fathers, and said to Abraham, In thy seed all the families of earth shall be blessed.

<sup>26</sup> God raised his Son first to you, and sent him blessing you, that each man convert him from his wickedness.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> And while they spake to the people, the priests and the magistrates of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them,

<sup>2</sup> and sorrowed, that they taught the people, and told in Jesus the again-rising from death.

<sup>3</sup> And they laid hands on them, and putted them into ward [*or into keeping*] into the morrow; for it was then eventide.

<sup>4</sup> But many of them that had heard the word, believed; and the number of men was made five thousands [*or five thousand*].

<sup>5</sup> And amorrow it was done [*or Forsooth in the morrow it was done*], that the princes of them, and elder men and scribes were gathered in Jerusalem;

<sup>6</sup> and Annas, prince of priests, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander; and how many ever were of the kind [*or of the kindred*] of priests.

<sup>7</sup> And they set them in the middle, and asked, In what virtue, either in what name, have ye done this thing?

<sup>8</sup> Then Peter filled with the Holy Ghost, said to them, Ye princes of the people, and ye elder men, hear ye.

<sup>9</sup> If we today be deemed in the good deed of a sick man, in whom [*or in which*] this man is made safe,

<sup>10</sup> be it known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from death, in this [*or in him*] this man standeth whole before you.

<sup>11</sup> This is the stone, which was reprov'd of you building, which is made into the head of the corner;

<sup>12</sup> and health is not in any other. For neither other name under heaven is given to men, in which it behooveth us to be made safe.

<sup>13</sup> And they saw the steadfastness of Peter and of John, and when it was found that they were men unlettered [*or without letters*], and lay men, they wondered, and they knew them that they were with Jesus.

<sup>14</sup> And they saw the man that was healed, standing with them, and they might nothing gainsay.

<sup>15</sup> But they commanded them to go forth without the council. And they spake together,

<sup>16</sup> and said, What shall we do to these men? for the sign is made known by them to all men, that dwell at Jerusalem; it is open, and we may not deny.

17 But that it be no more published into the people, menace we to them, that they speak no more in this name to any man.

18 And they called them, and announced to them, that on no manner they should speak, neither teach, in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered, and said to them, If it be rightful in the sight of God to hear you rather than God, deem ye.

20 For we must needs speak those things, that we have seen and heard. [*Forsooth we may not not speak the things that we have seen and heard.*]

21 And they menaced them, and let them go, and found not how they should punish them, for the people; for all men clarified that thing that was done in that that was befallen.

22 For the man was more than forty years *old*, in whom this sign of healing [*or of health*] was made.

23 And when they were delivered, they came to their *fellows*, and told to them, how great [*or how many*] things the princes of priests and the elder men had said to them.

24 And when they heard, with one heart they raised voice to the Lord, and said, Lord, thou that madest heaven and earth, sea, and all things that be in them,

25 which saidest by the Holy Ghost, by the mouth of our father David, thy child, Why heathen men gnashed with teeth together [*or wrathed*], and the peoples thought vain things?

26 Kings of the earth stood nigh, and princes came together into one, against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For verily, Herod and Pontius Pilate, with heathen men, and peoples of Israel, came together in this city against thine holy child Jesus, whom thou anointedest,

28 to do the things, that thine hand and thy counsel deemed to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold into the threatenings of them, and grant to thy servants to speak thy word with all trust,

30 in that thing that thou hold forth thine hand, that healings and signs and wonders be made by the name of thine holy Son Jesus.

31 And when they had prayed, the place was moved, in which they were gathered; and all were filled with the Holy Ghost, and spake the word of God with trust.

32 And of *all* the multitude of men believing was one heart and one will; neither any man said anything of those things that he wielded to be his own, but all things were common to them.

<sup>33</sup> And with great virtue, the apostles yielded witnessing of the again-rising of Jesus Christ our Lord, and great grace was in all them [*for in them all*].

<sup>34</sup> For neither any needy man was among them, for how many ever were possessors of fields, either of houses, they sold, and brought the prices of those things that they sold,

<sup>35</sup> and laid before the feet of the apostles. And it was parted to each, as it was need to each.

<sup>36</sup> Forsooth Joseph, that was named Barnabas of [*the*] apostles, that is to say, the son of comfort, of the lineage of Levi [*for a Levite by kin*], a man of Cyprus,

<sup>37</sup> when he had a field, sold it, and brought the price, and laid it before the feet of the apostles.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> But a man, Ananias by name, with Sapphira, his wife, sold a field,

<sup>2</sup> and defrauded of the price of the field; and his wife was witting. And he brought a part, and laid [*it*] before the feet of the apostles.

<sup>3</sup> And Peter said to him, Ananias, why hath Satan tempted thine heart, that thou lie to the Holy Ghost, and to defraud of the price of the field?

<sup>4</sup> Whether it unsold was not thine; and when it was sold, it was in thy power? Why hast thou put this thing in thine heart? Thou hast not lied to men, but to God.

<sup>5</sup> Ananias heard these words, and felled down, and was dead [*for and died*]. And great dread was made on all that heard.

<sup>6</sup> And young men rose, and moved him away, and bare him out, and buried.

<sup>7</sup> And there was made a space of three hours, and his wife knew not that thing that was done, and entered.

<sup>8</sup> And Peter answered to her, Woman, say to me, whether ye sold the field for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

<sup>9</sup> And Peter said to her, What befelled to you, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Lo! the feet of them that have buried thine husband *be* at the door, and they shall bear thee out.

<sup>10</sup> Anon she felled down at his feet, and died. And the young men entered, and found her dead, and they bare her out, and buried [*her*] to her husband.

<sup>11</sup> And great dread was made in all the church, and into all that heard these things.

12 And by the hands of the apostles signs and many wonders were made in the people. And all were of one accord in the porch of Solomon.

13 But no man of others durst join himself with them, but the people magnified them.

14 And the multitude of men and of women believing in the Lord was more increased,

15 so that they brought out sick men into streets, and laid in little beds and couches, that when Peter came, namely the shadow of him should shadow each of them, and they should be *[or were]* delivered from *[all]* their sicknesses.

16 And the multitude of cities nigh to Jerusalem ran, bringing sick men, and that were travailed of unclean spirits, which all were healed.

17 But the prince of priests rose up, and all that were with him, that is the heresy of Sadducees, and were filled with envy;

18 and they laid hands on the apostles, and put them in the common ward *[or the common keeping]*.

19 But the angel of the Lord opened by night the gates of the prison, and led them out, and said,

20 Go ye, and stand ye, and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 Whom when they had heard, they entered early into the temple, and taught. And the prince of priests came, and they that were with him, and called together the council, and all the elder men of the children of Israel; and sent to the prison, that they should be brought forth.

22 And when the ministers came, and found them not, and for the prison was opened, *[or Soothly when the ministers came, and, the prison opened, found them not]*, they turned again and told,

23 and said, We found the prison shut with all diligence, and the keepers standing at the gates; but we opened, and found no man therein.

24 And as the magistrates of the temple, and the princes of priests heard these words, they doubted of them, what was done.

25 But a man came, and told to them, For lo! those men which ye have put into prison, be in the temple, and stand, and teach the people.

26 Then the magistrate went with the ministers, and brought them with-out violence; for they dreaded the people, lest they should be stoned.

27 And when they had brought them, they set them in the council; and the prince of priests asked them,

<sup>28</sup> and said, In commandment we commanded you, that ye should not teach in this name, and lo! ye have filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and ye will bring on us the blood of this man.

<sup>29</sup> And Peter answered, and the apostles, and said, It behooveth to obey to God, more than to men.

<sup>30</sup> [*The*] God of our fathers raised Jesus, whom ye slew, hanging in a tree.

<sup>31</sup> God enhanced with his right hand this prince and Saviour; that penance were given to Israel [*or for to give penance to Israel*], and remission of sins.

<sup>32</sup> And we be witnesses of these words, and the Holy Ghost, whom God gave to all obeying to him.

<sup>33</sup> When they heard these things, they were tormented, and thought to slay them.

<sup>34</sup> But a man rose in the council, a Pharisee, Gamaliel by name, a doctor of the law, a worshipful man to all the people, and commanded the men to be put withoutforth for a while.

<sup>35</sup> And he said to them, Ye men of Israel, take attention to yourselves on these men, what ye shall do.

<sup>36</sup> For before these days Theudas, that said himself to be some man, to whom a number of men consented, about four hundred; which was slain, and all that believed to him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

<sup>37</sup> After this, Judas of Galilee was in the days of profession, and turned away the people after him; and all how many ever consented to him, were dispersed, and he perished.

<sup>38</sup> And now therefore I say to you, depart ye from these men, and suffer ye them; for if this counsel either work is of men, it shall be undone;

<sup>39</sup> but if it is of God, ye may not undo them, lest peradventure ye be found to repugn *against* God.

<sup>40</sup> And they consented to him; and they called together the apostles, and announced to them, that were beaten, that they should no more speak in the name of Jesus, and they let them go.

<sup>41</sup> And they went joying from the sight of the council, that they were had worthy to suffer despising for the name of Jesus.

<sup>42</sup> But each day they ceased not in the temple, and about houses, to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> But in those days, when the number of disciples increased, the Greeks grutched against the Hebrews, for that their widows were despised in every day's ministering.

<sup>2</sup> And the twelve called together the multitude of disciples, and said, It is not rightful, that we leave the word of God, and minister to boards.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore, brethren, behold ye men of you of good fame [*or of good witnessing*], [*seven*], full of the Holy Ghost, and of wisdom, whom we shall ordain on this work;

<sup>4</sup> for we shall be busy to prayer, and to preach, [*or ministry, or preaching, of*] the word of God.

<sup>5</sup> And the word pleased before [*or to*] all the multitude; and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a comeling [*or a guest*], a man of Antioch.

<sup>6</sup> They ordained these before the sight of the apostles, and they prayed, and laid hands on them.

<sup>7</sup> And the word of the Lord waxed, and the number of the disciples in Jerusalem was much multiplied; also a much company of priests obeyed to the faith.

<sup>8</sup> And Stephen, full of grace and of strength, made wonders and great signs in the people.

<sup>9</sup> But some rose of the synagogue, that was called of Libertines, and Cyrenians, and of men of Alexandria, and of them that were of Cilicia and of Asia, and disputed with Stephen.

<sup>10</sup> And they might not withstand the wisdom and the spirit, that spake.

<sup>11</sup> Then they privily sent men, that should say, that they [*have*] heard him saying words of blasphemy against Moses and God.

<sup>12</sup> And so they moved together the people, and the elder men, and the scribes; and they came together, and took him, and brought into the council.

<sup>13</sup> And they ordained false witnesses, that said, This man ceaseth not to speak words against the holy place, and the law.

<sup>14</sup> For we heard him saying, That this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the traditions, which Moses betook to us.

<sup>15</sup> And all men that sat in the council beheld him, and saw his face as the face of an angel.



## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> And the prince of priests said to Stephen, Whether these things have them so?

<sup>2</sup> Which said, Brethren and fathers, hear ye. [*The*] God of glory appeared to our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before that he dwelt in Charran,

<sup>3</sup> and said to him, Go out of thy land, and of thy kindred, and come into the land, which I shall show to thee.

<sup>4</sup> Then he went out of the land of Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And from thence after that his father was dead, he translated him into this land, in which ye dwell now.

<sup>5</sup> And he gave not to him heritage in it, neither a pace of a foot, but he promised to give him it into possession, and to his seed after him, when he had not a son.

<sup>6</sup> And God spake to him, That his seed shall be [*a*] comeling [*or a guest*] in an alien land, and they shall make them subject to servage, and shall evil treat them, four hundred years and thirty [*or four hundred years*];

<sup>7</sup> and I shall judge the folk to whom they shall serve, saith the Lord. And after these things they shall go out, and they shall serve to me in this place.

<sup>8</sup> And he gave to him the testament of circumcision; and so he engender-ed Isaac, and circumcised him in the eighth day. And Isaac engendered Jacob, and Jacob *engendered* the twelve patriarchs.

<sup>9</sup> And the patriarchs had envy to Joseph, and sold him into Egypt. And God was with him,

<sup>10</sup> and delivered him of all his tribulations, and gave him grace and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh, king of Egypt. And he ordained him sove-reign on Egypt, and on all his house.

<sup>11</sup> And hunger came into all Egypt, and Canaan, and great tribulation; and our fathers found not meat.

<sup>12</sup> But when Jacob had heard, that wheat was in Egypt, he sent our fathers first.

<sup>13</sup> And in the second time Joseph was known of his brethren, and his kin was made known to Pharaoh.

<sup>14</sup> And Joseph sent, and called Jacob, his father, and all his kindred, seventy and five men [*or souls*].

<sup>15</sup> And Jacob came down into Egypt, and was dead, he and our fathers;

<sup>16</sup> and they were translated into Sychem, and were laid in the sepulchre, that Abraham bought by price of silver of the sons of Emmor, the son of Sychem.

17 And when the time of promise came nigh, which God had acknowledged to Abraham, the people waxed, and multiplied in Egypt,

18 till another king rose in Egypt, which knew not Joseph.

19 This beguiled our kin, and torment-ed our fathers, that they should put away [*or should put out*] their young children, for they should not live.

20 In the same time Moses was born, and he was loved [*or accepted*] of God; and he was nourished three months in the house of his father.

21 And when he was put out *in the flood*, the daughter of Pharaoh took him up, and nourished him into her son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of Egyptians, and he was mighty in his words and works.

23 But when the time of forty years was [*full*]-filled to him, it rose up into his heart, that he should visit his brethren, the sons of Israel.

24 And when he saw a man suffering wrong, he avenged him, and did vengeance for him that suffered the wrong, and killed the Egyptian.

25 For he guessed that his brethren should understand, that God should give to them health by the hand of him; but they understood not.

26 For in the day pursuing he appeared to them chiding, and he accorded [*or reconciled*] them in peace, and said, Men, ye be brethren; why annoy ye each other?

27 But he that did the wrong to his neighbour, putted him away, and said, Who ordained thee prince and dooms-man on us?

28 Whether thou wilt slay me, as yesterday thou killedest the Egyptian?

29 And in this word Moses flew, and was made a comeling in the land of Midian, where he begat two sons.

30 And when he had [*ful*] filled forty years, an angel appeared to him in fire of flame of a bush, in desert of the mount of Sinai.

31 And Moses saw, and wondered on the sight. And when he nighed to behold, the voice of the Lord was made to him,

32 and said, I am God of your fathers, God of Abraham, God of Isaac, [*and*] God of Jacob. Moses was made trembling, and durst not behold.

33 But God said to him, Do off the shoes of thy feet, for the place in which thou standest is holy earth.

34 I seeing saw the tormenting [*or the affliction*] of my people that is in Egypt, and I heard the mourning of them,

and came down to deliver them. And now come thou, and I shall send thee into Egypt.

<sup>35</sup> This Moses whom they denied, saying, Who ordained thee prince and doomsman on us? God sent this prince and again-buyer, with the hand of the angel, that appeared to him in the bush.

<sup>36</sup> This *Moses* led them out, and did wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red Sea, and in desert forty years.

<sup>37</sup> This is Moses, that said to the sons of Israel, God shall raise to you a prophet of your brethren, [*and*] as me ye shall hear him.

<sup>38</sup> This it is, that was in the church in wilderness, with the angel that spake to him in the mount of Sinai, and with our fathers; which took words of life to give to us.

<sup>39</sup> To whom our fathers would not obey, but putted him away, and were turned away in their hearts into Egypt,

<sup>40</sup> saying to Aaron, Make thou to us gods, that shall go before us; for to this Moses that led us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is done to him.

<sup>41</sup> And they made a calf in those days, and offered a sacrifice to the maumet [*or the simulacrum*]; and they were glad in the works of their hands.

<sup>42</sup> And God turned, and betook them to serve to the knighthood of heaven, as it is written in the book of [*the*] prophets, Whether ye, house of Israel, offered to me slain sacrifices, either sacrifices, forty years in desert?

<sup>43</sup> And ye have taken the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Rephan, figures that ye have made to worship them; and I shall translate you into Babylon.

<sup>44</sup> The tabernacle of witnessing was with our fathers in desert, as God disposed to them, and spake to Moses, that he should make it after the form that he saw.

<sup>45</sup> Which also our fathers took with Jesus, *that was Joshua*, and brought into the possession of heathen men, which God putted away from the face of our fathers, till into the days of David,

<sup>46</sup> that found grace with God, and asked that he should find a tabernacle to God of Jacob.

<sup>47</sup> But Solomon builded the house to him.

<sup>48</sup> But the high *God* dwelleth not in things made by hand, as he saith by the prophet,

<sup>49</sup> Heaven is a seat to me, and the earth is the stool of my feet; what house shall ye build to me, saith the Lord, either what [*or which*] place is of my resting?

<sup>50</sup> Whether mine hand made not all these things?

<sup>51</sup> With hard noll, and uncircumcised hearts and ears, ye withstand ever-more the Holy Ghost; and as your fathers, so ye.

<sup>52</sup> Whom of the prophets have not your fathers pursued, and have slain them that before-told of the coming of the rightful [*or just*] man, whose traitors and manslayers ye were now?

<sup>53</sup> Which took the law in ordinance of angels, and have not kept *it*.

<sup>54</sup> And they heard these things, and were diversely tormented in their hearts, and they grinded, *or gnashed*, with teeth on him.

<sup>55</sup> But when Stephen was full of the Holy Ghost, he beheld into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right half of the virtue of God.

<sup>56</sup> And he said, Lo! I see heavens opened, and man's Son [*or the Son of man*] standing on the right half of the virtue of God.

<sup>57</sup> And they cried with a great voice, and stopped their ears, and made with one will an assault into him.

<sup>58</sup> And they brought him out of the city, and stoned [*him*]. And the witnesses did off their clothes, beside the feet of a young man, that was called Saul.

<sup>59</sup> And they stoned Stephen, that called *God* to help, saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

<sup>60</sup> And he kneeled, and cried with a great voice, and said, Lord, set not to them this sin. And when he had said this thing, he died [*or he slept in the Lord*].

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But Saul was consenting to his death. And great persecution was made that day in the church, that was in Jerusalem. And all men were scattered by the countries of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

<sup>2</sup> But good [*or dread-full*] men buried Stephen, and made great mourning on him.

<sup>3</sup> But Saul greatly destroyed the church, and entered by houses, and drew out men and women, and betook them into prison [*or keeping*].

<sup>4</sup> And they that were scattered, passed forth, preaching [*or evangel-izing*] the word of God.

<sup>5</sup> And Philip came down into a city of Samaria, and preached to them Christ.

<sup>6</sup> And the people gave attention to these things that were said of Philip, with one will hearing and seeing the signs that he did.

<sup>7</sup> For many of them that had unclean spirits, cried with great voice, and went out. And many sick in the palsy, and crooked, were healed.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore great joy was made in that city.

<sup>9</sup> But there was a man in that city, whose name was Simon, a witch, that had deceived the folk of Samaria, saying, that himself was some great man.

<sup>10</sup> [*To*] Whom all harkened, from the least to the most, and said, This is the virtue of God, which is called great.

<sup>11</sup> And they believed him, for long time he had madded them with his witchcrafts, [*or for this thing, that much time he had made them mad with his witchings*].

<sup>12</sup> But when they had believed to Philip, preaching [*or evangelizing*] of the kingdom of God, men and women were baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

<sup>13</sup> And then also Simon himself believed; and when he was baptized, he drew to Philip; and he saw also that signs and great virtues were done, he was astonied, and wondered.

<sup>14</sup> But when the apostles that were at Jerusalem, had heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent to them Peter and John.

<sup>15</sup> And when they came, they prayed for them, that they should receive the Holy Ghost;

<sup>16</sup> for he came not yet into any of them, but they were baptized only in the name of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>17</sup> Then they laid hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

<sup>18</sup> And when Simon had seen, that the Holy Ghost was given by laying on of [*the*] hands of the apostles, and he proffered [*or offered*] to them money,

<sup>19</sup> and said, Give ye also to me this power, that whomever I shall lay on mine hands [*or that on whomever I shall put on hands*], that he receive the Holy Ghost.

<sup>20</sup> But Peter said to him, Thy money be with thee into perdition, for thou guessedest that the gift of God should be had for money [*or for thou guessedest the gift of God to be had, or wielded, by money*].

<sup>21</sup> There is no part, nor lot to thee, in this word, for thine heart is not rightful before God.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore do thou penance for this wickedness of thee, and pray God, if peradventure this thought of thine heart be forgiven to thee.

<sup>23</sup> For I see that thou art in the gall of bitterness and in the bond of wickedness.

24 And Simon answered, and said, Pray ye for me to the Lord, that nothing of these things that ye have said, come on me.

25 And they witnessed, and spake the word of the Lord, and went again to Jerusalem, and preached [*or evangelized*] to many countries of Samaritans.

26 And an angel of the Lord spake to Philip, and said, Rise thou, and go to meet the south, to the way that goeth down from Jerusalem into Gaza; this is desert.

27 And he rose, and went forth. And lo! a man of Ethiopia, a mighty man-servant, a gelding of Candace, the queen of Ethiopians, which was on all her riches, came to worship in Jerusalem.

28 And he turned again, sitting on his chariot, and reading Isaiah, the prophet.

29 And the Spirit said to Philip, Nigh thou, and join thee to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran to, and heard him reading Isaiah, the prophet. And he said, Guessest thou, whether thou understandest, what things thou readest?

31 And he said, How may I, if no man show to me? And he prayed Philip, that he should come up, and sit with him.

32 And the place of the scripture that he read, was this, As a sheep he was led to slaying, and as a lamb before a man that sheareth him is dumb without voice, so he opened not his mouth.

33 In meekness his doom was taken up; who shall tell out the generation of him? For his life shall be taken away from the earth.

34 And the gelding answered to Philip, and said, I beseech thee, of what prophet saith he this thing? of himself, or of any other?

35 And Philip opened his mouth, and began at this scripture, and preached [*or evangelized*] to him Jesus.

36 And while they went by the way, they came to a water [*or to some water*]. And the gelding said, Lo! water; who forbiddeth me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou believest of all thine heart, it is leaveful. And he answered, and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still. And they went down both into the water, Philip and the gelding, and *Philip* baptized him.

39 And when they were come up of the water, the Spirit of the Lord ravished Philip, and the gelding saw him no more; and he went in his way joying.

40 And Philip was found in Azotus; and he passed forth, and preached [*or evangelized*] to all cities, till he came to Caesarea.

## CHAPTER 9

1 But Saul, yet a blower [*or a breather*] of menaces, and of beatings, [*or slaying*], against the disciples of the Lord, came to the prince of priests,

2 and asked of him letters into Damascus, to the synagogues; that if he found any men or women of this life, he should lead *them* bound to Jerusalem.

3 And when he made his journey, it befell, that he came nigh to Damascus. And suddenly a light from heaven shone about him;

4 and he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying to him, Saul, Saul, what persecutest [*or pursuest*] thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And he *said*, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest [*or pursuest*]. It is hard to thee, to kick against the prick.

6 And he trembled, and wondered, and said, Lord, what wilt thou that I do? And the Lord *said* to him, Rise up, and enter into the city, and it shall be said to thee, what it behooveth thee to do.

7 And those men that went with him, stood astonished, [*or were made afeared, or out of mind*]; for they heard a voice, but they saw no man.

8 And Saul rose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw nothing. And they drew him by the hands, and led *him* into Damascus.

9 And he was three days not seeing; and he ate not, neither drank.

10 And a disciple, Ananias by name, was at Damascus. And the Lord said to him in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Lo! I, Lord.

11 And the Lord *said* to him, Rise thou, and go into a street that is called Rectus; and seek, in the house of Judas, Saul by name, of Tarsus. For lo! he prayeth;

12 and he saw a man, Ananias by name, entering and laying on him hands, that he receive sight.

13 And Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard of many of this man, how great evil he did to thy saints in Jerusalem;

14 and this hath power of the princes of priests, to bind all men that call thy name to help.

15 And the Lord said to him, Go thou, for this is to me a vessel of choosing, that he bear my name before heathen men, and kings, and before the sons of Israel.

16 For I shall show to him, how great things it behooveth him to suffer for my name.

17 And Ananias went, and entered into the house; and laid on him his hands, and said, Saul brother, the Lord Jesus sent me, that appeared to thee in the way, in which thou camest, that thou see, and be full-filled with the Holy Ghost.

18 And anon as the scales felled from his eyes, he received sight. And he rose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had taken meat, he was comforted. And he was by some days with the disciples, that were at Damascus.

20 And anon, he entered into the synagogues, and preached the Lord Jesus, for this is the Son of God.

21 And all men that heard him, wondered, and said, Whether this is not he that impugned in Jerusalem them that called to help this name? and hither he came for this thing [*or hither for this thing he came*], that he should lead them bound to the princes of priests?

22 But Saul much the more [*or much more*] waxed strong, and confounded the Jews that dwelled at Damascus, and affirmed that this is Christ.

23 And when many days were [*ful*] filled, Jews made a counsel, that they should slay him.

24 And the ambushes of them were made known to Saul. And they kept the gates day and night, that they should slay him.

25 But his disciples took him by night, and delivered him, and let him down in a basket by the wall.

26 And when he came into Jeru-salem, he assayed [*or attempted*] to join him to the disciples; and all dreaded him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took, and led him to the apostles, and told to them, how in the way, he had seen the Lord, and that he spake to him, and how in Damascus he did trustily in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them, and entered, and went out in Jerusalem, and did trustily in the name of Jesus.

29 And he spake with heathen men, and disputed with Greeks. And they sought to slay him.

30 Which thing when the brethren had known, they led him by night to Caesarea, and let him go to Tarsus.

31 And the church by all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, had peace, and was edified, and walked in the dread of the Lord, and was [*full*]-filled with comfort of the Holy Ghost.

32 And it befelled, that Peter, the while he passed about all, came to the holy men that dwelled at Lydda.



<sup>33</sup> And he found [*there*] a man, Aeneas by name, that from eight years he had lain bed-ridden; and he was sick in the palsy.

<sup>34</sup> And Peter said to him, Aeneas, the Lord Jesus Christ heal thee; rise thou, and array, *either make ready*, thee. And anon he rose.

<sup>35</sup> And all men that dwelt at Lydda, and at Saron, saw him, which were converted to the Lord.

<sup>36</sup> And in Joppa was a discipless, whose name was Tabitha, that is to say, Dorcas. This was full of good works and alms-deeds, that she did.

<sup>37</sup> And it befell in those days, that she was sick, and died. And when they had washed her, they laid her in a solar.

<sup>38</sup> And for Lydda was nigh Joppa, the disciples heard that Peter was therein, and sent two men to him, and prayed, That thou tarry not to come to us.

<sup>39</sup> And Peter rose up, and came with them. And when he was come, they led him into the solar. And all the widows stood about him, weeping, and showing coats and clothes, which Dorcas made to them.

<sup>40</sup> And when all men were put with-outforth, Peter kneeled, and prayed. And he turned to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise thou. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

<sup>41</sup> And he took her by the hand, and raised her. And when he had called the holy men and widows, he assigned her alive.

<sup>42</sup> And it was made known by all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord.

<sup>43</sup> And it was made, that many days he dwelled in Joppa, at one Simon, a currier [*or a tanner*].

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> A man was in Caesarea, Cornelius by name, a centurion of the company of knights, that is said of Italy;

<sup>2</sup> a religious man, and dreading the Lord, with all his household; doing many alms to the people, and praying the Lord evermore.

<sup>3</sup> This saw in a vision openly, as in the ninth hour of the day, [*or noon*], an angel of God entering in to him, and saying to him, Cornelius.

<sup>4</sup> And he beheld him, and was adread, and said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to him, Thy prayers and thine alms-deeds have gone up into mind, in the sight of the Lord.

<sup>5</sup> And now send thou men into Joppa, and call one Simon, that is named Peter.

<sup>6</sup> This is harboured at a man, Simon, currier, *[or tanner]*, whose house is beside the sea. This shall say to thee, what it behooveth thee to do.

<sup>7</sup> And when the angel that spake to him, was gone away *[or had gone away]*, he called two men of his house, and a knight that dreaded the Lord, which were at his bidding *[or that obeyed to him]*.

<sup>8</sup> And when he had told to them all these things, he sent them into Joppa.

<sup>9</sup> And on the day pursuing, while they made journey, and nighed to the city, Peter went up into the highest place of the house to pray, about the sixth hour.

<sup>10</sup> And when he was hungered, he would have eaten. But while they made ready, a ravishing of the spirit *[or an excess of soul]* felled on him;

<sup>11</sup> and he saw heaven opened, and a vessel coming down, as a great sheet with four corners *[or with four cords]*, to be let down from heaven into earth,

<sup>12</sup> in which were all four-footed beasts, and creeping *[things]* of the earth, and volatiles of heaven, *[either of the air]*.

<sup>13</sup> And a voice was made to him, Rise thou, Peter, and slay, and eat.

<sup>14</sup> And Peter said, Lord, forbid *[it]*, for I never eat any common thing, and unclean.

<sup>15</sup> And again the second time the voice was made to him, That thing that God hath cleansed, say thou not unclean.

<sup>16</sup> And this thing was done by thrice; and anon the vessel was received again into heaven.

<sup>17</sup> And while that Peter doubted within himself, what the vision was that he saw, lo! the men, that were sent from Cornelius, sought the house of Simon, and stood at the gate.

<sup>18</sup> And when they had called, they asked if Simon, that is named Peter, had there harbour.

<sup>19</sup> And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said to him, Lo! three men seek thee.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore rise thou, and go down, and go with them, and doubt thou nothing, for I sent them.

<sup>21</sup> And Peter came down to the men, and said, Lo! I am, whom ye seek; what is the cause, for which ye be come? *[or ye have come?]*

<sup>22</sup> And they said, Cornelius, the centurion, a just man, and dreading God, and having good witnessing of all the folk of Jews, took answer of an holy angel, to call thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore he led them in, and received in harbour; and that night they dwelled with him. And in the day pursuing he rose, and went forth with them; and some of the brethren followed him from Joppa [*or some of brethren from Joppa followed him*], that they be witnesses to Peter.

<sup>24</sup> And the tother day, he entered into Caesarea. And Cornelius abode them, with his cousins, and necessary friends, that were called together.

<sup>25</sup> And it was done, when Peter was come in [*or when Peter had entered*], Cornelius came meeting him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped *him*.

<sup>26</sup> But Peter raised him, and said, Arise thou, also I myself am a man, as thou.

<sup>27</sup> And he spake with him, and went in, and found many that were come together.

<sup>28</sup> And he said to them, Ye know, how abominable it is to a Jew, to be joined either to come to an alien; but God showed to me, that no man say a man common, either unclean.

<sup>29</sup> For which thing I came, when I was called, without doubting. There-fore I ask you, for what cause have ye called me?

<sup>30</sup> And Cornelius said, Today, four days into this hour [*or From the fourth day passed till to this hour*], I was praying and fasting in the ninth hour in mine house. And lo! a man stood before me in a white cloth,

<sup>31</sup> and said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms-deeds be in mind in the sight of God.

<sup>32</sup> Therefore send thou into Joppa, and call Simon, that is named Peter; this is harboured in the house of Simon currier, beside the sea. This, when he shall come, shall speak to thee.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore anon I sent to thee, and thou didest well in coming to us. Now therefore we all be present in thy sight, to hear the words, whatever be commanded to thee of the Lord.

<sup>34</sup> And Peter opened his mouth, and said, In truth I have found, that God is no acceptor of persons;

<sup>35</sup> but in each folk he that dreadeth God, and worketh rightwiseness, is acceptable to him.

<sup>36</sup> God sent a word to the children of Israel, showing peace by Jesus Christ; this is [*the*] Lord of all things [*or of all men*].

<sup>37</sup> Ye know the word that is made through all Judea, and began at Galilee, after the baptism that John preached, Jesus of Nazareth;

<sup>38</sup> how God anointed him with the Holy Ghost, and virtue; which passed forth in doing well [*or in well-doing*], and

healing all men oppressed of the devil, for God was with him.

<sup>39</sup> And we be witnesses of all things, which he did in the country of Jews, and of Jerusalem; whom they slew, hanging on a tree.

<sup>40</sup> And God raised this in the third day, and gave him to be made known,

<sup>41</sup> not to all the people, but to witnesses before-ordained of God; to us that ate and drank with him, after that he rose again from death.

<sup>42</sup> And he commanded to us to preach to the people, and to witness, that he it is, that is ordained of God doomsman of the quick and of the dead.

<sup>43</sup> To this all prophets bear witness-ing [*or bear witness*], that all men that believe in him, shall receive remission of sins by his name.

<sup>44</sup> And yet while that Peter spake these words, the Holy Ghost felled on all that heard the word.

<sup>45</sup> And the faithful men of circumcision, that came with Peter, wondered, that also into nations the grace of the Holy Ghost is shed out.

<sup>46</sup> For they heard them speaking in languages [*or with tongues*], and magnifying God. Then Peter answered,

<sup>47</sup> Whether any man may forbid water, that these be not baptized, that have also received the Holy Ghost as we?

<sup>48</sup> And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Then they prayed him, that he should dwell with them some days.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And the apostles, and the brethren that were in Judea, heard that also heathen men received the word of God, and they glorified God.

<sup>2</sup> But when Peter came to Jerusalem, they that were of circumcision, disputed against him,

<sup>3</sup> and said, Why enteredest thou to men that have prepuce, and hast eaten with them?

<sup>4</sup> And Peter began, and expounded to them by order, and said,

<sup>5</sup> I was in the city of Joppa, and prayed, and I saw in ravishing of my mind [*or in excess of my soul*] a vision, that a vessel came down, as a great sheet with four cords [*or with four corners*], and was sent down from heaven; and it came to me.

<sup>6</sup> Into which I looking beheld, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and beasts, and creeping beasts, and volatiles of heaven [*or of the air*].

<sup>7</sup> And I heard also a voice that said to me, Peter, rise thou, and slay, and eat.

<sup>8</sup> But I said, Nay, Lord; for common thing either unclean entered never into my mouth.

<sup>9</sup> And the voice answered the second time from heaven, That thing that God hath cleansed, say thou not unclean.

<sup>10</sup> And this was done by thrice, and all things were received again into heaven.

<sup>11</sup> And lo! three men anon stood in the house, in which I was; and they were sent from Caesarea to me.

<sup>12</sup> And the Spirit said to me, that I should go with them, and doubt nothing. Yea, and these six brethren came with me, and we entered into the house of the man.

<sup>13</sup> And he told to us, how he saw an angel in his house, standing and saying to him, Send thou into Joppa, and call Simon, that is named Peter,

<sup>14</sup> which shall speak to thee words, in which thou shalt be safe, and all thine house.

<sup>15</sup> And when I had begun to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as into us in the beginning.

<sup>16</sup> And I bethought on the word of the Lord, as he said, For John baptized in water, but ye shall be baptized in the Holy Ghost.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore if God gave to them the same grace, as to us that believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I, that might forbid the Lord, that he give not the Holy Ghost [*for that he should not give the Holy Ghost*] to them that believed in the name of Jesus Christ?

<sup>18</sup> When these things were heard, they held peace, and glorified God, and said, Therefore also to heathen men God hath given penance to life.

<sup>19</sup> And they that were scattered of the tribulation that was made under Stephen, walked forth to Phoenicia, and to Cyprus, and to Antioch, and spake the word to no man, but to Jews alone.

<sup>20</sup> But some of them were men of Cyprus, and of Cyrene; which when they had entered into Antioch, they spake to the Greeks, and preached the Lord Jesus.

<sup>21</sup> And the hand of the Lord was with them, and much number of men believing was converted to the Lord.

<sup>22</sup> And the word came to the ears of the church, that was at Jerusalem, on these things; and they sent Barnabas to Antioch.

<sup>23</sup> And when he was come, and saw the grace of the Lord, he joyed, and admonished all men to dwell in the Lord in purpose of heart;

<sup>24</sup> for he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and of faith. And much people was increased to the Lord.

<sup>25</sup> And he went forth to Tarsus, to seek Saul;

<sup>26</sup> and when he had found him, he led to Antioch. And all a year they lived there in the church, and taught much people, so that the disciples were named first at Antioch christian men.

<sup>27</sup> And in these days prophets came over from Jerusalem to Antioch.

<sup>28</sup> And one of them rose up, Agabus by name, and signified by the Spirit a great hunger to coming [*or to come*] in all the world, which *hunger* was made under Claudius.

<sup>29</sup> And all the disciples purposed, after that each had, for to send into ministry to brethren that dwelled in Judea.

<sup>30</sup> Which thing also they did, and sent *it* to the elder men, by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> And in the same time Herod the king sent power, [*or hands*], to torment some men of the church.

<sup>2</sup> And he slew by sword James, the brother of John.

<sup>3</sup> And he saw that it pleased to the Jews, and cast to take also Peter; and the days of therf loaves were.

<sup>4</sup> And when he had caught Peter, he sent him into prison; and betook *him* to four quaternions of knights, to keep him, and would after pask bring him forth to the people.

<sup>5</sup> And Peter was kept in prison; but prayer was made of the church without ceasing to God for him.

<sup>6</sup> But when Herod should bring him forth, in that night Peter was sleeping betwixt two knights, and was bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

<sup>7</sup> And lo! an angel of the Lord stood nigh, and light shone in the prison house. And when he had smitten the side of Peter, he raised, [*or waked*], him, and said, Rise thou swiftly. And anon the chains felled down from his hands.

<sup>8</sup> And the angel said to him, Gird thee, and do on thine hoses. And he did so. And he said to him, Do about thee thy clothes, and pursue me.

<sup>9</sup> And he went out, and pursued him; and he wist not that it was sooth, that was done by the angel; for he guessed himself to have seen a vision.

<sup>10</sup> And they passed the first and the second ward, and came to the iron gate that leadeth to the city, which anon was opened to them. And they went out, and came [*forth*] into one street, and anon the angel passed away from him.

<sup>11</sup> And Peter turned again to himself, and said, Now I know verily, that the Lord sent his angel, and delivered me from the hand of Herod, and from all the abiding of the people of Jews.

<sup>12</sup> And he beheld, and came to the house of Mary, the mother of John, that is named Mark, where many were gathered together, and praying.

<sup>13</sup> And when he knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel [*for a wench*], Rhoda by name, came forth to see.

<sup>14</sup> And when she knew the voice of Peter, for joy she opened not the gate, but ran in, and told, that Peter stood at the gate.

<sup>15</sup> And they said to her, Thou maddest [*for Thou art mad*]. But she affirmed, that it was so. And they said, It is his angel.

<sup>16</sup> But Peter abode still, and knocked. And when they had opened the door, they saw him, and wondered.

<sup>17</sup> And he beckoned to them with his hand to be still, and told how the Lord had led him out of the prison. And he said, Tell ye to James and to the brethren these things. And he went out, and went into another place.

<sup>18</sup> And when the day was come, there was not little troubling among the knights, what was done of Peter.

<sup>19</sup> And when Herod had sought him, and found not, after that he had made inquiring of the keepers, he commanded them to be brought to him. And he came down from Judea into Caesarea, and dwelled there.

<sup>20</sup> And he was wroth to men of Tyre and of Sidon. And they of one accord came to him, when they had counselled with Blastus, that was the king's chamberlain, they asked peace, for as much as their countries were victualled of him [*or were nourished by him*].

<sup>21</sup> And in a day that was ordained, Herod was clothed with king's clothing, and sat for doomsman, and spake to them.

<sup>22</sup> And the people cried, The voice of God, and not of man.

<sup>23</sup> And anon an angel of the Lord smote him, for he had not given honour to God; and he was wasted of worms, and died.

<sup>24</sup> And the word of the Lord waxed, and was multiplied.

<sup>25</sup> And Barnabas and Saul turned again from Jerusalem, when the ministry was [*ful*] filled, and took John, that was named Mark.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> And prophets and doctors were in the church that was at Antioch, in which Barnabas, and Simon, that was called

Black, and Lucius Cyreneus, and Manaen, that was the suckling-frère of Herod tetrarch, *that is, prince of the fourth part*, and Saul were.

<sup>2</sup> And when they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said to them, Set apart ye to me Saul and Barnabas, into the work to which I have taken them.

<sup>3</sup> Then they fasted, and prayed, and laid hands on them, and let them go.

<sup>4</sup> But they were sent of the Holy Ghost, and went forth to Seleucia, and from thence they went by boat to Cyprus.

<sup>5</sup> And when they came to Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of Jews; and they had also John in ministry [*or in service*].

<sup>6</sup> And when they had walked by all the isle to Paphos, they found a man, a witch, [*or they found some man witch*], a false prophet, a Jew, to whom the name was Barjesus,

<sup>7</sup> that was with the proconsul Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. This called Barnabas and Paul, and desired to hear the word of God.

<sup>8</sup> But Elymas the witch withstood them; for his name is expounded so; and he sought to turn away the proconsul from belief.

<sup>9</sup> But Saul, which is *said* also Paul, was filled with the Holy Ghost, and beheld into him,

<sup>10</sup> and said, A! thou full of all guile, and all falseness, thou son of the devil, thou enemy of all rightwise-ness, thou leavest not to turn upside-down, [*or to subvert, or to destroy*], the rightful ways of the Lord.

<sup>11</sup> And now lo! the hand of the Lord is on thee, and thou shalt be blind, and not seeing the sun into a time. And anon, [*a*] mist and darkness felled down on him; and he went about, and sought him that should give [*the*] hand to him.

<sup>12</sup> Then the proconsul, when he had seen the deed, believed, wondering on the teaching of the Lord.

<sup>13</sup> And when from Paphos Paul had gone by boat, and they that were with him, they came to Perga of Pamphylia; but John departed from them, and turned again to Jerusalem.

<sup>14</sup> And they went from Perga, and came to Antioch of Pisidia; and they entered into the synagogue in the day of sabbaths, and sat.

<sup>15</sup> And after the reading of the law and of the prophets, the princes of the synagogue sent to them, and said, Brethren, if any word of exhortation to the people is in you, say ye.

<sup>16</sup> And Paul rose, and with hand bade silence, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that dread God, hear ye.



17 God of the people of Israel chose our fathers, and enhanced the people, when they were comelings in the land of Egypt, and in an high arm he led them out of it;

18 and by the time of forty years he suffered their manners in desert.

19 And he destroyed seven folks in the land of Canaan, and by sort parted to them their land,

20 as after four hundred and fifty years. And after these things he gave doomsmen, [*till*] to Samuel, the prophet.

21 And from that time they asked a king, and God gave to them Saul, the son of Cis, a man of the lineage of Benjamin, by forty years.

22 And when he was done away, he raised to them David the king, to whom he bare witnessing, and said, I have found David, the son of Jesse, a man after mine heart, which shall do all my will.

23 Of whose seed by the promise God hath led out to Israel a Saviour Jesus,

24 when John preached before the face of his coming the baptism of penance to all the people of Israel.

25 But when John [*ful*] filled his course, he said, I am not he, whom ye deem me to be; but lo! he cometh after me, and I am not worthy to do off [*or to unbind*] the shoes of his feet.

26 Brethren, and sons of the kind of Abraham, and which that in you dread God, to you the word of health is sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and princes of it, that knew not this Jesus, and the voices of prophets, that by every sabbath be read, deemed, and fulfilled;

28 and they found in him no cause of death, and asked of Pilate, that they should slay him.

29 And when they had ended all things that were written of him, they took him down off the tree, and laid him in a grave.

30 And God raised him from death in the third day;

31 which was seen by many days to them that went up together with him from Galilee into Jerusalem, which be till now his witnesses to the people.

32 And we show to you the promise that was made to our fathers;

33 for God hath fulfilled this to their sons, and again-raised Jesus; as in the second psalm it is written, Thou art my Son, today I begat thee.

34 And he that again-raised him from death, that he should not turn again into corruption, said thus, For I shall give to you the holy true things of David.

35 Therefore and in another stead he saith, Thou shalt not give thine Holy to see corruption.

36 But David in his generation, when he had ministered to the will of God, died [*for slept*], and was laid with his fathers, and saw corruption;

37 but he whom God raised from death, saw not corruption.

38 Therefore, brethren, be it known to you, that by him remission of sins is told to you,

39 from all sins, of which ye might not be justified in the law of Moses. In this each man that believeth, is justified.

40 Therefore see ye, that it come not to you, that is before-said in the prophets,

41 Ye despisers, see ye, and wonder ye, and be ye scattered abroad; for I work a work in your days, a work that ye shall not believe, if any man shall tell *it[out]* to you.

42 And when they went out, they prayed, that in the sabbath pursuing, they should speak to them these words.

43 And when the synagogue was let go, many of the Jews and comelings worshipping God pursued Paul and Barnabas; that spake, and counselled them, that they should dwell in the grace of God.

44 And in the sabbath pursuing, almost all the city came together, to hear the word of God.

45 And Jews saw the people, and were filled with envy, and gainsaid these things that were said of Paul, and blasphemed.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas stead-fastly said, To you it behooved first to speak the word of God; but for ye put it away, and have deemed you unworthy to [*or of*] everlasting life, lo! we turn to heathen men.

47 For so the Lord commanded us, I have set thee into light of heathen men, that thou be into health to the utmost [*or the uttermost*] of the earth.

48 And heathen men heard, and joyed, and glorified the word of the Lord; and believed, as many as were before-ordained to everlasting life.

49 And the word of the Lord was [*far*] sown in all that country.

50 But the Jews stirred religious women, and honest, and the worthiest [*or the first*] men of the city, and stirred persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their countries.

51 And they shook away into them the dust of their feet, and came to Iconium.

<sup>52</sup> And the disciples were filled with joy and the Holy Ghost.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> And it befell at Iconium, that they entered together into the syna-gogue of Jews, and spake, so that [a] full great multitude of Jews and Greeks believed.

<sup>2</sup> But the Jews that were unbeliev-ful, raised persecution, and stirred to wrath the souls of heathen men against the brethren; but the Lord gave soon peace.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore they dwelled much time, and did trustily in the Lord, bearing witnessing to the word of his grace, giving signs and wonders to be made by the hands of them.

<sup>4</sup> But the multitude of the city was parted, and some were with the Jews, and some with the apostles.

<sup>5</sup> But when there was made an assault of the heathen men and the Jews, with their princes, to torment, and to stone them,

<sup>6</sup> they understood, and fled together to the cities of Lycaonia, and Lystra, and Derbe, and into all the country about.

<sup>7</sup> And they preached there the gospel, and all the multitude was moved together in the teaching of them. Paul and Barnabas dwelt at Lystra.

<sup>8</sup> And a man at Lystra was sick in the feet, and had sat crooked from his mother's womb, which never had gone.

<sup>9</sup> This heard Paul speaking; and Paul beheld him and saw that he had faith, that he should be made safe,

<sup>10</sup> and said with a great voice, Rise thou upright on thy feet. And he leaped, and walked.

<sup>11</sup> And the people, when they had seen that that Paul did, reared their voice in Lycaonian tongue, and said, Gods made like to men be come down to us.

<sup>12</sup> And they called Barnabas, Jupiter, and Paul, Mercury, for he was leader of the word.

<sup>13</sup> And the priest of Jupiter that was before the city, brought bulls and crowns before the gates, with peoples, and would have made sacrifice.

<sup>14</sup> And when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard this, they rent their coats; and they skipped out among the people, and cried,

<sup>15</sup> and said, Men, what do ye this thing? and we be deadly men like you, and show to you, that ye be converted from these vain things to the living God, that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that be in them;

<sup>16</sup> which in generations passed suffered all folks to go into their own ways.

<sup>17</sup> And yet he left not himself without witnessing in well-doing, for he gave rains from heaven, and times of bearing fruit, and full-filled your hearts with meat, and gladness.

<sup>18</sup> And they saying these things, scarcely assuaged the people, that they offered not to them.

<sup>19</sup> But some Jews came over from Antioch and Iconium, and counselled [*or stirred*] the people, and [*they*] stoned Paul, and drew *him* out of the city, and guessed that he was dead.

<sup>20</sup> But when [*the*] disciples were come about him, he rose, and went into the city; and in the day pursuing, [*or in the pursuing day*], he went forth with Barnabas into Derbe.

<sup>21</sup> And when they had preached [*or had evangelized*] to that city, and taught many, they turned again to Lystra, and Iconium, and to Antioch;

<sup>22</sup> confirming the souls of the disciples, and admonishing, that they should dwell in the faith, and said, That by many tribulations it behooveth us to enter into the kingdom of heavens.

<sup>23</sup> And when they had ordained priests to them by all cities, and had prayed with fastings, they betook them to the Lord, in whom they believed.

<sup>24</sup> And they passed Pisidia, and came to Pamphylia;

<sup>25</sup> and they spake the word of the Lord in Perga, and came down into Italy.

<sup>26</sup> And from thence they went by boat to Antioch, from whence they were taken to the grace of God, into the work that they [*ful*] filled.

<sup>27</sup> And when they were come, and had gathered the church, they told how great [*or how many*] things God did with them, and that he had opened to heathen men the door of faith.

<sup>28</sup> And they dwelled not a little time with the disciples.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> And some men came down from Judea, and taught brethren, That but ye be circumcised after the law of Moses, ye may not be made safe [*or may not be saved*].

<sup>2</sup> Therefore when there was made not a little dissension to Paul and Barnabas against them, they ordained, that Paul and Barnabas, and some others of them, should go up to the apostles and priests in Jerusalem, on this question.

<sup>3</sup> And so they were led forth of the church, and passed by Phoenicia and Samaria; and they told the conversation [*or the living*] of heathen men, and they made great joy to all the brethren.

<sup>4</sup> And when they came to Jeru-salem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles, and of the elder men, and told, how great [*or how many*] things God did with them.

<sup>5</sup> But some of the heresy of the Pharisees, that believed, rose up, and said, That it behooveth them to be circumcised, and to command to keep also the law of Moses.

<sup>6</sup> And the apostles and elder men came together, to see of this word.

<sup>7</sup> And when there was made a great seeking thereof, Peter rose, and said to them, Brethren, ye know, that of old days in you, God chose by my mouth heathen men, to hear the word of the gospel, and to believe;

<sup>8</sup> and God, that knew the hearts, bare witnessing, and gave to them the Holy Ghost, as also to us;

<sup>9</sup> and nothing diversed betwixt us and them, cleansing the hearts of them by faith.

<sup>10</sup> Now then what tempt ye God, to put a yoke on the neck of the disciples, which neither we, neither our fathers might bear?

<sup>11</sup> But by the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ we believe to be saved, as also they.

<sup>12</sup> And all the multitude held peace, and heard Barnabas and Paul, telling how great [*or how many*] signs and wonders God did by them in heathen men.

<sup>13</sup> And after that they held peace, James answered, and said, Brethren, hear ye me.

<sup>14</sup> Simon told, how God visited, first to take of heathen men, a people to his name. [*Simon told, how first God visited, to take of heathen men a people to his name.*]

<sup>15</sup> And the words of prophets accord to him, as it is written,

<sup>16</sup> After this I shall turn again, and build the tabernacle of David, that fell down; and I shall build again the cast-down things of it, and I shall raise it;

<sup>17</sup> that other men seek the Lord, and all folks, on whom my name is called to help [*or in-called*]; the Lord doing this thing, saith.

<sup>18</sup> From the world, the work of the Lord is known to the Lord.

<sup>19</sup> For which thing I deem them that of heathen men be converted to God, to be not dis-eased [*or unquieted*],

<sup>20</sup> but to write to them, that they abstain them from defoulings of mau-mets [*or of simulacra*], and from fornication, and strangled things, and blood.

<sup>21</sup> For Moses of old times hath in all cities them that preach him in syna-gogues, whereby each sabbath he is read.

<sup>22</sup> Then it pleased to the apostles, and to the elder men, with all the church, to choose men of them, and send to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas, Judas, that was named Barsabas, and Silas, the first men among brethren;

<sup>23</sup> and wrote by the hands of them, Apostles and elder brethren to them that be at Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia, brethren of heathen men, greeting.

<sup>24</sup> For we heard that some went out from us, and troubled you with words, and turned upside-down your souls, to which men we commanded not,

<sup>25</sup> it pleased to us gathered into one, to choose men, and send to you, with our most dearworthy Barnabas and Paul,

<sup>26</sup> men that gave their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>27</sup> Therefore we sent Judas and Silas, and they shall tell the same things to you by words.

<sup>28</sup> For it is seen to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to put to you nothing more of charge, than these needful things,

<sup>29</sup> that ye abstain you from the offered things of maumets [*or simu-lacra*], and blood strangled, and fornication. From which ye keeping you, shall do well. Fare ye well.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore they were let go [*or dismissed*], and came down to Antioch; and when the multitude was gathered, they betook the epistle;

<sup>31</sup> which when they had read, they joyed on the comfort.

<sup>32</sup> And Judas and Silas and they, for they were prophets, comforted brothers, and confirmed [*them*] with full many words.

<sup>33</sup> But after that they had been there a little while, they were let go of brethren with peace [*or they were dismissed with peace of brethren*], to them that had sent them.

<sup>34</sup> But it was seen to Silas, to dwell there; and Judas went alone to Jeru-salem.

<sup>35</sup> And Paul and Barnabas dwelt at Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with others many [*or with many others*].

<sup>36</sup> But after some days, Paul said to Barnabas, Turn we again, and visit we [*our*] brethren by all cities, in which we have preached the word of the Lord, how they have them.

<sup>37</sup> And Barnabas would take with him John, that was named Mark.

<sup>38</sup> But Paul prayed him, that he that departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them into the work, should not be received.

<sup>39</sup> And dissension was made, so that they departed atwain. And Barnabas took Mark, and came by boat to Cyprus.

<sup>40</sup> And Paul chose Silas, and went forth from the brethren, and was betaken to the grace of God.

<sup>41</sup> And he went by Syria and Cilicia, and confirmed the church, commanding to keep the behests [*or the precepts*] of the apostles and elder men.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> And he came into Derbe and Lystra. And lo! a disciple was there, by name Timothy, the son of a Jewess christian, and of the father heathen.

<sup>2</sup> And [*the*] brethren that were in Lystra and Iconium, yielded good witnessing to him.

<sup>3</sup> And Paul would, that this man should go forth with him, and he took, and circumcised him, for Jews that were in those places. For all knew, that his father was heathen.

<sup>4</sup> When they passed by cities, they betook to them to keep the teachings, that were deemed of apostles and elder men, that were at Jerusalem.

<sup>5</sup> And the churches were confirmed in faith, and increased in number each day.

<sup>6</sup> And they passed Phrygia, and the country of Galatia, and were forbid-den of the Holy Ghost to speak the word of God in Asia.

<sup>7</sup> And when they came to Mysia, they assayed [*or attempted*] to go into Bithynia, and the Spirit of Jesus suffered not them [*or suffered them not*].

<sup>8</sup> But when they had passed by Mysia, they came down to Troas;

<sup>9</sup> and a vision by night [*or in night*], was showed to Paul. But a man [*or Some man*] of Macedonia that stood, prayed him, and said, Go thou into Macedonia, and help us.

<sup>10</sup> And as he had seen the vision, anon we sought to go forth into Macedonia, and were made certain, that God had called us to preach [*or to evangelize*] to them.

<sup>11</sup> And we went by ship from Troas, and came to Samothracia with straight course; and the day pursuing to Neapolis;

<sup>12</sup> and from thence to Philippi, that is the first part of Macedonia, the city colony. And we were in this city some days, and spake together.

<sup>13</sup> And in the day of sabbaths we went forth without the gate beside the flood, where prayer seemed to be [*or was seen to be*]; and we sat, and spake to women that came together.

<sup>14</sup> And a woman, Lydia by name, a purpless of the city of Thyatira, worshipping God, heard; whose heart the Lord

opened to give attention to these things, that were said of Paul.

<sup>15</sup> And when she was baptized and her house, she prayed, and said, If ye have deemed that I am faithful to the Lord, enter ye into mine house, and dwell. And she constrained us.

<sup>16</sup> And it was done, when we went to prayer, that a damsel [*or a wench*] that had a spirit of divination, met us, which gave great winning to her lords in divining.

<sup>17</sup> This pursued Paul and us, and cried, and said, These men be servants of the high God, that tell to you the way of health.

<sup>18</sup> And this she did in many days. And Paul sorrowed, and turned, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ, that thou go out of her. And he went out in the same hour.

<sup>19</sup> And the lords of her saw, that the hope of their winning went away, and they took Paul and Silas, and led [*them*] into the chapping, *either doom place*, to the princes.

<sup>20</sup> And they brought them to the magistrates, and said, These men disturb [*or distrouble*] our city, for they be Jews,

<sup>21</sup> and show a custom, which [*it*] is not leaveful to us to receive, neither do, since we be Romans.

<sup>22</sup> And the people and magistrates ran against them, and when they had rent to pieces the coats of them, they commanded them to be beaten with rods.

<sup>23</sup> And when they had given to them many wounds, they sent them into prison, and commanded to the keeper, that he should keep them diligently.

<sup>24</sup> And when he had taken such a precept, he put them into the inner prison, and restrained the feet of them in a tree.

<sup>25</sup> And at midnight Paul and Silas worshipped, and praised God; and they that were in [*the*] keeping, heard them.

<sup>26</sup> And suddenly a great earth-moving was made, so that the foundations of the prison were moved. And anon all the doors were opened, and the bonds of all were loosed.

<sup>27</sup> And the keeper of the prison was awaked, and saw the gates of the prison opened, and with a sword drawn out he would have slain himself, and guessed that the men that were bound had fled.

<sup>28</sup> But Paul cried with a great voice, and said, Do thou none harm [*or nothing of evil*] to thyself, for all we be here.

<sup>29</sup> And he asked light, and entered, and trembled, and fell down to Paul and to Silas at *their* feet.

<sup>30</sup> And he brought them withoutforth, and said, Lords, what behooveth me to do, that I be made safe?



<sup>31</sup> And they said, Believe thou in the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be safe, and thine house.

<sup>32</sup> And they spake to him the word of the Lord, with all that were in his house.

<sup>33</sup> And he took them in the same hour of the night, and washed their wounds. And he was baptized, and all his house anon.

<sup>34</sup> And when he had brought them into his house, he set to them a board. And he was glad with all his house, and believed to God.

<sup>35</sup> And when day was come, the magistrates sent constables, and said, Deliver thou [*or Dismiss ye*] those men.

<sup>36</sup> And the keeper of the prison told these words to Paul, That the magistrates have sent, that ye be delivered; now therefore go ye out, and go ye in peace.

<sup>37</sup> And Paul said to them, They sent us men of Rome into prison, that were beaten openly and uncondemned, and now privily they bring us out; not so, but come they themselves, and deliver us out.

<sup>38</sup> And the constables told these words to the magistrates; and they dreaded, for they heard that they were Romans.

<sup>39</sup> And they came, and besought them, and they brought them out, and prayed, that they should go out of the city.

<sup>40</sup> And they went out of the prison, and entered [*in*] to Lydia. And when they saw brethren, they comforted them, and went forth.

## CHAPTER 17

<sup>1</sup> And when they had passed by Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a syna-gogue of Jews.

<sup>2</sup> And by custom Paul entered to them, and by three sabbaths he declared to them of the scriptures,

<sup>3</sup> and opened, and showed that it behoooved Christ to suffer, and rise again from death, and that this is Jesus Christ, whom I tell to you.

<sup>4</sup> And some of them believed, and were joined to Paul and to Silas; and a great multitude of heathen men worshipped God, and noble women not a few.

<sup>5</sup> But the Jews had envy, and took of the common people some evil men, and when they had made a company, they moved the city. And they came to Jason's house, and sought to bring *them* forth among the people.

<sup>6</sup> And when they found them not, they drew Jason and some brethren to the princes of the city, and cried, That these it be, that moved the world, and hither they came,

7 whom Jason received. And these all do against the commandments of the emperor [*or of Caesar*], and say, that Jesus is another king.

8 And they moved the people, and the princes of the city, hearing these things.

9 And when satisfaction was taken of Jason, and of others, they let Paul and Silas go.

10 And anon by night, brethren let [*Paul and*] Silas go into Berea [*or brethren sent Paul and Silas into Berea*]. And when they came thither, they entered into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 But these were the worthier [*or the nobler*] of them that be at Thessalonica, which received the word with all desire, each day seeking [*the*] scrip-tures, if these things had them so.

12 And many of them believed, and of heathen women honest [*or honest heathen women*] and men not a few.

13 But when the Jews in Thessalonica had known, that also at Berea the word of God was preached of Paul, they came thither, moving and disturbing [*or distroubling*] the multitude.

14 And then anon brethren delivered [*or dismissed*] Paul, that he should go to the sea; but Silas and Timothy dwelt there.

15 And they that led forth Paul, led him to Athens. And when they had taken a commandment of him to Silas and Timothy, that full hieingly they should come to him, they went forth.

16 And while Paul abode them at Athens, his spirit was moved in him, for he saw the city given to idolatry.

17 Therefore he disputed in the synagogue with the Jews, and with men that worshipped God, and in the doom place [*or the chapping*], by all days to them that heard.

18 And some Epicureans, and Stoics, and philosophers disputed with him. And some said, What will this sower of words say? And others said, He seemeth to be a teller of new fiends; for he told to them Jesus, and the again-rising.

19 And they took, and led him to Areopagus, [*that is, a common school*], and said, May we know, what is this new doctrine, that is said of thee?

20 For thou bringest in some new things to our ears; therefore we will know, what these things will be.

21 For all men of Athens and come-lings harboured, gave attention to none other thing, but either to say, either to hear, some new thing.

22 And Paul stood in the middle of Areopagus, and said, Men of Athens, by all things I see you as vain worshippers.

<sup>23</sup> For I passed, and saw your maumets [*or simulacra*], and found an altar, in which was written, To the unknown God. Therefore which thing ye unknowing worship, this thing I show to you.

<sup>24</sup> God that made the world and all things that be in it, this, for he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with [*or by*] hand,

<sup>25</sup> neither is worshipped by man's hands, neither hath need of anything, for he giveth life to all men, and breathing, and all things;

<sup>26</sup> and made of one all the kind of men to inhabit on all the face of the earth, determining times ordained, and terms of the dwelling [*or the habitation*] of them,

<sup>27</sup> to seek God, if peradventure they feel him, either find, though he be not far from each of you.

<sup>28</sup> For in him we live, and move, and be. As also some of your poets said, And we be also the kind [*or the kin*] of him.

<sup>29</sup> Therefore since we be the kind [*or the kin*] of God, we shall not deem [*or guess*] that godly thing is like gold, and silver, either stone, either to engraving of craft and thought of man.

<sup>30</sup> For God despiseth the times of this unknowing, and now showeth to men, that all everywhere do penance;

<sup>31</sup> for that he hath ordained a day, in which he shall deem the world in equity, in a man in which he ordained, and gave faith to all men, and raised him from death.

<sup>32</sup> And when they had heard the again-rising of dead men, some scorned, and some said, We shall hear thee again of this thing.

<sup>33</sup> So Paul went out of the middle of them.

<sup>34</sup> But some men drew [*or cleaved*] to him, and believed. Among which Dionysius Areopagite was, and a woman, by name Damaris, and other men with them.

## CHAPTER 18

<sup>1</sup> After these things Paul went out of Athens, and came to Corinth.

<sup>2</sup> And he found a man, a Jew, Aquila by name, of Pontus by kind, that late came from Italy, and Priscilla, his wife, for that Claudius commanded all Jews to depart from Rome; and he came to them.

<sup>3</sup> And for that he was of the same craft, he dwelled with them, and wrought; and they were of rope-makers craft, [*or tent-makers craft, that is, to make coverings to travelling men*].

<sup>4</sup> And he disputed in the synagogue by each sabbath, putting among the name of the Lord Jesus; and he counselled Jews and Greeks.

<sup>5</sup> And when Silas and Timothy came from Macedonia, Paul gave busyness to the word, and witnessed to the Jews, that Jesus is Christ.

<sup>6</sup> But when they gainsaid and blasphemed, he shook away [*or shook off*] his clothes, and said to them, Your blood *be* on your head; I shall be clean from henceforth, and I shall go to heathen men.

<sup>7</sup> And he passed from thence, and entered into the house of a just man, Titus by name, that worshipped God, whose house was joined to the synagogue.

<sup>8</sup> And Crispus, prince of the syna-gogue, believed to the Lord, with all his house. And many of the Corinthians heard, and believed, and were christened.

<sup>9</sup> And the Lord said by night to Paul by a vision, Do not thou dread, but speak, and be not still;

<sup>10</sup> for I am with thee, and no man shall be put to thee to annoy thee, for much people is to me in this city.

<sup>11</sup> And he dwelled there a year and six months, teaching among them the word of God.

<sup>12</sup> But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, [*the*] Jews rose up with one will against Paul, and led him to the doom,

<sup>13</sup> and said, Against the law this counseleth men to worship God.

<sup>14</sup> And when Paul began to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews, If there were any wicked thing, either evil [*or worst*] trespass, ye Jews, rightly I should suffer you;

<sup>15</sup> but if questions be of the word, and of names of your law, busy your-selves [*or ye yourselves see*]; I will not be doomsman of these things.

<sup>16</sup> And he drove them from the doom place.

<sup>17</sup> And all took Sosthenes, prince of the synagogue, and smote him before the doom place; and nothing of these was to care to Gallio.

<sup>18</sup> And when Paul had abided many days, he said farewell to brethren, and by boat came to Syria. And Priscilla and Aquila came with him, which had clipped his head in Cenchrea; for he had a vow.

<sup>19</sup> And he came to Ephesus, and there he left them; and he went into the synagogue, and disputed with Jews.

<sup>20</sup> And when they prayed, that he should dwell more time, he consented not,

<sup>21</sup> but he made farewell to brethren, and said, [*It behooveth me to make the solemn day coming at Jerusalem, and*] again I shall turn again to you, if God will [*or God willing*]; and he went forth from Ephesus.

<sup>22</sup> And he came down to Caesarea, and he went up, and greeted the church, and came down to Antioch.

<sup>23</sup> And when he had dwelled there somewhat of time, he went forth, walking by row [*or by order*] through the country of Galatia, and Phrygia, and confirmed all the disciples.

<sup>24</sup> But a Jew, Apollos by name, a man of Alexandria of kind, a man eloquent, came to Ephesus; *and he was* mighty in scriptures.

<sup>25</sup> This man was taught the way of the Lord, and was fervent in spirit, and spake, and taught diligently those things that were of Jesus, and knew only the baptism of John.

<sup>26</sup> And this man began to do trustily in the synagogue. Whom when Priscilla and Aquila heard, they took him, and more diligently expounded to him the way of the Lord.

<sup>27</sup> And when he would go to Achaia, brethren excited, [*or admonished, or counselled*], and wrote to the disciples, that they should receive him; which when he came, gave much to them that believed.

<sup>28</sup> For he greatly overcame Jews, and showed openly by scriptures, that Jesus is Christ.

## CHAPTER 19

<sup>1</sup> And it befell, when Apollos was at Corinth, that Paul when he had gone the higher coasts, he came to Ephesus, and found some of the disciples.

<sup>2</sup> And he said to them, Whether ye that believe have received the Holy Ghost? And they said to him, But neither have we heard [*or neither we have heard*], if the Holy Ghost is.

<sup>3</sup> And he said, Therefore in what thing be ye baptized? And they said, In the baptism of John.

<sup>4</sup> And Paul said, John baptized the people in the baptism of penance, and taught, that they should believe in him that was to come [*or to come*] after him, that is, in Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> When they heard these things, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>6</sup> And when Paul had laid on them his hands, the Holy Ghost came into them [*or on them*], and they spake with languages, and prophesied.

<sup>7</sup> And all were almost twelve men.

<sup>8</sup> And he went into the synagogue, and spake with trust three months, disputing and treating [*or softly moving*] of the kingdom of God.

<sup>9</sup> But when some were harded [*or were made hard*], and believed not, and cursed the way of the Lord before the multitude, he went away from them, and separated the disciples, and disputed in the school of a mighty man each day.

<sup>10</sup> This was done by two years, so that all that dwelled in Asia heard the word of the Lord, Jews and heathen men.

<sup>11</sup> And God did virtues not small [*or little*] by the hand of Paul,

<sup>12</sup> so that on sick men the sudaria, [*or sweating clothes*], were borne from his body, and sicknesses departed from them, and wicked spirits went out.

<sup>13</sup> But also some of the Jewish exorcists went about, and assayed [*or attempted*] to [*in*]-call the name of the Lord Jesus Christ on them that had evil spirits, and said, I conjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth.

<sup>14</sup> And there were seven sons of a Jew, Sceva, a prince of priests, that did this thing.

<sup>15</sup> But the evil spirit answered, and said to them, I know Jesus, and I know Paul; but who be ye?

<sup>16</sup> And the man in which was the worst devil, leaped on them, and had victory [*or lordship*] on both, and was strong against them, that they naked and wounded fled away from that house.

<sup>17</sup> And this thing was made known to all the Jews and heathen men, that dwelled at Ephesus; and dread fell down on them all, and they magnified the name of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>18</sup> And many men believed, and came, acknowledging and telling their deeds.

<sup>19</sup> And many of them that pursued curious things, brought together books, and burned them before all men; and when the prices of those were accounted, they found money of fifty thousand pence;

<sup>20</sup> so strongly the word of God waxed, and was confirmed.

<sup>21</sup> And when these things were [*ful*] filled, Paul purposed in spirit, after that Macedonia was passed and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, and said, For after that I shall be there, it behooveth me also to see Rome [*or to see also Rome*].

<sup>22</sup> And he sent into Macedonia two *men*, that ministered to him, Timothy, and Erastus, and he dwelled for a time in Asia.

<sup>23</sup> And a great troubling was made in that day, of [*or in*] the way of the Lord.

<sup>24</sup> For a man, Demetrius by name, a worker in silver, made silver houses to Diana, [*that is, a false goddess*], and gave to craftsmen much winning;

<sup>25</sup> which he called together them that were such manner workmen, and said, Men, ye know that of this craft winning is to us;

<sup>26</sup> and ye see and hear, that this Paul counseleth and turneth away much people, not only of Ephesus, but almost of all Asia, and said, that they be not gods, that be made with hands.

<sup>27</sup> And not only this part shall be in peril to us, to come into reproof, but also the temple of the great Diana shall be accounted into nought; yea, and the majesty of her shall begin to be destroyed [*or but and the majesty of her shall be destroyed*], whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

<sup>28</sup> When these things were heard, they were [*full*]-filled with ire, and cried, and said, Great is the Diana of the Ephesians.

<sup>29</sup> And the city was filled with confusion, and they made an assault with one will into the theatre, and took Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, fellows of Paul.

<sup>30</sup> And when Paul would have entered into the people, the disciples suffered not.

<sup>31</sup> And also some of the princes of Asia, that were his friends, sent to him, and prayed, that he should not give himself into the theatre.

<sup>32</sup> And other men cried other thing; for the church was confused, and many knew not for what cause they were come together.

<sup>33</sup> But of the people they drew away one Alexander, while Jews putted him forth. And Alexander asked with his hand silence, and would yield reason to the people.

<sup>34</sup> And as they knew that he was a Jew, one voice of all men was made, crying as by twain hours, Great is Diana of Ephesians.

<sup>35</sup> And when the scribe, *that is, a town clerk*, had ceased the people, he said, Men of Ephesus, what man is he, that knoweth not, that the city of Ephesians is the worshipper of the great Diana, and of the child of Jupiter?

<sup>36</sup> Therefore when it may not be gainsaid to these things, it behooveth you to be ceased [*or to be assuaged*], and to do nothing follily;

<sup>37</sup> for ye have brought these men, neither sacrilegers, neither blaspheming your goddess.

<sup>38</sup> That if Demetrius, and the work-men that be with him, have cause against any man, there be courts, and dooms, and judges; accuse they each other.

<sup>39</sup> If ye seek aught of any other thing, it may be absolved in the lawful church.

<sup>40</sup> For why we be in peril to be reprov'd of this day's dissension [*or sedition*], since no man is guilty, of whom we may yield reason of this running together.

<sup>41</sup> And when he had said this thing, he let the people go.

## CHAPTER 20

<sup>1</sup> And after [*that*] the noise ceased, Paul called the disciples, and admon-ished them, and said farewell; and he went forth, to go into Macedonia.

<sup>2</sup> And when he had walked by those coasts [*or parts*], and had admonished them by many words, he came to Greece.

<sup>3</sup> Where when he had been three months, the Jews laid ambush for him, that was to sail into Syria; and he had counsel to turn again by Macedonia.

<sup>4</sup> And Sopater of Pyrrhi Berea pursued him; of Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius Derbeus, and Timothy; and Asians, Tychicus and Trophimus.

<sup>5</sup> These for they went before, abode us at Troas.

<sup>6</sup> For we shipped after the days of therf loaves from Philippi, and came to them at Troas in five days, where we dwelt seven days.

<sup>7</sup> And in the first day of the week, when we came to break bread, Paul disputed with them, and should go forth in the morrow; and he drew along the sermon till into midnight.

<sup>8</sup> And many lamps were in the solar, where we were gathered together.

<sup>9</sup> And a young man, Eutychus by name, sat on the window, when he was fallen into an heavy sleep, while Paul disputed long, all sleeping he fell down from the third stage; and he was taken up, and was brought dead.

<sup>10</sup> To whom when Paul came down, he lay on him, and embraced, and said, Do not ye be troubled; for his soul is in him.

<sup>11</sup> And he went up, and brake bread, and ate, and spake enough unto the day [*or till into the light*]; and so he went forth.

<sup>12</sup> And they brought the child alive, and they were comforted greatly.

<sup>13</sup> And we went up into a ship, and shipped into Assos, to take Paul from thence; for so he had disposed to make journey by land.



14 And when he found us in Assos, we took him, and came to Mitylene.

15 And from thence we shipped in the day pursuing, and we came against Chios, and another day we havened at Samos, and in the day pursuing, we came to Miletus.

16 And Paul purposed to ship over to Ephesus, lest any tarrying were made to him in Asia; for he hied, if it were possible to him, that he should be in the day of Pentecost at Jerusalem.

17 From Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the greatest men of birth [*or the more through birth, either the elder men*], of the church.

18 And when they came to him, and were together, he said to them, Ye know from the first day, in which I came into Asia, how with you by each time I was,

19 serving to the Lord with all meekness, and mildness, and tears, and temptations, that felled to me of ambushings of Jews;

20 how I withdrew not [*or nought*] of profitable things to you, that I told not to you, and taught you openly, and by houses;

21 and I witnessed to Jews and to heathen men penance into God, and faith into our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now lo! I am bound in spirit, and go into Jerusalem; and I know not what things shall come to me in it,

23 but that the Holy Ghost by all cities witnesseth to me, and saith, that bonds and tribulations at Jerusalem abide me.

24 But I dread nothing of these, neither I make my life preciouser than myself, so that I end, [*or fulfill*], my course, and the ministry of the word, which I received of the Lord Jesus, to witness the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now lo! I know, that ye shall no more see my face, all ye by which I passed, preaching the kingdom of God.

26 Wherefore I witness to you this day, that I am clean of the blood of all men.

27 For I fled [*or flew*] not away, that I told not to you all the counsel of God.

28 Take ye attention to you, and to all the flock, in which the Holy Ghost hath set [*or hath put*] you, bishops to rule the church of God, which he purchased with his blood.

29 I know, that after my departing, ravening wolves shall enter into you, not sparing the flock;

30 and men speaking shrewd [*or wayward*] things shall rise of your-selves, that they lead away disciples after them.

<sup>31</sup> For which thing wake ye, holding in mind, that by three years night and day I ceased not, with tears, admon-ishing each of you.

<sup>32</sup> And now I betake you to God and to the word of his grace, that is mighty to edify and give heritage in all that be made holy.

<sup>33</sup> And of no man I coveted silver, and gold, either cloth,

<sup>34</sup> as [*ye*] yourselves know; for to those things that were needful to me, and to these that be with me, these hands ministered.

<sup>35</sup> All these things I showed to you, for so it behooveth men travailing to receive sick men, and to have mind of the word of the Lord Jesus; for he said, It is more blessing [*or more blessed*] to give, than to receive.

<sup>36</sup> And when he had said these things, he kneeled, and prayed with all them.

<sup>37</sup> And great weeping of all men was made; and they felled on the neck of Paul, and kissed him,

<sup>38</sup> and sorrowed most in the word that he said, for they shall no more see his face. And they led him to the ship.

## CHAPTER 21

<sup>1</sup> And when it was done, that we should sail, and were passed away from them, with straight course we came to Coos, and the day pursuing to Rhodes, and from thence to Patara, and from thence to Myra.

<sup>2</sup> And when we found a ship passing over to Phoenicia, we went up into it, and sailed forth.

<sup>3</sup> And when we appeared to Cyprus, we left it at the left half, and sailed into Syria, and came to Tyre. For there the ship should be uncharged.

<sup>4</sup> And when we found disciples, we dwelled there seven days; which said by Spirit to Paul, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

<sup>5</sup> And when the days were [*ful*] filled, we went forth, and all men with wives and children led forth us with-out the city; and we kneeled in the sea brink, and we prayed.

<sup>6</sup> And when we had made farewell together, we went up into the ship; and they turned again into their own places.

<sup>7</sup> And when the ship sailing was filled from Tyre, we came down to Ptolemais, and when we had greeted well the brethren, we dwelled one day at them.

<sup>8</sup> And another day we went forth, and came to Caesarea. And we entered into the house of Philip evangelist, that was one of the seven, and dwelled at him.

<sup>9</sup> And to him were four daughters, virgins, that prophesied.

<sup>10</sup> And when we dwelled there some days, a prophet, Agabus by name, came over from Judea.

<sup>11</sup> This when he came to us, took the girdle of Paul, and bound together his feet and hands, and said, The Holy Ghost saith these things, Thus *[the]* Jews shall bind in Jerusalem the man, whose is this girdle; and they shall betake *him* into heathen men's hands.

<sup>12</sup> Which thing when we heard, we prayed, and they that were of that place, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

<sup>13</sup> Then Paul answered, and said, What do ye, weeping and tormenting mine heart? For I am ready, not only to be bound, but also to die in Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>14</sup> And when we might not counsel him, we were still, and said, The will of the Lord be done.

<sup>15</sup> And after these days we were made ready, and went up to Jerusalem.

<sup>16</sup> And some of the disciples came with us from Caesarea, and led with them a man, Jason of Cyprus, an old disciple, at whom we should be harboured.

<sup>17</sup> And when we came to Jerusalem, brethren received us willfully.

<sup>18</sup> And in the day pursuing, Paul entered with us to James, and all the elder men were gathered.

<sup>19</sup> Which when he had greeted, he told by all things, what *[things]* God had done in heathen men, by the ministry of him.

<sup>20</sup> And when they heard, they magnified God, and said to him, Brother, thou seest how many thousands be in Jews, that have believed to God, and all be lovers *[or pursuers]* of the law.

<sup>21</sup> And they heard of thee, that thou teachest departing from Moses of those Jews that be by heathen men, that say, that they owe not to circumcise their sons, neither owe to enter by *[or after]* custom.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore what is *[this]*? It behooveth that the multitude come together; for they shall hear, that thou art come.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore do thou this thing, that we say to thee. There be to us four men, that have a vow on them.

<sup>24</sup> Take thou these men, and hallow thee with them; hang on them, that they shave their heads; and that all men know, that those things that they heard of thee be false, but that thou walkest, and thyself keepest the law.

<sup>25</sup> But of these that believed of heathen men, we have written, deeming that they abstain them from thing offered to idols, and from blood, and also from strangled thing, and from fornication.

<sup>26</sup> Then Paul took the men, and in the day pursuing, he was purified with them, and entered into the temple, and showed the *[ful]* filling of days of purifying, till the offering was offered for each of them.

<sup>27</sup> And when seven days were ended, the Jews that were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred all the people, and laid hands on him,

<sup>28</sup> and cried, Men of Israel, help ye us. This is the man, that against the people and the law and this place teacheth everywhere all men, more-over and hath led heathen men into the temple, and hath defouled this holy place.

<sup>29</sup> For they saw Trophimus of Ephesus in the city with him, whom they guessed that Paul had brought into the temple.

<sup>30</sup> And all the city was moved, and a running together of the people was made. And they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple; and anon the gates were closed.

<sup>31</sup> And when they sought to slay him, it was told to the tribune of the company of knights, that all Jerusalem is confounded.

<sup>32</sup> Which anon took knights, and centurions, and ran to them. And when they had seen the tribune, and the knights, they ceased to smite Paul.

<sup>33</sup> Then the tribune came, and caught him, and commanded, that he were bound with two chains; and asked, who he was, and what he had done.

<sup>34</sup> But others cried other thing among the people. And when he might know no certain thing for the noise, he commanded him to be led into the castles.

<sup>35</sup> And when Paul came to the grees, it befell that he was borne of knights, for strength of the people.

<sup>36</sup> For the multitude of the people pursued him, and cried, Take him away.

<sup>37</sup> And when Paul began to be led into the castles, he said to the tribune, Whether it is leaveful to me, to speak anything to thee? And he said, Knowest thou Greek?

<sup>38</sup> Whether thou art not the Egyptian, which before these days movedest a noise, and leddest out into desert four thousand of men, menslayers?

<sup>39</sup> And Paul said to him, For I am a Jew, of Tarsus of Cilicia, a citizen, which city is not unknown. And I pray thee, suffer me to speak to the people.

<sup>40</sup> And when he suffered, Paul stood in the grees, and beckoned with the hand to the people. And when a great silence was made, he spake in Hebrew tongue, and said,

## CHAPTER 22

<sup>1</sup> Brethren and fathers, hear ye what reason I yield now to you.

<sup>2</sup> And when some heard that in Hebrew tongue he spake to them, they gave the more silence [*or gave more silence*]. And he said,

<sup>3</sup> I am a man a Jew, born at Tarsus of Cilicia, nourished and in this city beside the feet of Gamaliel, taught by the truth of fathers' law, a lover [*or a follower*] of the law, as also ye all be today.

<sup>4</sup> And I pursued this way till to the death, binding [*together*] and betaking into holds men and women,

<sup>5</sup> as the prince of priests yieldeth witnessing to me, and all the greatest of birth [*or the more in birth*]. Of whom also I took epistles to brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring from thence men bound into Jerusalem, that they should be pained.

<sup>6</sup> And it was done, while I went, and nighed to Damascus, at midday suddenly from heaven a great plenty of light [*or a copious light*] shone about me.

<sup>7</sup> And I felled down to the earth, and heard a voice from heaven, saying to me, Saul, Saul, what persecutest [*or pursuest*] thou me? It is hard to [*or for*] thee, to kick against the prick.

<sup>8</sup> And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And he said to me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest [*or pursuest*].

<sup>9</sup> And they that were with me saw but the light, but they heard not the voice of him, that spake with me.

<sup>10</sup> And I said, Lord, what shall I do? And the Lord said to me, Rise thou, and go to Damascus; and there it shall be said to thee, of all things which it behooveth thee to do.

<sup>11</sup> And when I saw not, for the clarity of that light, I was led by the hand of fellows, and I came to Damascus.

<sup>12</sup> And a man, Ananias, that by the law had witnessing of all Jews dwelling in Damascus,

<sup>13</sup> came to me, and stood nigh, and said to me, Saul, brother, behold. And I in the same hour beheld into him.

<sup>14</sup> And he said, God of our fathers hath before-ordained thee, that thou shouldest know the will of him, and shouldest see the rightful man, [*that is, just Christ*], and hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witness to all men, of those things that thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now, what dwellest thou? Rise up, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, by the name of him called to help.

17 And it was done to me, as I turned again into Jerusalem, and prayed in the temple, that I was made in ravishing of soul,

18 and I saw him saying to me, Hie thou, and go out fast of Jerusalem, for they shall not receive thy witnessing of me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know, that I was enclosing together in prison, and beating by synagogues them that believed into thee [*or in thee*].

20 And when the blood of Stephen, thy witness, was shed out, I stood nigh, and consented, and kept the clothes of men that slew him.

21 And he said to me, Go thou, for I shall send thee far to nations.

22 And they heard him till [*to*] this word; and they raised their voice, and said, Take away from the earth such a manner man; for it is not leaveful that he live.

23 And when they cried, and cast away their clothes, and threw dust in the air,

24 the tribune commanded him to be led into the castles, and to be beaten with scourges, and to be tormented, that he knew [*or should know*], for what cause they cried so to him.

25 And when they had bound him with cords [*or had restrained him with ropes*], Paul said to a centurion standing nigh to him, Whether it is leaveful to you, to scourge a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 And when this thing was heard, the centurion went to the tribune, and told to him, and said, What art thou to doing? for this man is a citizen of Rome.

27 And the tribune came nigh, and said to him, Say thou to me, whether thou art a Roman? And he said, Yea.

28 And the tribune answered, I with much sum got this freedom. And Paul said, And I was born *a citizen of Rome*.

29 Therefore anon, they that should have tormented him, departed away from him. And the tribune dreaded, after that he knew, that he was a citizen of Rome, and for [*or that*] he had bound him.

30 But in the day pursuing he would know more diligently, for what cause he were accused of the Jews, and unbound him, and commanded priests and all the council to come together. And he brought forth Paul, and set him among them.

## CHAPTER 23

<sup>1</sup> And Paul beheld into the council, and said, Brethren, I with all good conscience have lived before God, till into this day.

<sup>2</sup> And Ananias, prince of priests, commanded to men that stood nigh to him, that they should smite his mouth.

<sup>3</sup> Then Paul said to him, Thou whited wall [*or Thou wall made white*], God [*shall*] smite thee; thou sittest, and deemest me by the law, and against the law thou commandest me to be smitten.

<sup>4</sup> And they that stood nigh, said, Cursest thou the highest priest [*or the high priest*] of God?

<sup>5</sup> And Paul said, Brethren, I knew not, that he is [*the*] prince of priests; for it is written, Thou shalt not curse the prince of thy people.

<sup>6</sup> But Paul knew, that one part was of Sadducees, and the other of Phari-sees; and he cried in the council, Brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of Pharisees; I am deemed of the hope and of the again-rising of dead *men*.

<sup>7</sup> And when he had said this thing, dissension was made betwixt the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the multitude was parted.

<sup>8</sup> For Sadducees say, that no rising again of dead men is, neither angel, neither spirit; but Pharisees acknowledge ever either [*or both*].

<sup>9</sup> And a great cry was made. And some of the Pharisees rose up, and fought, saying, We find nothing of evil in this man; what if a spirit, either an angel, spake to him?

<sup>10</sup> And when great dissension was made, the tribune dreaded, lest Paul should be drawn to pieces of them; and he commanded knights to go down, and to take [*or to ravish*] him from the middle of them, and to lead him into the castles.

<sup>11</sup> And in the night pursuing the Lord stood nigh to him, and said, Be thou steadfast; for as thou hast witnessed of me in Jerusalem, so it behooveth thee to witness also at Rome.

<sup>12</sup> And when the day was come, some of the Jews gathered them, and made a vow, and said, that they should neither eat, nor drink, till they slew Paul.

<sup>13</sup> And there were more than forty men, that made this swearing together [*or conjuration*].

<sup>14</sup> And they went to the princes of priests, and elder men, and said, With devotion we have avowed, that we shall not taste anything, till we have slain Paul.

<sup>15</sup> Now therefore make ye known to the tribune, with the council, that he bring him forth to you, as if ye should know

something more certainly of him; and we be ready to slay him, before that he come [*nigh*].

<sup>16</sup> And when the son of Paul's sister had heard the ambush [*or the treason*], he came, and entered into the castles, and told to Paul.

<sup>17</sup> And Paul called to him one of the centurions, and said, Lead this young man to the tribune, for he hath something to show to him.

<sup>18</sup> And he took him, and led to the tribune, and said, Paul, that is bound, prayed me to lead to thee this young man, that hath something to speak to thee.

<sup>19</sup> And the tribune took his hand, and went with him asides half, and asked him, What thing is it, that thou hast to show to me?

<sup>20</sup> And he said, The Jews be accorded to pray thee, that tomorrow thou bring forth Paul into the council, as if they should inquire something more certainly of him.

<sup>21</sup> But believe thou not to them; for more than forty men of them ambush him, which have avowed, that they shall neither eat nor drink, till they slay him; and now they be ready, abiding thy promise.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore the tribune left the young man, and commanded, that he should speak to no man, that he had made these things known to him.

<sup>23</sup> And he called together two centurions, and he said to them, Make ye ready two hundred knights, that they go to Caesarea, and horsemen seventy, and spearmen two hundred, from the third hour of the night.

<sup>24</sup> And make ye ready an horse, for Paul to ride on, to lead him safe to Felix, the president. For the tribune dreaded, lest the Jews would take him by the way, and slay him, and afterward he might be challenged, as he had taken money.

<sup>25</sup> [*And*] He wrote to him an epistle, containing these things.

<sup>26</sup> Claudius Lysias to the best Felix, president, health.

<sup>27</sup> This man that was taken of the Jews, and began to be slain, I came upon them with mine host, and delivered him from them, when I knew that he was a Roman.

<sup>28</sup> And I would know the cause, which they putted against him; and I led him [*in*] to the council of them.

<sup>29</sup> And I found, that he was accused of questions of their law, but he had no crime worthy the death, either bonds.

<sup>30</sup> And when it was told me of the ambush, that they arrayed for him, [*or of the treasons, that they made ready to him*], I sent him to thee, and I warned also the accusers, that they say at thee. Farewell.



<sup>31</sup> And so the knights as they were commanded, took Paul, and led him by night into Antipatris.

<sup>32</sup> And in the day pursuing, when the horsemen were left, that should go with him, they turned again to the castles.

<sup>33</sup> And when they came to Caesarea, they took the epistle to the president, and they set also Paul before him.

<sup>34</sup> And when he had read, and asked, of what province he was, and knew that he was of Cilicia,

<sup>35</sup> I shall hear thee, he said, when thine accusers come. And he commanded him to be kept in the moot hall of Herod.

## CHAPTER 24

<sup>1</sup> And after five days, Ananias, prince of priests, came down with some elder men, and Tertullus, a fair speaker, [*or an orator; or an advocate*], which went to the president against Paul.

<sup>2</sup> And when Paul was summoned, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, and said, When in much peace we do by thee, and many things be amended by thy wisdom,

<sup>3</sup> evermore and everywhere, thou best Felix, we have received with all doing of thankings.

<sup>4</sup> But lest I tarry thee longer, I pray thee, shortly hear us for thy meekness.

<sup>5</sup> We have found this wicked man stirring dissension, to all Jews in all the world, and author of dissension of the sect of Nazarenes; [*We have found this man bearing venom, or pestilence, and stirring sedition, or dissention, to all the Jews in all the world, and author of sedition of the sect of Nazarenes;*]

<sup>6</sup> and he also endeavoured to defoul the temple; whom also we took, and would deem after our law.

<sup>7</sup> But Lysias, the tribune, came above with great strength, and delivered him from [*or out of*] our hands;

<sup>8</sup> and commanded his accusers to come to thee, of whom thou deem-ing, mayest know of all these things, of which we accuse him.

<sup>9</sup> And Jews put to, and said, that these things had them so.

<sup>10</sup> And Paul answered, when the president granted him to say, Of many years I know thee, that thou art doomsman to this folk, and I shall do enough for me with good reason.

<sup>11</sup> For thou mayest know, for to me be not more [*or no more*] than twelve days, since I came up to worship in Jerusalem;

<sup>12</sup> and neither in the temple they found me disputing with any man, neither making concourse of the people, neither in the synagogues, neither in city;

<sup>13</sup> neither they may prove to thee, of the which things they now accuse me.

<sup>14</sup> But I acknowledge to thee this thing, that after the sect which they say heresy, so I serve to God the Father, believing to all things that be written in the law and prophets;

<sup>15</sup> and I have hope in God, which also they themselves abide, the again-rising to coming [*or to come*] of just men and wicked.

<sup>16</sup> In this thing I study without hurting, to have conscience to God, and to men evermore.

<sup>17</sup> But after many years, I came to do alms-deeds to my folk, and offerings, and avows [*or vows*];

<sup>18</sup> in which they found me purified in the temple, not with company, neither with noise. And they caught me, and they cried, and said, Take away our enemy. And some Jews of Asia,

<sup>19</sup> which [*or whom*] it behooved to be now present at thee, and accuse, if they had anything against me,

<sup>20</sup> either these themselves say, if they found in me anything of wicked-ness, since I stand in the council,

<sup>21</sup> but only of this [*one*] voice, by which I cried standing among them, For of the again-rising of dead men I am deemed this day of you.

<sup>22</sup> Soothly Felix delayed [*or deferred*] them, and knew most certainly of the way, and said, When Lysias, the tribune, shall come down, I shall hear you.

<sup>23</sup> And he commanded to a centurion to keep him, and that he had rest [*or to have rest*], neither to forbid any man to minister of his own things to him.

<sup>24</sup> And after some days Felix came, with Drusilla his wife, that was a Jewess, and called Paul, and heard of him the faith that is in Christ Jesus.

<sup>25</sup> And while he disputed of right-wiseness, and chastity, and of doom to coming [*or to come*], Felix was made trembling, and answered, That pertaineth now, go; but in time covenable, I shall call thee.

<sup>26</sup> Also he hoped, that money should be given to him of Paul; for which thing again [*or oft*] he called him, and spake with him.

<sup>27</sup> And when two years were [*ful*]-filled, Felix took a successor, Porcius Festus; and Felix would [*or willing to*] give grace to the Jews, and left Paul bound.

## CHAPTER 25

<sup>1</sup> Therefore when Festus came into the province, after the third day he went up to Jerusalem from Caesarea.

<sup>2</sup> And the princes of priests, and the worthiest [*or the first*] of the Jews went to him against Paul, and prayed him,

<sup>3</sup> and asked grace against him, that he should command him to be led to Jerusalem; and they set ambush to slay him in the way.

<sup>4</sup> But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept in Caesarea; soothly that he himself should proceed more advisedly [*or hastily*].

<sup>5</sup> Therefore he said, They that in you be mighty, come down together; and if any crime is in the man, accuse they him.

<sup>6</sup> And he dwelled among them no more than eight either ten days, and came down to Caesarea; and the tother day he sat for doomsman, and commanded Paul to be brought.

<sup>7</sup> And when he was brought forth, Jews stood about him, which came down from Jerusalem, putting against him many and grievous causes, which they might not prove.

<sup>8</sup> For Paul yielded reason in all things, That neither against the law of Jews, neither against the temple, neither against the emperor [*or Caesar*], I sinned anything.

<sup>9</sup> But Festus would do grace [*or willing to give grace*] to the Jews, and answered to Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be deemed of these things before me?

<sup>10</sup> And Paul said, At the doom place of the emperor [*or of Caesar*] I stand, where it behooveth me to be deemed. I have not annoyed the Jews, as thou knowest well.

<sup>11</sup> For if I have annoyed, either done anything worthy death, I forsake not to die; but if nothing of those is, that they accuse me, no man may give me to them. I appeal to the emperor [*or to Caesar*].

<sup>12</sup> Then Festus spake with the coun-cil, and answered, To the emperor [*or To Caesar*] thou hast appealed, to the emperor [*or to Caesar*] thou shalt go.

<sup>13</sup> And when some days were passed, Agrippa king, and Bernice came down to Caesarea, to welcome [*or to greet*] Festus.

<sup>14</sup> And when they dwelled there many days, Festus showed to the king of Paul, and said, A man is left bound of Felix,

<sup>15</sup> of which, when I was at Jeru-salem, princes of priests, and the elder men of the Jews came to me, and asked damnation against him.

<sup>16</sup> To whom I answered, That it is not custom to Romans, to damn any man, before that he that is accused have his accusers present, and take place of defending, to put away the crimes, that be put against *him*.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore when they came together hither, without any delay, in the day pursuing I sat for doomsman, and commanded the man to be brought.

<sup>18</sup> And when his accusers stood [*nigh*], they said no cause of which things I had suspicion of evil.

<sup>19</sup> But they had against him some questions of their vain worshipping, [*or religion*], and of one Jesus dead, whom Paul affirmed to live.

<sup>20</sup> And I doubted of such manner questions, and said, Whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be deemed of these things?

<sup>21</sup> But for Paul appealed, that he should be kept to the knowing of the emperor [*or of Caesar*], I commanded him to be kept, till I send him to the emperor [*or to Caesar*].

<sup>22</sup> And Agrippa said to Festus, I myself would hear the man. And he said, Tomorrow thou shalt hear him.

<sup>23</sup> And on the tother day, when Agrippa and Bernice came with great desire, [*or pride of state*], and entered into the auditorium, with tribunes and the principal men of the city, when Festus bade, Paul was brought.

<sup>24</sup> And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men that be with us, ye see this man, of which all the multitude of Jews prayed me at Jerusalem, and asked, and cried, that he should live no longer.

<sup>25</sup> But I found, that he had done nothing worthy of death; and I deemed to send *him* to the emperor [*or to Caesar*], for he appealed this thing.

<sup>26</sup> Of which man I have not certain, what thing I shall write to the lord. For which thing I brought him to you, and mostly to thee, thou king Agrippa [*or O king Agrippa*], that when asking is made, I have what I shall write.

<sup>27</sup> For it is seen to me without reason, to send a bound man, and not to signify the cause of him.

## CHAPTER 26

<sup>1</sup> And Agrippa said to Paul, It is suffered to thee, to speak for thyself. Then Paul held forth the hand, and began to yield reason.

<sup>2</sup> Of all things, in which I am accused of the Jews, thou king Agrippa, I guess me blessed at thee, when I shall defend me this day;

<sup>3</sup> mostly for thou knowest all things that be among Jews, customs and questions. For which thing, I beseech, hear me patiently.

<sup>4</sup> For all Jews that before knew me from the beginning, know my life from youth;

<sup>5</sup> that from the beginning was in my folk in Jerusalem, if they will bear witnessing [*or bear witness*], that by the most certain sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

<sup>6</sup> And now for the hope of repromission, that is made to our fathers of God, I stand subject in doom;

<sup>7</sup> in which *hope* our twelve lineages, serving night and day hope to come; of which hope, sir king, I am accused of the Jews.

<sup>8</sup> What unbelievful thing is deemed at you, if God raiseth dead men?

<sup>9</sup> And soothly I guessed, that I ought to do many contrary things against the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

<sup>10</sup> Which thing also I did in Jeru-salem, and I enclosed many of the saints in prison, when I had taken power of the princes of priests. And when they were slain, I brought [*or I gave*] the sentence.

<sup>11</sup> And by all synagogues oft I punished them, and constrained to blaspheme; and more I waxed mad against them, and pursued [*till*] into alien cities.

<sup>12</sup> In which, [*the*] while I went to Damascus, with power and suffering of the princes of priests,

<sup>13</sup> at midday, in the way I saw, sir king, that from heaven a light shined about me, passing the shining of the sun, and about them that were together with me.

<sup>14</sup> And when we all had fallen down into the earth, I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, what persecutest [*or pursuest*] thou me? it is hard to [*or for*] thee, to kick against the prick.

<sup>15</sup> And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest [*or pursuest*].

<sup>16</sup> But rise up, and stand on thy feet. For why to this thing I appeared to thee, that I ordain thee minister and witness of those things that thou hast seen, and of those things in which I shall show [*or shall appear*] to thee.

<sup>17</sup> And I shall deliver thee from peoples and folks, to which now I send thee,

<sup>18</sup> to open the eyes of them, that they be converted [*or turned*] from darkness to light, and from power of Satan to God, that they take remission of sins, and part among saints, by faith that is in me.

19 Wherefore, sir king Agrippa, I was not unbelievful to the heavenly vision;

20 but I told [*for I showed*] to them, that be at Damascus first, and at Jerusalem, and by all the country of Judea, and to heathen men, that they should do penance, and be converted to God, and do worthy works of penance.

21 For this cause, Jews took me, when I was in the temple, to slay me.

22 But I was helped by the help of God [*till*] into this day, and stand, witnessing to less and to more. And I say nothing else than which things the prophets and Moses spake that shall come,

23 if Christ is to suffer, if he is the first of the again-rising of dead men, that shall show light to the people and to heathen men.

24 When he spake these things, and yielded reason, Festus said with great voice, Paul, thou maddest [*for thou waxest mad*]; many letters turn thee to madness.

25 And Paul said, I mad not, thou best Festus, but I speak out the words of truth and of soberness.

26 For also the king, to whom I speak steadfastly, knoweth of these things; for I deem, that nothing of these is hid from him; for neither in a corner was aught of these things done.

27 Believest thou, king Agrippa, to prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 And Agrippa said to Paul, In little thing thou counselest me [*for*] to be made a christian man.

29 And Paul said, I desire with God, both in little and in great, not only thee, but all these that hear today, to be made such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And the king rose up, and the president, and Bernice, and they that sat nigh to them.

31 And when they went away, they spake together, and said, That this man hath not done anything worthy death, neither [*or*] bonds.

32 And Agrippa said to Festus, This man might be delivered [*or dismissed*], if he had not appealed to the emperor [*or to Caesar*].

## CHAPTER 27

1 But as it was deemed him to ship into Italy, they betook Paul with other keepers [*or with other men kept*] to a centurion, by name Julius, of the company of knights of the emperor.

2 And we went up into the ship of Adramyttium, and began to sail, and were borne about the places of Asia, while

Aristarchus of Macedonia, Thessalonica, dwelled still with us.

<sup>3</sup> And in the day pursuing, we came to Sidon; and Julius treated courteously Paul, and suffered [*him*] to go to friends, and to do his needs [*or to do the care of him*].

<sup>4</sup> And when we removed from thence, we under-sailed to Cyprus, for that winds were contrary.

<sup>5</sup> And we sailed in the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, and came to Lystra, that is Lycia.

<sup>6</sup> And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sailing into Italy, and putted us over into it.

<sup>7</sup> And when in many days we sailed slowly, and scarcely came against Cnidus, for the wind hindered us, we sailed to Crete, beside Salmone.

<sup>8</sup> And scarcely we sailed beside, and came into a place, that is called of good haven, to whom the city Lasea was nigh.

<sup>9</sup> And when much time was passed, and when sailing then was not secure, for that fasting was passed, Paul comforted them,

<sup>10</sup> and said to them, Men, I see that sailing beginneth to be with wrong and much harm, not only of the charge, and of the ship, but also of our lives.

<sup>11</sup> But the centurion believed more to the governor, and to the lord of the ship, than to these things that were said of Paul.

<sup>12</sup> And when the haven was not able [*for*] to dwell in winter, full many ordained counsel to sail from thence, if on [*or in*] any manner they might come to Phoenix, to dwell in winter at the haven of Crete, which behold-eth to Africa, *that is, southwest*, and to Corum, *that is, northwest*.

<sup>13</sup> And when the south blew, they guessed them to hold purpose; and when they had removed [*or taken up*] from Assos, they sailed to Crete.

<sup>14</sup> And not after much [*time*], the wind Tifonyk, that is called northeast, [*or wind of tempest*], was against it.

<sup>15</sup> And when the ship was ravished, and might not endeavour against [*or into*] the wind, when the ship was given to the blowings of the wind, we were borne

<sup>16</sup> with course into an isle, that is called Cauda; and scarcely we might get a little boat.

<sup>17</sup> And when this was taken up, they used helps, girding together the ship; and dreaded, lest they should fall into sandy places. And when the vessel was under-set, so they were borne.

18 And for we were thrown with strong tempest, in the day pursuing they made casting out.

19 And the third day with their hands they cast away the instruments of the ship.

20 And when [*neither*] the sun neither the stars were seen by many days, and tempest not a little nighed, now all the hope of our health was done away.

21 And when much fasting had been, then Paul stood in the middle of them, and said, A! [*or O!*] men, it behooved, when ye heard me, not to have taken away *the ship* from Crete, and get this wrong and casting out.

22 And now I counsel you to be of good comfort [*or of good heart*], for loss of no person of you shall be, except of the ship.

23 For an angel of God, whose I am, and to whom I serve, stood nigh to me in this night,

24 and said, Paul, dread thou not; it behooveth thee to stand before the emperor [*or Caesar*]. And lo! God hath given to thee all that be in the ship with thee.

25 For which thing, ye men, be of good comfort [*or of good heart*]; for I believe to my God, that so it shall be, as it is said to me.

26 And it behooveth us to come into some isle.

27 But afterward that in the fourteen day the night came on us sailing in the stony sea, about midnight the shipmen supposed some country to appear to them.

28 And they cast [*or sent*] down a plummet, and found twenty fathoms *of deepness*. And after a little they were departed from thence, and found fifteen fathoms.

29 And they dreaded, lest we should have fallen into sharp places; and from the last part of the ship they sent four anchors, and desired that the day had become [*or were made*].

30 And when the shipmen sought to flee from the ship, when they had sent a little boat into the sea, under colour as they should begin to stretch forth the anchors from the former part of the ship,

31 Paul said to the centurion and to the knights, But these dwell in the ship, ye may not be made safe.

32 Then [*the*] knights cutted away the cords of the little boat, and suffered it to fall away.

33 And when the day was come, Paul prayed all men to take meat, and said, The fourteenth day this day ye abide, and dwell fasting, and take nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take meat, for your health; for of none of you the hair of the head shall perish.



<sup>35</sup> And when he had said these things, *Paul* took bread, and did thankings to God in the sight of all men; and when he had broken, he began to eat.

<sup>36</sup> And all were made of better comfort, [*or made more patient, or hardy*], and they took meat.

<sup>37</sup> And we were all men in the ship, two hundred seventy and six.

<sup>38</sup> And they were [*full*]-filled with meat, and discharged the ship, and cast wheat into the sea.

<sup>39</sup> And when the day was come, they knew no land; and they beheld an haven that had a water-bank, into which they thought, if they might, to bring up the ship.

<sup>40</sup> And when they had taken up the anchors, they betook them [*in*] to the sea, and slacked together the jointures of rudders. And with a little sail lifted up, by blowing of the wind they went to the bank.

<sup>41</sup> And when we felled into a place of gravel gone all about with the sea, they hurtled the ship. And when the former part was fixed, it dwelled unmoveable, and the last part was broken of [*or by*] the strength of the sea.

<sup>42</sup> And [*the*] counsel of the knights' was, to slay men that were in ward [*or in the keeping*], lest any should escape, when he had swimmied out.

<sup>43</sup> But the centurion would keep *Paul*, and forbade it to be done. And he commanded them that might swim, to go [*first*] into the sea, and escape, and go out to the land.

<sup>44</sup> And they bare some others on boards, some on those things that were of the ship. And so it was done, that all [*the*] men escaped to the land.

## CHAPTER 28

<sup>1</sup> And when we had escaped, then we knew that the isle was called *Melita*.

<sup>2</sup> And the heathen men did to us not little courtesy [*or Soothly barbar-ians gave to us not little humanity*]. And when a fire was kindled, they refreshed us all, for the rain that came, and the cold.

<sup>3</sup> But when *Paul* had gathered a quantity of cuttings of vines, and laid on the fire, an adder came forth from the heat, and took him by the hand.

<sup>4</sup> And when the heathen men of the isle saw the beast hanging in his hand, they said together, For this man is a manslayer; and when he escaped from the sea, God's vengeance suffer-eth him not to live in earth.

<sup>5</sup> But he shook away the beast into the fire, and had none harm [*or suffered nothing of evil*].

<sup>6</sup> And they guessed that he should be turned into swelling, and fall down suddenly, and die. But when they abided long, and saw that nothing of evil was done in him, they turned them together, and said, that he was God.

<sup>7</sup> And in those places were manors [*or fields*] of the prince of the isle, Publius by name, which received us by three days benignly [*or with good will*], and 'found' us.

<sup>8</sup> And it befell, that the father of Publius lay travailed with fevers and bloody flux. To whom Paul entered, and when he had prayed, and laid his hands on him, he healed him.

<sup>9</sup> And when this thing was done, all that in the isle had sicknesses came, and were healed [*or cured*].

<sup>10</sup> Which also honoured us with many worships, and putted what things were necessary to us, when we shipped.

<sup>11</sup> And after three months we shipped in a ship of Alexandria, that had wintered in the isle, to which was an excellent sign of Castor.

<sup>12</sup> And when we came to Syracuse, we dwelled there three days.

<sup>13</sup> From thence we sailed about, and came to Rhegium; and after one day, while the south blew, in the second day we came to Puteoli.

<sup>14</sup> Where when we found brethren, we were prayed to dwell there with them seven days. And so we came to Rome.

<sup>15</sup> And from thence, when brethren had heard, they came to us to the chapping of Appii, and to the Three Taverns. And when Paul had seen them, he did thankings to God, and took trust.

<sup>16</sup> And when we came to Rome, it was suffered to Paul to dwell by himself, with a knight keeping him.

<sup>17</sup> And after the third day, he called together the worthiest of the Jews. And when they came, he said to them, Brethren, I did nothing against the people either custom of fathers, and I was bound at Jerusalem, and was betaken into the hands of Romans.

<sup>18</sup> And when they had asked of me, would have delivered me, for that no cause of death was in me.

<sup>19</sup> But for the Jews gainsaid, I was constrained to appeal to the emperor [*or to Caesar*]; not as having anything to accuse my people.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore for this cause I prayed to see you, and speak to you; for for the hope of Israel I am gird about with this chain.

<sup>21</sup> And they said to him, Neither we have received letters of thee from Judea, neither any of brethren coming showed, either spake, any evil thing of thee.

<sup>22</sup> But we pray to hear of thee, what things thou feelest; for of this sect it is known to us, that everywhere men gainsaith it.

<sup>23</sup> And when they had ordained a day to him, many men came to him into the inn. To which he expounded, witnessing the kingdom of God, and counselled them of Jesus, of the law of Moses, and [*of*] prophets, from the morrow till to [*the*] eventide.

<sup>24</sup> And some believed to these things that were said of Paul, some believed not.

<sup>25</sup> And when they were not consent-ing together, they departed. And Paul said one word, For the Holy Ghost spake well by Isaiah, the prophet, to our fathers,

<sup>26</sup> and said, Go thou to this people, and say to them, With ear ye shall hear, and ye shall not understand; and ye seeing shall see, and ye shall not behold.

<sup>27</sup> For the heart of this people is greatly fatted, and with ears they heard heavily, and they closed together their eyes, lest peradventure they see with eyes, and with ears hear, and by heart understand, and be converted, and I heal them.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore be it known to you, that this health of God, is sent to heathen men, and they shall hear.

<sup>29</sup> And when he had said these things, Jews went out from him, and had much question, *or musing*, [*or seeking*], among themselves.

<sup>30</sup> And he dwelled full two years in his hired place; and he received all that entered to him,

<sup>31</sup> and preached the kingdom of God, and taught those things that be of the Lord Jesus Christ, with all trust, without forbidding. Amen.

## ROMANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, the servant of Jesus Christ, called an apostle, separated [*or set apart*] into the gospel of God,

<sup>2</sup> which he had promised before by his prophets in holy scriptures

<sup>3</sup> of his Son, which is made to him of the seed of David by [*or after*] the flesh,

<sup>4</sup> and he was before-ordained, [*or predestined by grace*], the Son of God in virtue, by the Spirit of hallowing of the again-rising of dead men, of Jesus Christ our Lord,

<sup>5</sup> by whom we have received grace and the office of apostle [*or apostle-hood*], to obey to the faith in all folks, for his name,

<sup>6</sup> among which ye be also called of Jesus Christ,

<sup>7</sup> to all that be at Rome, darlings [*or the beloved*] of God, and called holy, grace [*be*] to you, and peace of God our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>8</sup> First I do thankings to my God, by Jesus Christ, for all you, for your faith is showed in all the world.

<sup>9</sup> For God is a witness to me, to whom I serve in my spirit, in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mind of you ever[*more*] in my prayers,

<sup>10</sup> and beseech [*or praying*], if in any manner sometime I have a speedy way in the will of God to come to you.

<sup>11</sup> For I desire to see you, to impart somewhat *to you* of spiritual grace [*or that I give to you something of spiritual grace*], that ye be confirmed,

<sup>12</sup> that is, to be comforted together in you, by [*that*] faith that is both yours and mine together.

<sup>13</sup> And, brethren, I will not, that ye not know, that oft I purposed to come to you, and I am hindered till this time, that I have some fruit in you, as in other folks.

<sup>14</sup> To Greeks and to barbarians, to wise men and to unwise men, I am debtor,

<sup>15</sup> so that that is in me is ready to preach the gospel [*or to evangelize*] also to you that be at Rome.

<sup>16</sup> For I shame not the gospel, for it is the virtue of God into health, to each man that believeth, to the Jew first, and to the Greek.

<sup>17</sup> For the rightwiseness of God is showed in it, of faith into faith, as it is written, For a just man liveth of faith.

<sup>18</sup> For the wrath of God is showed from heaven on all unpiety and wickedness [*or unrightwiseness*] of those

men, that withhold [*or hold aback*] the truth of God in unrightwiseness.

<sup>19</sup> For that thing of God that is known, is showed [*or is made open*] to them, for God hath showed to them.

<sup>20</sup> For the invisible things of him, that be understood, be beheld of the creature of the world, by those things that be made, yea, and the everlasting virtue of him, and the Godhead, so that they may not be excused [*or they be unexcusable*].

<sup>21</sup> For when they had known God, they glorified *him* not as God, neither did thankings; but they vanished in their thoughts, and the unwise heart of them was darked [*or made dark*].

<sup>22</sup> For they saying that themselves were wise, they were made fools.

<sup>23</sup> And they exchanged the glory of uncorruptible God into the likeness of an image of a deadly [*or a corruptible*] man, and of birds, and of four-footed beasts, and of serpents.

<sup>24</sup> For which thing God betook them into the desires of their heart, into uncleanness, that they punish with wrongs their bodies in themselves.

<sup>25</sup> The which [*men*] changed the truth of God into leasing, and praised and served a creature rather than the Creator, that is blessed into worlds of worlds [*or into without end*]. Amen.

<sup>26</sup> Therefore God betook them into passions of shame [*or of evil fame*]. For the women of them changed the natural use into that use that is against kind.

<sup>27</sup> Also the men forsook the kindly use of women, and burned in their desires together, and men into men wrought filthhood, and received into themselves the meed that behooved of their error.

<sup>28</sup> And as they proved that they had not God in knowing, God betook them into a reprobable wit, that they do those things that be not covenable;

<sup>29</sup> that they be full-filled with all wickedness, malice, fornication, covet-ousness, waywardness, full of envy, manslayings, strife, guile, evil will,

<sup>30</sup> privy backbiters, detractors, hate-ful to God, debaters [*or despisers*], proud, and high over-measure, finders of evil things, not obedient to father and mother,

<sup>31</sup> unwise, unmannerly, without love [*or without affection*], without bond of peace, without mercy.

<sup>32</sup> The which when they had known the rightwiseness of God, understood not, that they that do such things be worthy

the death, not only they that do those things, but also they that consent to the doers.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore thou art unexcusable, each man that deemest, for in what thing thou deemest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou doest the same things which thou deemest.

<sup>2</sup> And we know, that the doom of God is after truth against them, that do such things.

<sup>3</sup> But guessest thou, man, that deemest them that do such things, and thou doest those things, that thou shalt escape the doom of God?

<sup>4</sup> Whether thou despisest the riches of his goodness, and the patience, and the long abiding? Knowest thou not, that the benignity, [*or good will*], of God leadeth thee to repenting [*or to penance*]?

<sup>5</sup> But after thine hardness and unrepentant heart, thou treasurest to thee wrath in[to] the day of wrath, and of showing of the rightful doom of God,

<sup>6</sup> that shall yield to each man after his works;

<sup>7</sup> soothly to them that be by patience of good work, glory, and honour, and uncorruption, to them that seek everlasting life;

<sup>8</sup> but to them that be of strife, and that assent not to truth, but believe to wickedness, wrath and indignation,

<sup>9</sup> tribulation and anguish, into each soul of man that worketh evil, to the Jew first, and to the Greek;

<sup>10</sup> but glory, and honour, and peace, to each man that worketh good thing, to the Jew first, and to the Greek.

<sup>11</sup> For acception of persons, [*that is, to put one before another without desert*], is not with God.

<sup>12</sup> For whoever have sinned without the law, shall perish without the law; and whoever have sinned in the law, they shall be deemed by the law.

<sup>13</sup> For the hearers of the law be not just with God, but the doers of the law shall be made just.

<sup>14</sup> For when heathen men that have not law, do kindly those things that be of the law, they not having such manner [*of*] law, be law to themselves,

<sup>15</sup> that show the work of the law written in their hearts. For the conscience of them yieldeth to them a witnessing betwixt themselves of thoughts that be accusing or defending,

<sup>16</sup> in the day when God shall deem the privy things of men after my gospel, by Jesus Christ.

<sup>17</sup> But if thou art named a Jew, and retest in the law, and hast glory in God,

<sup>18</sup> and hast known his will, and thou learned by the law approvest [*or hast proved*] the more profitable things,

<sup>19</sup> and trustest thyself to be a leader of blind men, the light of them that be in darkneses,

<sup>20</sup> a teacher of unwise men, a master of young children, that hast the form of knowing [*or of science*], and of truth in the law;

<sup>21</sup> what then teachest thou another, and teachest not thyself? Thou that preachest that me/that men shall not steal, stealest? [*or Thou that preachest to not steal, stealest?*]

<sup>22</sup> Thou that teachest that me/that men shall not do lechery, doest lechery? [*or Thou that sayest to not do lechery, doest lechery?*] Thou that loathest maumets [*or idols*], doest sacrilege?

<sup>23</sup> Thou that hast glory in the law, unworshippest God by breaking of the law?

<sup>24</sup> For the name of God is blasphemed by you among heathen men, as [*it*] is written.

<sup>25</sup> For circumcision profiteth, if thou keep the law; but if thou be a trespasser against the law, thy circumcision is made prepuce.

<sup>26</sup> Therefore if prepuce keep the rightwiseness of the law, whether his prepuce shall not be areckoned into circumcision?

<sup>27</sup> And the prepuce of kind that fulfilleth the law, shall deem thee, that by letter and circumcision art a trespasser against the law.

<sup>28</sup> For he that is in open is not a Jew, neither it is [*the*] circumcision that is openly in the flesh;

<sup>29</sup> but he that is a Jew in hid, and the circumcision of heart, in spirit, not by [*or in*] the letter, whose praising is not of men, but of God.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> What then is more to a Jew, or what profit of circumcision?

<sup>2</sup> Much by all wise [*or by all manner*]; first, for the speakings of God were betaken to them.

<sup>3</sup> And what if some of them believed not? Whether the unbelief of them hath voided the faith of God?

<sup>4</sup> God forbid. For God is soothfast, [*or true*], but each man a liar; as it is written, That thou be justified in thy words, and overcome, when thou art deemed.

<sup>5</sup> But if our wickedness commend the rightwiseness of God, what shall we say? Whether God is wicked, that bringeth in wrath? After man I say.

<sup>6</sup> God forbid. Else how shall God deem this world?

<sup>7</sup> For if the truth of God hath abounded in my leasing, into the glory of him, what yet am I deemed as a sinner?

<sup>8</sup> And not as we be blasphemed, and as some say that we say, Do we evil things, that good things come. Whose damnation is just.

<sup>9</sup> What then? Surpass we them? Nay; for we have showed by skill, that all both Jews and Greeks be under sin [*for the Jews and Greeks all to be under sin*],

<sup>10</sup> as it is written, For there is no man just;

<sup>11</sup> there is no man understanding, neither seeking God.

<sup>12</sup> All bowed away, together they be made unprofitable; there is none that doeth good thing, there is none till to one.

<sup>13</sup> The throat of them is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they did guilefully, [*or treacherously*]; the venom of snakes is under their lips.

<sup>14</sup> The mouth of whom is full of cursing and bitterness;

<sup>15</sup> the feet of them *be* swift to shed blood.

<sup>16</sup> Sorrow and cursedness *be* in the ways of them,

<sup>17</sup> and they knew not the way of peace;

<sup>18</sup> the dread of God is not before their eyes.

<sup>19</sup> And we know, that whatever things the law speaketh, it speaketh to them that be in the law, that each mouth be stopped, and each world be made subject to God.

<sup>20</sup> For of the works of the law each flesh shall not be justified before him; for by the law there is knowing of sin.

<sup>21</sup> But now without the law the rightwiseness of God is showed, that is witnessed of the law and the prophets.

<sup>22</sup> And the rightwiseness of God is by the faith of Jesus Christ into all men and on all men that believe in him; for there is no parting [*or distinction*].

<sup>23</sup> For all men sinned, and have need to the glory of God;

<sup>24</sup> and be justified freely by his grace, by the again-buying [*for the redemption*] that is in Christ.

<sup>25</sup> Whom God ordained forgiver [*or purposed an helper*], by faith in his blood, to the showing of his right-wiseness, for [*the*] remission of before-going sins, in the bearing up of God,

<sup>26</sup> to the showing of his rightwise-ness in this time, that he be just, and justifying him that is of the faith of Jesus Christ.

<sup>27</sup> Where then is thy glorying? It is excluded. By what law? Of deeds doing? Nay, but by the law of faith.



<sup>28</sup> For we deem a man to be justified by faith, without works of the law.

<sup>29</sup> Whether of the Jews is God only? Whether he is not also of heathen men? Yes, and of heathen men.

<sup>30</sup> For there is one God, that justifieth circumcision by faith, and prepuce by faith.

<sup>31</sup> Destroy we therefore the law by faith? God forbid; but we stablish the law.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> What then shall we say, that Abraham, our father after the flesh, found?

<sup>2</sup> For if Abraham is justified of works of the law, he hath glory, but not with God.

<sup>3</sup> For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed to God, and it was areckoned to him to rightwiseness.

<sup>4</sup> And to him that worketh, meed is not areckoned by grace, but by debt.

<sup>5</sup> Soothly to him that worketh not, but believeth into him that justifieth a wicked [*or an unpius*] man, his faith is areckoned to rightwiseness, after the purpose of God's grace.

<sup>6</sup> As David saith the blessedness of a man, whom God accepteth, he giveth to him rightwiseness without works of the law,

<sup>7</sup> Blessed *be* they, whose wicked-nesses be forgiven, and whose sins be hid [*or be covered*].

<sup>8</sup> Blessed is that man, to whom God areckoned not sin.

<sup>9</sup> Then whether dwelleth this blessedness only in circumcision, or also in prepuce? For we say, that the faith was areckoned to Abraham to rightwiseness.

<sup>10</sup> How then was it areckoned? in circumcision, or in prepuce? Not in circumcision, but in prepuce.

<sup>11</sup> And he took a sign of circumcision, a token [*or a marking*] of rightwiseness of the faith which is in prepuce, that he be father of all men believing by prepuce, that it be areckoned also to them to rightwise-ness;

<sup>12</sup> and that he be father of circumcision, not only to them that be of circumcision, but also to them that pursue the steps of the faith, which *faith* is in prepuce of our father Abraham, [*or but and to them that pursue the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, that is in prepuce*].

<sup>13</sup> For not by the law is [*the*] promise to Abraham, or to his seed, that he should be [*the*] heir of the world, but by the rightwiseness of faith.

<sup>14</sup> For if they that be of the law, be heirs, faith is destroyed, promise is done away.

<sup>15</sup> For the law worketh wrath; for where is no law, there is no trespass, neither is trespassing [*or prevarication*].

<sup>16</sup> Therefore *rightwiseness* is of faith, that by grace promise be stable [*or be steadfast*] to each seed, not to that seed only that is of the law, but to that that is of the faith of Abraham, which is father of us all.

<sup>17</sup> As it is written, For I have set thee father of many folks, before God to whom thou hast believed. The which *God* quickeneth dead men [*or The which quickeneth the dead*], and calleth those things that be not, as those that be.

<sup>18</sup> [*The*] Which *Abraham* against hope believed into hope, that he should be made father of many folks, as it was said to him, Thus shall thy seed be, as the stars of heaven, and as the gravel [*or sand*] that is in the brink of the sea.

<sup>19</sup> And he was not made unsteadfast in the belief, neither he beheld his body then nigh dead, when he was almost of an hundred years, nor the womb of Sarah nigh dead.

<sup>20</sup> Also in the promise of God he doubted not with untrust; but he was comforted in belief, giving glory to God,

<sup>21</sup> witting most fully that whatever things God hath promised, he is mighty also to do.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore it was areckoned to him to rightwiseness.

<sup>23</sup> And it is not written only for him, that it was areckoned to him to rightwiseness,

<sup>24</sup> but also for us, to whom it shall be areckoned, that believe in him that raised our Lord Jesus Christ from death.

<sup>25</sup> Which was betaken for our sins, and rose again for our justifying.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Therefore we, justified of faith, have we peace at God by our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>2</sup> By whom we have nigh going to [*or access*], by faith into this grace, in which we stand, and have glory in the hope of the glory of God's children.

<sup>3</sup> And not this only, but also we glory in tribulations, witting that tribulation worketh patience,

<sup>4</sup> and patience proving, and proving hope.

<sup>5</sup> And hope confoundeth not, for the charity of God is spread abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, that is given to us.

<sup>6</sup> And while that we were sick after the time, what died Christ for wicked men?

<sup>7</sup> For scarcely dieth any man for the just man; and yet for a good man peradventure some man dare die.

<sup>8</sup> But God commendeth his charity in us; for if when we were yet sinners, after the time Christ was dead for us,

<sup>9</sup> then much more now we justified in his blood, shall be safe from wrath by him.

<sup>10</sup> For if when we were enemies, we be reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more we reconciled shall be safe in the life of him.

<sup>11</sup> And not only this, but also we glory in God, by our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have received now reconciling.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore as by one man sin entered into this world, and by sin death, and so death passed forth into all men, in which *man* all men sinned.

<sup>13</sup> For unto the law sin was in the world; but sin was not reckoned, when [*the*] law was not.

<sup>14</sup> But death reigned from Adam unto Moses, also into them that sinned not in likeness of the trespassing of Adam, the which is likeness of *Christ* to coming [*or to come*].

<sup>15</sup> But not as [*the*] guilt [*or the trespass*], so the gift; for if through the guilt [*or the trespass*] of one many be dead, much more the grace of God and the gift in the grace of one man Jesus Christ hath abounded into many men.

<sup>16</sup> And not as by one sin, so by the gift; for the doom, of one into condemnation, but the grace of many guilts [*or trespassings*] into justification.

<sup>17</sup> For if in the guilt of one death reigned through one, much more men that take plenty of grace, and of giving, and of rightwiseness, shall reign in life by one Jesus Christ.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore as by the guilt of one into all men into condemnation, so by the rightwiseness of one into all men into justifying of life.

<sup>19</sup> For as by unobedience of one man many be made sinners, so by the obedience of one many shall be [*ordained*] just.

<sup>20</sup> And the law entered, that guilt should be plenteous; but where guilt was plenteous, grace was more plenteous [*or abounded*].

<sup>21</sup> That as sin reigned into death, so grace reign by rightwiseness into ever-lasting life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Therefore what shall we say? Shall we dwell in sin, that grace be plenteous?

<sup>2</sup> God forbid. For how shall we that be dead to sin, live yet therein?

<sup>3</sup> Whether, brethren, ye know not, that whichever we be baptized in Christ Jesus, we be baptized in his death?

<sup>4</sup> For we be together buried with him by baptism into death; that as Christ arose from death by the glory of the Father, so walk we in a newness of life.

<sup>5</sup> For if we planted together be made to the likeness of his death, also we shall be of the likeness of his rising again;

<sup>6</sup> witting this thing, that our old man is crucified together, that the body of sin be destroyed, that we serve no more to sin.

<sup>7</sup> For he that is dead [*to sin*], is justified from sin.

<sup>8</sup> And if we be dead with Christ, we believe that also we shall live together with him;

<sup>9</sup> witting that Christ, rising again from death, now dieth not, death shall no more have lordship on him.

<sup>10</sup> For that he was dead to sin, he was dead once; but that he liveth, he liveth to God.

<sup>11</sup> So ye deem yourselves to be dead to sin, but living to God in Jesus Christ our Lord.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore reign not sin in your deadly body, that ye obey to his covetings.

<sup>13</sup> Neither give ye your members arms of wickedness to sin, but give ye yourselves to God, as they that live of dead men, and your members arms of rightwiseness to God.

<sup>14</sup> For sin shall not have lordship over you; for ye be not under the law, but under grace.

<sup>15</sup> What therefore? Shall we do sin, for we be not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

<sup>16</sup> Know ye not, that to whom ye give you servants to obey to, ye be servants of that thing, to which ye have obeyed, either of sin to death, either of obedience to rightwiseness?

<sup>17</sup> But I thank God, that ye were servants of sin; but ye have obeyed of heart into that form of teaching, in which ye be betaken.

<sup>18</sup> And ye delivered from sin, be made servants of rightwiseness.

<sup>19</sup> I say that thing that is of man, for the unsteadfastness, [*for the infirmity, or unstableness*], of your flesh. But as ye have given your members to serve to uncleanness, and to wickedness into wickedness, so now give ye your members to serve to rightwiseness into holiness.

<sup>20</sup> For when ye were servants of sin, ye were free of rightwiseness.

<sup>21</sup> Therefore what fruit had ye then in those things, in which ye shame now? For the end of them is death.

<sup>22</sup> But now ye delivered from sin, and made servants to God, have your fruit into holiness, and the end everlasting life.

<sup>23</sup> For the wages of sin is death; the grace of God is everlasting life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, whether ye know not; for I speak to men that know the law; for the law hath lordship in a man, as long time as he liveth?

<sup>2</sup> For that woman that is under an husband, is bound to the law, while the husband liveth; but if her husband is dead, she is delivered [*or is unbound*] from the law of the husband.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore she shall be called adulteress, if she be with another man, while the husband liveth; but if her husband is dead, she is delivered from the law of the husband, that she be not adulteress, if she be with another man.

<sup>4</sup> And so, my brethren, ye be made dead to the law by [*or through*] the body of Christ, that ye be of another, that rose again from death, that ye bear fruit to God.

<sup>5</sup> For when we were in flesh, passions of sins, that were by the law, wrought in our members, to bear fruit to death.

<sup>6</sup> But now we be unbound from the law of death, in which we were held, so that we serve in newness of spirit, and not in oldness of letter.

<sup>7</sup> What therefore shall we say? The law is sin? God forbid. But I knew not sin, but by [*the*] law; for I knew not that coveting was sin, but for the law said, Thou shalt not covet.

<sup>8</sup> And through occasion taken, sin by the commandment hath wrought in me all covetousness; for without the law, sin was dead.

<sup>9</sup> And I lived without the law sometime; but when the commandment was come [*or had come*], sin lived again. But I was dead,

<sup>10</sup> and this commandment that was to life, was found to me, to be to death.

<sup>11</sup> For sin, through occasion taken by the commandment, deceived me, and by that it slew *me*.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore the law is holy, and the commandment is holy, and just, and good.

<sup>13</sup> Is then that thing that is good, made death to me? God forbid. But sin, that it seem sin, through good thing wrought death to me, that me or that men sin over-manner through the commandment.

<sup>14</sup> And we know, that the law is spiritual; but I am fleshly, sold under sin.

15 For I understand not that that I work; for I do not the good thing that I will, but I do that evil thing that I hate.

16 And if I do that thing that I will not, I consent to the law, that it is good.

17 But now I work not it now, but the sin that dwelleth in me.

18 But I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good; for will lieth to me, but I find not to perform good thing.

19 For I do not that good thing that I will, but I do that evil thing that I will not.

20 And if I do that *evil* thing that I will not, I work not it, but the sin that dwelleth in me.

21 Therefore I find the law [*or a law*] to me willing to do good thing, for evil thing lieth to me.

22 For I delight together to the law of God, after the inner man.

23 But I see another law in my members, fighting against the law of my soul, and making me captive in the law of sin, that is in my members.

24 I am an unhappy [*or a woeful*] man; who shall deliver me from the body of this sin?

25 The grace of God, by Jesus Christ our Lord. Therefore I myself by the soul serve to the law of God; but by the flesh to the law of sin.

## CHAPTER 8

1 Therefore now nothing of condemnation is to them that be in Christ Jesus, which wander not after the flesh.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath delivered me from the law of sin, and of death, [*or the law of sin, and death*].

3 For that that was impossible to the law, in what thing it was sick by flesh, God sent his Son into the likeness of flesh of sin, and of sin condemned sin in flesh;

4 that the justifying of the law were fulfilled in us, that [*we*] go not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that be after the flesh, understand [*or savour*] those things that be of the flesh; but they that be after the Spirit, feel those things that be of the Spirit.

6 For the prudence of flesh is death; but the prudence of Spirit is life and peace.

7 For the wisdom of the flesh is enemy to God; for it is not subject to the law of God, for neither it may [*be subject to the law*].

8 And they that be in flesh, may not please to God.

<sup>9</sup> But ye be not in flesh, but in Spirit; if nevertheless the Spirit of God dwelleth in you. But if any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, this is not his.

<sup>10</sup> For if Christ is in you, the body is dead for sin [*or from sin*], but the Spirit liveth for justifying.

<sup>11</sup> And if the Spirit of him that raised Jesus Christ from death dwelleth in you, he that raised Jesus Christ from death, shall quicken also your deadly bodies, for the Spirit of him that dwelleth in you.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore, brethren, we be debtors, not to the flesh, that we live after the flesh.

<sup>13</sup> For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die; but if ye by the Spirit slay the deeds of the flesh, ye shall live.

<sup>14</sup> For whoever be led by the Spirit of God, these be the sons of God.

<sup>15</sup> For ye have not taken again the spirit of servage in dread, but ye have taken the Spirit of adoption of sons, *that is, sons of God by grace*, in which we cry, Abba, Father.

<sup>16</sup> And that Spirit yieldeth witnessing to our spirit, that we be the sons of God;

<sup>17</sup> if sons, and heirs, heirs forsooth of God, and heirs together with Christ; if nevertheless we suffer together, that also we be glorified together.

<sup>18</sup> And I deem, that the passions of this time be not even worthy, to the glory to coming [*or to come*], that shall be showed in us.

<sup>19</sup> For the abiding of creature abideth the showing of the sons of God.

<sup>20</sup> But the creature is subject to vanity, not willingly, but for him that made it subject in hope;

<sup>21</sup> for that creature shall be delivered from servage of corruption into the liberty of the glory of the sons of God.

<sup>22</sup> And we know, that each creature sorroweth, and travaileth with pain till yet.

<sup>23</sup> And not only it, but also we us-selves, that have the first fruits of the Spirit, and we us-selves sorrow within us for the adoption of God's sons, abiding the again-buying of our body.

<sup>24</sup> But by hope we be made safe. For hope that is seen, is not hope; for who hopeth that thing, that he seeth?

<sup>25</sup> And if we hope that thing that we see not, we abide by patience.

<sup>26</sup> And also the Spirit helpeth our infirmity; for what we shall pray, as it behooveth, we know not, but that Spirit asketh for us with sorrowings, that may not be told out.

<sup>27</sup> For he that seeketh the hearts, knoweth what the Spirit desireth, for by God, [*that is, after God's will*], he asketh for holy men.

<sup>28</sup> And we know, that to men that love God, all things work together into good, to them that after purpose be called saints.

<sup>29</sup> For those that he knew before, he before-ordained by grace to be made like to the image of his Son, that he be the first begotten among many brethren.

<sup>30</sup> And those that he before-ordained to bless, them he called; and whom he called, them he justified; and whom he justified, them he glorified.

<sup>31</sup> What then shall we say to these things? If God *be* for us, who is against us?

<sup>32</sup> Which also spared not his own Son, but betook him for us all, how also gave he not to us all things with him?

<sup>33</sup> Who shall accuse against the chosen men of God? It is God that justifieth,

<sup>34</sup> who is it that condemneth? It is Jesus Christ that was dead, yea, the which rose again, the which is on the right half of God, and the which prayeth for us.

<sup>35</sup> Who then shall part us from the charity of Christ? tribulation, or anguish, or hunger, or nakedness, or persecution, or peril, or sword?

<sup>36</sup> As it is written, For we be slain all day for thee; we be guessed as sheep of slaughter [*or to slaughter*].

<sup>37</sup> But in all these things we overcome, for him that loved us.

<sup>38</sup> But I am certain, that neither death, neither life, neither angels, neither principalities, neither virtues, neither present things, neither things to coming [*or to come*], neither strength,

<sup>39</sup> neither height, neither deepness, neither any other creature, may part us from the charity of God, that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> I say truth in Christ Jesus, I lie not, for my conscience beareth witnessing to me in the Holy Ghost,

<sup>2</sup> for great heaviness is to me, and continual sorrow to my heart.

<sup>3</sup> For I myself desired to be parted [*or cursed*] from Christ for my brethren, that be my cousins after the flesh,

<sup>4</sup> that be men of Israel [*or Israelites*]; whose is adoption of sons, and glory, and testament, and giving of the law, and service, and promises;



<sup>5</sup> whose be the fathers, and of which is Christ after the flesh, that is God above all things, blessed into worlds. Amen.

<sup>6</sup> But not that the word of God hath fallen down, [*or failed unfulfilled*]. For not all that be of Israel, these be Israelites.

<sup>7</sup> Neither they that be [*the*] seed of Abraham, all be sons; but in Isaac the seed shall be called to thee;

<sup>8</sup> that is to say, not they that be sons of the flesh, *be* sons of God, but they that be sons of [*the*] promise be deemed in the seed.

<sup>9</sup> For why this is the word of promise, After this time I shall come, and a son shall be to Sarah.

<sup>10</sup> And not only she, but also Rebecca had two sons of one lying-by, [*or of one knowing of man*], of Isaac, our father.

<sup>11</sup> And when they were not yet born, neither had done anything of good either evil, that the purpose of God should dwell by election, not of works, but of God calling,

<sup>12</sup> it was said to him [*or to her*], That the more should serve the less,

<sup>13</sup> as it is written, I loved Jacob, but I hated Esau.

<sup>14</sup> What therefore shall we say? Whether wickedness be with God? God forbid.

<sup>15</sup> For he saith to Moses, I shall have mercy on whom I shall have mercy; and I shall give mercy on whom I shall have mercy.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore it is not neither of [*a*] man willing, neither running, but of God having mercy.

<sup>17</sup> And the scripture saith to Pharaoh, For to this thing I have stirred thee, that I show in thee my virtue, and that my name be told in all [*the*] earth.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore of whom God will, he hath mercy; and whom he will, he endureth.

<sup>19</sup> Then sayest thou to me, What is sought yet? [*or What thing is yet sought?*] for who withstandeth his will?

<sup>20</sup> O! man, who art thou, that answerest to God? Whether a made thing saith to him that made it, What hast thou made me so?

<sup>21</sup> Whether a potter of clay hath not power to make of the same gobbet one vessel into honour, another into despite, [*or low office*]?

<sup>22</sup> And if God willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, hath suffered in great patience vessels of wrath able into death, [*or into perdition, or damnation*],

<sup>23</sup> to show the riches of his glory into vessels of mercy, which he made ready into glory.

<sup>24</sup> Which also he called [*us*], not only of the Jews, but also of heathen men,

<sup>25</sup> as he saith in Hosea, I shall call not my people my people, and not my loved my loved, and not getting mercy getting mercy;

<sup>26</sup> and it shall be in the place, where it is said to them, Not ye my people, there they shall be called the sons of living God.

<sup>27</sup> But Isaiah crieth for Israel, If the number of children of Israel shall be as [*the*] gravel of the sea, the remnants shall be made safe.

<sup>28</sup> Forsooth a word making an end, and abridging in equity, for the Lord shall make a word abridged, [*for made short*], on all the earth.

<sup>29</sup> And as Isaiah before-said, But God of hosts had left to us seed, we had been made as Sodom, and we had been like as Gomorrah.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore what shall we say? That heathen men that pursued not right-wiseness, have gotten [*or have caught*] rightwiseness, yea, the right-wiseness that is of faith.

<sup>31</sup> But Israel pursuing the law of rightwiseness, came not perfectly to the law of rightwiseness.

<sup>32</sup> Why? For not of faith, but as of works. And they spurned against the stone of offence, [*or spurning*],

<sup>33</sup> as it is written, Lo! I put a stone of offence in Zion, and a stone of stumbling; and each that shall believe in it, shall not be confounded, [*or shamed*].

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, the will of mine heart and my beseeching is made to God for them into health.

<sup>2</sup> But I bear witnessing to them, that they have the love of God, but not after knowing.

<sup>3</sup> For they unknowing God's right-wiseness, and seeking to make steadfast their own *rightwiseness*, be not subject to the rightwiseness of God.

<sup>4</sup> For the end of the law is Christ, to rightwiseness to each man that believeth.

<sup>5</sup> For Moses wrote, For the man that shall do rightwiseness that is of the law, shall live in it.

<sup>6</sup> But the rightwiseness that is of belief, saith thus, Say thou not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? that is to say, to lead down Christ;

<sup>7</sup> or who shall go down into hell? that is, to again-call Christ from death. [*+or who shall go down into deep-ness, or into depth? that is, to again-call Christ from the dead.*]

<sup>8</sup> But what saith the scripture? The word is nigh in thy mouth, and in thine heart; this is the word of belief, which we preach.

<sup>9</sup> That if thou acknowledge in thy mouth the Lord Jesus Christ, and believest in thine heart, that God raised him from death, thou shalt be safe.

<sup>10</sup> For by heart me [*or men*] believeth to rightwiseness, but by mouth acknowledging is made to health.

<sup>11</sup> For why the scripture saith, Each that believeth in him, shall not be confounded.

<sup>12</sup> And there is no distinction of Jew and of Greek; for the same Lord of all is rich into all, that inwardly call him.

<sup>13</sup> For each man, whoever shall inwardly call the name of the Lord, shall be safe.

<sup>14</sup> How then shall they inwardly call him, into whom they have not believed? or how shall they believe to him, whom they have not heard? How shall they hear, without a preacher?

<sup>15</sup> and how shall they preach, but they be sent? As it is written, How fair *be* the feet of them that preach [*or evangelize*] peace, of them that preach good things.

<sup>16</sup> But not all men obey to the gospel. For Isaiah saith, Lord, who believed to our hearing?

<sup>17</sup> Therefore faith is of hearing [*or by hearing*], but hearing by the word of Christ.

<sup>18</sup> But I say, Whether they heard not? Yes, soothly, the sound of them went out into all the earth, and their words into the ends of the world.

<sup>19</sup> But I say, Whether Israel knew not? First Moses saith, I shall lead you to envy, that ye be no folk [*or into not a folk*]; that ye be an unwise folk, I shall send you into wrath.

<sup>20</sup> And Isaiah is bold, and saith, I am found of men that seek me not; openly I appeared to them, that asked not me.

<sup>21</sup> But to Israel he saith, All day I stretched out mine hands to a people that believed not [*to me*], but gainsaid me.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> Therefore I say, Whether God hath put away his people? God forbid. For I am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the lineage of Benjamin.

<sup>2</sup> God hath not put away his people, which he before-knew. Whether ye know not, what the scripture saith in Elijah? How he prayeth God against Israel,

<sup>3</sup> Lord, they have slain thy prophets, they have under-delved thine altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

<sup>4</sup> But what saith God's answer to him? I have left to me seven thousands of men, that have not bowed their knees before Baal.

<sup>5</sup> So therefore also in this time, the remnants be made safe, by the choosing of the grace of God.

<sup>6</sup> And if *it be* by the grace of God, *it is* not now of works; else grace is not now grace.

<sup>7</sup> What then? Israel hath not gotten this that he sought, but election hath gotten; and the others be blinded.

<sup>8</sup> As it is written, God gave to them a spirit of compunction, eyes that they see not, and ears, that they hear not, into this day.

<sup>9</sup> And David saith, Be the board of them made into a snare before them, and into catching, and into cause of stumbling, and into yielding [*again*] to them.

<sup>10</sup> Be the eyes of them made dark, that they see not; and bow thou down always the back of them.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore I say, Whether they offended so, that they should fall down? God forbid. But by the guilt of them health is made to heathen men, that they pursue them.

<sup>12</sup> That if the guilt of them be riches of the world, and the making less [*for the diminishing*] of them be riches of heathen men, how much more the plenty of them?

<sup>13</sup> But I say to you, heathen men, for as long as I am apostle of heathen men, I shall honour my ministry [*or my service*],

<sup>14</sup> if in any manner I stir my flesh for to follow, and that I make some of them safe.

<sup>15</sup> For if the loss of them is the reconciling of the world, what is the taking up [*of them*], but life of dead men? [*or but life to dead?*]

<sup>16</sup> For if a little part of that that is tasted be holy, the whole gobbet is *holy*; and if the root is holy, also the branches.

<sup>17</sup> What if any of the branches be broken, when thou were a wild olive tree, art grafted [*or art set in*] among them, and art made fellow of the root, and of the fatness of the olive tree,

<sup>18</sup> do not thou have glory against the branches. For if thou gloriest, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore thou sayest, The branches be broken, that I be grafted in [*or I be inset*].

<sup>20</sup> Well, for unbelief the branches be broken; but thou standest by faith. Do not thou understand [*or savour*] high things, but dread thou,

<sup>21</sup> for if God spared not the kindly branches, [*see thou*] lest peradventure he spare not thee.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore see the goodness, and the fierceness of God; yea, the fierceness into them that fell down, but the goodness of God into thee, if thou dwellest in goodness, else also thou shalt be cut down.

<sup>23</sup> Yea, and they shall be set in [*or shall be inset*], if they dwell not in unbelief. For God is mighty, to set them in again.

<sup>24</sup> For if thou art cut down of the kindly wild olive tree, and against kind art set into a good olive tree, how much more they that *be* by kind, shall be set in their olive tree?

<sup>25</sup> But, brethren, I will not, that ye not know this mystery, that ye be not wise to yourselves; for blindness hath fallen a part in Israel, till that the plenty of heathen men entered,

<sup>26</sup> and so all Israel should be made safe. As it is written, He shall come of Zion, that shall deliver, and turn away the wickedness [*or unpiety*] of Jacob.

<sup>27</sup> And this testament to them of me, when I shall do away their sins.

<sup>28</sup> After the gospel *they be* enemies for you, but *they be* most dearworthy by [*or after*] the election for the fathers.

<sup>29</sup> And the gifts and the calling of God be without repenting, [*or revoking*].

<sup>30</sup> And as sometime also ye believed not to God, but now ye have gotten mercy for the unbelief of them;

<sup>31</sup> so and these now believed not into your mercy, that also they get mercy.

<sup>32</sup> For God closed all things together in unbelief, that he have mercy on all.

<sup>33</sup> O! the highness of the riches of the wisdom and of the knowing, of God; how incomprehensible be his dooms, and his ways *be* unsearchable.

<sup>34</sup> For why who knew the wit of the Lord, or who was his counsellor?

<sup>35</sup> or who former gave to him, and it shall be requited [*again*] to him?

<sup>36</sup> For of him, and by him, and in him be all things. To him *be* glory into worlds [*of worlds*]. Amen.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, brethren, I beseech you by the mercy of God, that ye give your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, pleasing to God, and your service reasonable.

<sup>2</sup> And do not ye be conformed to this world, but be ye reformed in newness of your wit, that ye prove which is the will of God, good, and well pleasing, and perfect.

<sup>3</sup> For I say, by the grace that is given to me, to all that be among you, that ye understand not more than it behooveth to understand, but for to understand to soberness, [*or to not savour; or know, more than it behooveth to know, but to know to soberness*]; and to each man, as God hath parted the measure of faith.

<sup>4</sup> For as in one body we have many members, but all the members have not the same deed [*or the same act*];

<sup>5</sup> so we many be one body in Christ, and each *be* members one of another.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore we that have gifts diversing, after the grace that is given to us, either prophecy, after the reason of faith;

<sup>7</sup> either service [*or ministry*], in ministering; either he that teacheth, in teaching;

<sup>8</sup> he that stirreth softly, in admonishing [*or in exhortation*]; he that giveth, in simpleness; he that is sovereign, [*or is prelate, or is before*], in busyness; he that hath mercy, in gladness.

<sup>9</sup> Love without feigning, hating evil, drawing [*or fast cleaving*] to good;

<sup>10</sup> loving together the charity of brotherhood. Each come before to worship other [*or Coming before together in honour*];

<sup>11</sup> not slow in busyness, fervent in spirit, serving to the Lord,

<sup>12</sup> joying in hope, patient in tribulation, busy in prayer,

<sup>13</sup> giving good to the needs of saints, keeping hospitality.

<sup>14</sup> Bless ye men that pursue you; bless ye, and do not ye curse;

<sup>15</sup> for to joy with men that joy, for to weep with men that weep.

<sup>16</sup> Feel ye the same thing together; not understanding, [*or savouring, or cunning*], high things, but consenting to meek things, [*following meek fathers*]. Do not ye be prudent with yourselves;

<sup>17</sup> to no man yielding evil for evil, but purvey ye good things, not only before God, but also before all men.

<sup>18</sup> If it may be done, that that is of you, have ye peace with all men.

<sup>19</sup> Ye most dear brethren, not defending, [*or avenging*], yourselves, but give ye place to wrath [*or ire*]; for it is written, The Lord saith, To me vengeance, and I shall yield.

<sup>20</sup> But if thine enemy hungereth, feed thou him; if he thirsteth, give thou drink to him; for thou doing this thing shalt gather together coals on his head [*or doing these things thou shalt gather together coals on his head*].

<sup>21</sup> Do not thou be overcome of evil, but overcome thou evil by good.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> Every soul be subject to higher powers. For there is no power but of God, and those things that be of God, be ordained.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore he that against-standeth power, against-standeth the ordinance of God; and they that against-stand, get to themselves damnation.

<sup>3</sup> For princes be not to the dread of good work, but of evil. But wilt thou, that thou dread not power? Do thou good thing, and thou shalt have praising of it;

<sup>4</sup> for he is the minister of God to thee into good. But if thou doest evil, dread thou; for not without cause he beareth the sword, for he is the minister of God, avenger into wrath to him that doeth evil.

<sup>5</sup> And therefore by need be ye subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience.

<sup>6</sup> For therefore ye give tributes, they be the ministers of God, and serve for this same thing.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore yield ye to all men debts, to whom tribute, tribute, to whom toll, [*or custom for things borne about*], toll, [*or such custom*], to whom dread, dread, to whom honour, honour.

<sup>8</sup> To no man owe ye anything, but that ye love together. For he that loveth his neighbour, hath fulfilled the law.

<sup>9</sup> For, Thou shalt do no lechery, Thou shalt not slay, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not say false witnessing, Thou shalt not covet the thing of thy neighbour, and if there be any other commandment, it is enstored, [*or enclosed*], or included, in this word, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>10</sup> The love of thy neighbour worketh not evil; therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

<sup>11</sup> And we know this time, that the hour is now, that we rise from sleep; for now is our health near [*or nearer*], than when we believed.

<sup>12</sup> The night went before, but the day hath nighed. Therefore cast we away the works of darkneses, and be we clothed in [*or with*] the armours of light.

<sup>13</sup> As in [*the*] day wander we honestly, not in superfluous feasts [*or in oft eatings*], and drunkennesses, not in beds and unchastities, not in strife and in envy;

<sup>14</sup> but be ye clothed in the Lord Jesus Christ, and do ye not the busyness [*or the cares*] of flesh in desires.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> But take ye a sick man in belief, not in deemings, [*or in deceptions, or disputations*], of thoughts.

<sup>2</sup> For another man believeth, that he may eat all things; but he that is sick, [*or unsteadfast*], eat worts.

<sup>3</sup> He that eateth, despise not him that eateth not; and he that eateth not, deem not him that eateth. For God hath taken him to him [*or God hath taken him*].

<sup>4</sup> Who art thou, that deemest another's servant? To his lord he standeth, or falleth *from him*, [*or falleth down*]. But he shall stand; for the Lord is mighty to make him perfect, [*or to ordain him, or make steadfast*].

<sup>5</sup> For why one deemeth a day betwixt a day, another deemeth each day. Each man increase in his wit.

<sup>6</sup> He that understandeth [*or savoureth*] the day, understandeth [*or savoureth*] to the Lord. And he that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he doeth thankings to God. And he that eateth not, eateth not to the Lord, and doeth thankings to God.

<sup>7</sup> For no man of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

<sup>8</sup> For whether we live, we live to the Lord; and whether we die, we die to the Lord. Therefore whether we live or die, we be of the Lord [*or we be Lord's*].

<sup>9</sup> For why for this thing Christ was dead, and rose again, that he be Lord both of quick and of dead men [*or of quick and of dead*].

<sup>10</sup> But what deemest thou thy brother? or why despisest thou thy brother? for all we shall stand before the throne of Christ.

<sup>11</sup> For it is written, I live, saith the Lord, for to me each knee shall be bowed, and each tongue shall acknowledge to God.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore each of us shall yield reason to God for himself.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore no more deem we each other; but more deem ye this thing, that ye put not hurting, or cause of stumbling, to a brother.

<sup>14</sup> I know and trust in the Lord Jesus, that nothing is unclean by him, no but to him that deemeth anything to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

<sup>15</sup> And if thy brother be made sorry, [*or heavy*], in conscience for meat, now thou walkest not after charity. Do not thou through thy meat lose him, for whom Christ died.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore be not your good thing blasphemed [*or despised*].



<sup>17</sup> For why the realm of God is not meat and drink, but rightwiseness and peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

<sup>18</sup> And he that in this thing serveth Christ, pleaseth God, and is proved to men.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore pursue we those things that be of peace, and keep we together those things that be of edification.

<sup>20</sup> Do not thou for meat lose the work of God. For all things be clean, but it is evil to the man that eateth by offending.

<sup>21</sup> It is good to not eat flesh, and to not drink wine, neither in what thing thy brother offendeth, or is caused to stumble, or is made sick, [*or unsteadfast*].

<sup>22</sup> Thou hast faith with thyself, have thou before God. Blessed is he that deemeth not himself in that thing that he approveth.

<sup>23</sup> For he that deemeth, is condemned [*or is damned*], if he eateth; for it, [*his eating*], is not of faith. And all thing that is not of faith, is sin.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> But we firmer men owe to sustain [*or to bear up*] the feeblenesses of sick men, [*or unfirm in faith*], and not [*to*] please to ourselves.

<sup>2</sup> Each of us please to his neigh-bour in[*to*] good, to edification.

<sup>3</sup> For Christ pleased not to himself, [*but*], as it is written, The reproofs, [*or shames*], of men despising thee, felled on me.

<sup>4</sup> For whatever things be written, those be written to our teaching, that by patience and comfort of scriptures we have hope.

<sup>5</sup> But God of patience and of solace give to you to understand the same thing, each into other, after Jesus Christ,

<sup>6</sup> that ye of one will with one mouth worship God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>7</sup> For which thing take ye together, as also Christ took you into the honour of God.

<sup>8</sup> For I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises of fathers.

<sup>9</sup> And heathen men owe to honour God for mercy; as it is written, Therefore, Lord, I shall acknowledge to thee among heathen men, and I shall sing to thy name.

<sup>10</sup> And again he saith, Ye heathen men, be ye glad [*or joy*] with his people.

<sup>11</sup> And again, All heathen men, praise ye the Lord; and all peoples, magnify ye him.

12 And again Isaiah saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, that shall rise up to govern heathen men, and heathen men shall hope in him.

13 And God of hope full-fill you in all joy and peace in believing, that ye increase [*or abound*] in hope and virtue of the Holy Ghost.

14 And, brethren, I myself am certain of you, that also ye be full of love, and ye be [*full*]-filled with all knowing [*or all science*], so that ye may admonish each other.

15 And, brethren, more boldly I wrote to you a part, as bringing you into mind, for the grace that is given to me of God,

16 that I be the minister of Christ Jesus among heathen men. And I hallow the gospel of God, that the offering of heathen men be accepted [*or be made acceptable*], and hallowed in the Holy Ghost.

17 Therefore I have glory in Christ Jesus to God.

18 For I dare not speak anything of those things, which Christ doeth not by me, into obedience of heathen men, in word and deeds,

19 in virtue of tokens and great wonders, in virtue of the Holy Ghost, so that from Jerusalem by compass to the Illyricum sea [*or till unto Illyricum*], I have [*full*]-filled the gospel of Christ.

20 And so I have preached this gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I build upon another's ground,

21 but as it is written, For to whom it is not told of him, they shall see, and they that heard not, shall understand.

22 For which thing I was hindered full much to come to you, and I am hindered till [*to*] this time.

23 And now I have not further place, [*or cause of longer dwelling*], in these countries, but I have desire to come to you, of many years that [*now*] be passed.

24 When I begin to pass into Spain, I hope that in my going I shall see you, and of you I shall be led thither, if I [*shall*] use you first in part.

25 Therefore now I shall pass forth to Jerusalem, to minister to saints.

26 For Macedonia and Achaia have assayed to make some gift, [*or some collection, or gathering of money*], to poor men of saints, that be in Jerusalem.

27 For it pleased to them, and they be debtors of them; for if heathen men be made partners of their ghostly things, they owe also in fleshly things to minister to them.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore when I have ended this thing, and have assigned to them this fruit, I shall pass by you into Spain.

<sup>29</sup> And I know, that I coming to you, shall come in the abundance, [*for plenty*], of the blessing of Christ.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore, brethren, I beseech you by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the charity of the Holy Ghost, that ye help me in your prayers [*for me*] to the Lord,

<sup>31</sup> that I be delivered from the unfaithful men, that be in Judea, and that the offering of my service be accepted in Jerusalem to saints;

<sup>32</sup> that I come to you in joy, by the will of God, and that I be refreshed with you.

<sup>33</sup> And God of peace be with you all. Amen.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> And I commend to you Phebe, our sister, which is in the service of the church that is at Cenchrea,

<sup>2</sup> that ye receive her in the Lord worthily to saints, and that ye help her in whatever cause she shall need of you. For she hath helped many men, and myself.

<sup>3</sup> Greet Priscilla and Aquila, mine helpers in Christ Jesus,

<sup>4</sup> which under-putted their necks for my life; to whom not I alone do thankings, but also all the churches of heathen men.

<sup>5</sup> And greet ye well their menial church [*for their home-church*]. Greet well Epaenetus, beloved to me, that is the first of Asia in Christ, Jesus.

<sup>6</sup> Greet well Mary, the which hath travailed much in us.

<sup>7</sup> Greet well Andronicus and Junia, my cousins, and mine even-prisoners, which be noble among the apostles, and which were before me in Christ.

<sup>8</sup> Greet well Amplias, most dear-worthy to me in the Lord.

<sup>9</sup> Greet well Urbane, our helper in Christ Jesus, and Stachys, my darling [*for my beloved*].

<sup>10</sup> Greet well Apelles, the noble in Christ [*for noble in Christ*]. Greet well them that be of Aristobulus' house.

<sup>11</sup> Greet well Herodion, my cousin. Greet well them that be of Narcissus' house, that be in the Lord.

<sup>12</sup> Greet well Tryphena and Tryphosa, which *women* travail in the Lord. Greet well Persis, most dearworthy *woman*, that hath travailed much in the Lord.

<sup>13</sup> Greet well Rufus, chosen in the Lord, and his mother, and mine.

<sup>14</sup> Greet well Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and brethren that be with them.

<sup>15</sup> Greet well Philologus, and Julia, and Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints that be with them.

<sup>16</sup> Greet ye well together in holy kiss. All the churches of Christ greet you well.

<sup>17</sup> But, brethren, I pray you, that ye espy them that make dissensions and hurtings [*or offences*], besides the doctrine that ye have learned, and bow away from them.

<sup>18</sup> For such men serve not to the Lord Christ, but to their womb, and by sweet words and blessings deceive the hearts of innocent men.

<sup>19</sup> But your obedience is published into every place, therefore I have joy in you. But I will, that ye be wise in good thing, and simple in evil.

<sup>20</sup> And God of peace tread Satan under your feet swiftly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

<sup>21</sup> Timothy, mine helper, greeteth you well, and also Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my cousins.

<sup>22</sup> I Tertius greet you well, that wrote this epistle, in the Lord.

<sup>23</sup> Gaius, mine host, greeteth you well, and all the church. Erastus, treasurer, [*or keeper*], of the city, greeteth you well, and Quartus [*the*] brother.

<sup>24</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

<sup>25</sup> And honour and glory be to him, that is mighty to confirm you by my gospel, and preaching of Jesus Christ, by the revelation of mystery held still, [*that is, not showed*], in times ever-lasting;

<sup>26</sup> which *mystery* is now made open by scriptures of prophets, by the commandment of God without beginning and ending, to the obedience of faith in all heathen men,

<sup>27</sup> *the mystery known by Jesus Christ to God alone wise [or the mystery known to God alone wise by Jesus Christ]*, to whom *be* honour and glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

## 1ST CORINTHIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, called apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Sosthenes, brother,

<sup>2</sup> to the church of God that is at Corinth, to them that be hallowed in Christ Jesus, and called saints, with all that inwardly call [*or in-call*] the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, in each place of them and of ours,

<sup>3</sup> grace to you and peace of God, our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>4</sup> I do thankings to my God ever-more for you, in the grace of God that is given to you in Christ Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> For in all things ye be made rich in him, in each word, and in each knowing, [*or science*],

<sup>6</sup> as the witnessing of Christ is confirmed in you;

<sup>7</sup> so that nothing fail to you in any grace, that abide the showing [*or the revelation*] of our Lord Jesus Christ;

<sup>8</sup> which also shall confirm you into the end without crime, [*or great sin*], in the day of the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>9</sup> A true God [*or Forsooth God is true*], by whom ye be called into the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

<sup>10</sup> But, brethren, I beseech you, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all say the same thing, and that dissensions, [*or schisms, or divisions, or discords*], be not among you; but be ye perfect in the same wit, and in the same knowing.

<sup>11</sup> For, my brethren, it is told to me of them that be at Chloe's, that strives be among you.

<sup>12</sup> And I say that, that each of you saith, For I am of Paul, and I *am* of Apollos, and I *am* of Cephas, [*that is, Peter*], but I *am* of Christ.

<sup>13</sup> Whether Christ is parted? whether Paul was crucified for you, either ye be baptized in the name of Paul?

<sup>14</sup> I do thankings to my God, that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius;

<sup>15</sup> lest any man say, that ye be baptized in my name.

<sup>16</sup> And I baptized also the house of Stephanas, but I know not, that I baptized any other.

<sup>17</sup> For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel [*or to evangelize*]; not in wisdom of word, that the cross of Christ be not voided away.

<sup>18</sup> For the word of the cross is folly to them that perish; but to them that be made safe, that is to say, to us, it is the virtue of God.

<sup>19</sup> For it is written, I shall destroy the wisdom of wise men, and I shall reprove the prudence of prudent men.

<sup>20</sup> Where is the wise man? where is the wise lawyer? *[or where is the writer, or the man of law?]* where is the purchaser of this world? Whether God hath not made the wisdom of this world fond? *[or foolish?]*

<sup>21</sup> For the world, in wisdom of God, knew not God by wisdom, *[or For why for in the wisdom of God, the world knew not God by wisdom]*, it pleased to God, by *[the]* folly of preaching, to make them safe that believed.

<sup>22</sup> For Jews seek signs, and Greeks seek wisdom;

<sup>23</sup> but we preach Christ crucified, to the Jews cause of stumbling, and to heathen men folly;

<sup>24</sup> but to those Jews and Greeks that be called, *we preach* Christ the virtue of God, and the wisdom of God.

<sup>25</sup> For that that is folly thing of God, is wiser than men; and that that is the feeble, *[or frail]*, thing of God, is stronger than men.

<sup>26</sup> But, brethren, see ye your calling; for not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble.

<sup>27</sup> But God chose those things that be fond *[or foolish]* of the world, to confound wise men; and God chose the feeble, *[or frail]*, things of the world, to confound the strong things;

<sup>28</sup> and God chose the unnoble things and despicable things of the world, and those things that be not, to destroy those things that be;

<sup>29</sup> that each man have not glory in his sight.

<sup>30</sup> But of him ye be in Christ Jesus, which is made of God to us wisdom, and rightwiseness, and holiness, and again-buying;

<sup>31</sup> that, as it is written, He that glorieth, have glory in the Lord.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not in the highness of word, either of wisdom, telling, *[or showing]*, to you the witnessing of Christ.

<sup>2</sup> For I deemed not me to know anything among you, but Christ Jesus, and him crucified.

<sup>3</sup> And I in sickness, and dread, and in much trembling, was among you *[or was with you]*;

<sup>4</sup> and my word and my preaching was not in subtly stirring [*or persuad-able*] words of man's wisdom, but in showing of Spirit and of virtue;

<sup>5</sup> that your faith be not in the wisdom of men, but in the virtue of God.

<sup>6</sup> For we speak wisdom among perfect men, but not wisdom of this world, neither of princes of this world, that be destroyed;

<sup>7</sup> but we speak the wisdom of God in mystery, which wisdom is hid; which *wisdom* God before-ordained before worlds into our glory,

<sup>8</sup> which none of the princes of this world knew; for if they had known, they should never have crucified the Lord of glory.

<sup>9</sup> But as it is written, That eye saw not, nor ear heard, neither it ascended into the heart of man, what things God arrayed [*or made ready before*] to them that love him;

<sup>10</sup> but God showed to us by his Spirit. For why the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

<sup>11</sup> And who of men knoweth, what things be of man, but the spirit of man that is in him? So what things be of God, no man knoweth, but the Spirit of God.

<sup>12</sup> And we have not received the spirit of this world, but the Spirit that is of God, that we know what things be given to us of God.

<sup>13</sup> Which things we speak also, not in wise [*or in taught*] words of man's wisdom, but in the doctrine of the Spirit, and make a likeness [*or a comparison*] of spiritual things to ghostly men.

<sup>14</sup> For a beastly man perceiveth not those things that be of the Spirit of God; for it is folly to him, and he may not understand, for it is examined, [*or assayed*], ghostly.

<sup>15</sup> But a spiritual man deemeth all things, and he is deemed of no man.

<sup>16</sup> As it is written, And who knew the wit of the Lord, or who taught him? And we have the wit of Christ.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> And I, brethren, might not speak to you as to spiritual men, but as to fleshly *men*; as to little children in Christ,

<sup>2</sup> I gave to you milk to drink, not meat; for ye might not yet *under-stand*, neither ye may now,

<sup>3</sup> for yet ye be fleshly. For while envy and strife is among you, whether ye be not fleshly, and ye go after man?

<sup>4</sup> For when some saith, I am of Paul, and another, But I am of Apollos, whether ye be not [*fleshly*] men?

<sup>5</sup> What therefore is Apollos, and what Paul? They be ministers of him, to whom ye have believed; and to each man as God hath given.

<sup>6</sup> I planted, Apollos moisted, but God gave increasing.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore neither he that planteth is anything, neither he that moisteth, but God that giveth increasing.

<sup>8</sup> And he that planteth, and he that moisteth, be one; and each shall take his own meed, after his travail.

<sup>9</sup> For we be the helpers of God; ye be the earth-tilling of God, ye be the building of God.

<sup>10</sup> After the grace of God that is given to me, as a wise master carpenter I setted the fundament; and another buildeth above. But each man see, how he buildeth above [*or how and what things he buildeth upon*].

<sup>11</sup> For no man may set another fundament, except [*or besides*] that that is set, which is Christ Jesus.

<sup>12</sup> For if any man buildeth over [*or upon*] this fundament, gold, silver, precious stones, sticks, hay, or stubble,

<sup>13</sup> every man's work shall be open; for the day of the Lord shall declare, for it shall be showed in fire; the fire shall prove the work of each man, what manner work it is.

<sup>14</sup> If the work of any man dwell still, which he builded above [*or upon*], he shall receive meed.

<sup>15</sup> If any man's work burn, he shall suffer harm, *either impairing*; but he shall be safe, so nevertheless as by fire.

<sup>16</sup> Know ye not, that ye be the temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

<sup>17</sup> And if any [*man*] defouleth the temple of God, God shall lose him; for the temple of God is holy, which ye be.

<sup>18</sup> No man deceive himself. If any man among you is seen to be wise in this world, be he made a fool, that he be wise.

<sup>19</sup> For the wisdom of this world is folly with God; for it is written, I shall catch wise men in their fell wisdom, [*or subtle guile*];

<sup>20</sup> and again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of wise men, for those be vain.

<sup>21</sup> Therefore no man have glory in men. For all things be yours,

<sup>22</sup> either Paul, either Apollos, either Cephas, either the world, either life, either death, either things present, either things to coming [*or to come*]; for all things be yours,

<sup>23</sup> and ye *be* of Christ, and Christ *is* of God.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> So a man guess, [*or deem*], us as ministers of Christ, and dispensers of the mysteries of God.



<sup>2</sup> Now it is sought here among the dispensers, that a man be found true.

<sup>3</sup> And to me it is for the least thing, that I be deemed of you, or of man's day, [*that is, here in this life*]; but neither I deem myself.

<sup>4</sup> For I am nothing over-trusting, [*or guilty*], to myself, but not in this thing I am justified; for he that deemeth me, is the Lord.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore do not ye deem before the time, till that the Lord come, which shall lighten the hid things of darkneses, and shall show the counsels of hearts; and then praising shall be to each man of God.

<sup>6</sup> And, brethren, I have transfigured these things into me and into Apollos, for you; that in us ye learn, lest over that it is written [*or over that that is written*], one against another be blown with pride for another [*man*].

<sup>7</sup> Who deemeth thee? And what hast thou, that thou hast not received? And if thou hast received, what gloriest thou, as thou haddest not received?

<sup>8</sup> Now ye be [*full*]-filled, now ye be made rich; ye reign without us; and I would that ye reign, that also we reign with you.

<sup>9</sup> And I guess, that God showed us the last apostles, as those that be sent to the death; for we be made a spectacle to the world, and to angels, and to men.

<sup>10</sup> We fools for Christ, but ye prudent in Christ; we sick, but ye strong; ye noble, but we unnoble.

<sup>11</sup> Till into this hour we hunger, and thirst, and be naked, and be smitten with buffets, and we be unstable, [*moving from place to place*],

<sup>12</sup> and we travail working with our hands; we be cursed, and we bless; we suffer persecution, and we abide long;

<sup>13</sup> we be blasphemed, and we beseech; as cleansings of this world we be made the out-casting of all things till yet.

<sup>14</sup> I write not these things, that I confound you, but I warn you as my most dearworthy sons.

<sup>15</sup> For why if ye have ten thousand of undermasters in Christ, but not many fathers; for in Christ Jesus I have engendered you by the gospel.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore, brethren, I pray you, be ye followers of me, as I of Christ.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore I sent to you Timothy, which is my most dearworthy son, and faithful in the Lord, which shall teach you my ways, that be in Christ Jesus; as I teach everywhere in each church.

<sup>18</sup> As though I should not come to you, so some be blown with pride;

<sup>19</sup> but I shall come to you soon, if God will; and I shall know not the word of them that be blown with pride, but the virtue.

<sup>20</sup> For the realm of God is not in word, but in virtue.

<sup>21</sup> What will ye? Shall I come to you in a rod, or in charity, and in a spirit of mildness?

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Yet all manner of fornication is heard among you, and such fornication, which is not among heathen men, so that some man have the wife of his father.

<sup>2</sup> And ye be swollen [*or blown*] with pride, and not more had wailing, that he that did this work, be taken away from the middle of you.

<sup>3</sup> And I absent in body, but present in spirit, now have deemed, as present, him that hath thus wrought,

<sup>4</sup> when ye be gathered together in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and my spirit, with the virtue of the Lord Jesus,

<sup>5</sup> to betake such a man to Satan, into the perishing of flesh, that the spirit be safe in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>6</sup> Your glorying is not good. Know ye not, that a little sourdough impairerth [*or corrupteth*] all the gobbet?

<sup>7</sup> Cleanse ye out the old sourdough, that ye be new sprinkling together, as ye be therf, [*or without souring*]. For Christ offered is our pask.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore eat we, not in old sourdough, neither in sourdough of malice and waywardness, but in therf things of clearness, and of truth.

<sup>9</sup> I wrote to you in an epistle, that ye be not meddled, [*or mingled, or commune not*], with lechers,

<sup>10</sup> not with lechers of this world, nor *with* covetous men, nor raveners, nor with men serving to maumets [*or to idols*], else ye should have gone out of this world.

<sup>11</sup> But now I have written to you, that ye be not meddled, [*or mingled, or commune not with such*]. If he that is named a brother among you, and is a lecher, or covetous, or serving to idols, or a curser, or full of drunkenness, or a ravenor, to take no meat with such.

<sup>12</sup> For what is it to me to deem of them that be withoutforth? Whether ye deem not of things [*or of them*] that be withinforth?

<sup>13</sup> For God shall deem them that be withoutforth. Do ye away evil from yourselves.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Dare any of you that hath a cause against another, be deemed at wicked men, and not at holy men [*or saints*]?

<sup>2</sup> Whether ye know not, that saints shall deem this world? And if the world shall be deemed by you, be ye unworthy to deem the least things?

<sup>3</sup> Know ye not, that we shall deem angels? how much more worldly things?

<sup>4</sup> Therefore if ye have worldly dooms, ordain ye those contemptible men, [*or of little reputation*], that be in the church, to deem.

<sup>5</sup> I say to make you ashamed [*or I say to your shame*]. So there is not any wise man, that may deem betwixt a brother and his brother;

<sup>6</sup> but brother with brother striveth in doom, and that among unfaithful men.

<sup>7</sup> And now trespass is always among you, for ye have dooms among you. Why rather take ye not wrong? why rather suffer ye not deceit [*or fraud*]?

<sup>8</sup> But also ye do wrong, and do fraud [*or and defraud*], and that to brethren.

<sup>9</sup> Whether ye know not, that wicked men shall not wield the kingdom of God? Do not ye err; neither lechers, neither men that serve maumets [*or idols*], neither adulterers, neither lechers against kind, neither they that do lechery with men,

<sup>10</sup> neither thieves, neither avaricious [*or covetous*] men, neither *men* full of drunkenness, neither cursers, neither raveners, shall wield the kingdom of God.

<sup>11</sup> And ye were sometime these things; but ye be washed, but ye be hallowed, but ye be justified in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in the Spirit of our God.

<sup>12</sup> All things be leaveful to me, but not all things be speedful. All things be leaveful to me, but I shall not be brought down under any man's power.

<sup>13</sup> Meat to the womb, and the womb to meats; and God shall destroy both this and that. And the body not to fornication, but to the Lord, and the Lord to the body.

<sup>14</sup> For God raised the Lord, and shall raise us by his virtue.

<sup>15</sup> Know ye not, that your bodies be members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and shall I make *them* the members of a whore? God forbid.

<sup>16</sup> Whether ye know not, that he that cleaveth to a whore, is made one body? For he saith, There shall be twain in one flesh.

<sup>17</sup> And he that cleaveth to the Lord, is one Spirit.

<sup>18</sup> Flee ye fornication; all sin what-ever sin a man doeth, is without the body; but he that doeth fornication, sinneth against his body.

<sup>19</sup> Whether ye know not, that your members be the temple of the Holy Ghost, that is in you, whom ye have of God, and ye be not your own?

<sup>20</sup> For ye be bought with great price. Glorify ye, and bear ye God in your body.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> But of those things that ye have written to me, it is good to a man to touch not a woman.

<sup>2</sup> But for fornication each man have his own wife, and each woman have her own husband.

<sup>3</sup> The husband yield debt to the wife, and also the wife to the husband.

<sup>4</sup> The woman hath not power of her body, but the husband; and the husband hath not power of his body, but the woman [*or the wife*].

<sup>5</sup> Do not ye defraud each to other, but peradventure of consent for a time, that ye give attention to prayer; and again turn again to the same thing, lest Satan tempt you for your uncontinence.

<sup>6</sup> But I say this thing as giving leave [*or by indulgence*], not by command-ment.

<sup>7</sup> For I will, that all men be as myself. But each man hath his proper gift of God; one thus, and another thus.

<sup>8</sup> But I say to them, that be not wedded, and to widows, it is good to them, if they dwell so as I.

<sup>9</sup> And if they contain not them-selves, [*or be not chaste*], be they wedded; for it is better to be wedded, than to be burnt.

<sup>10</sup> But to them that be joined in matrimony, I command, not I, but the Lord, that the wife depart not from the husband;

<sup>11</sup> and that if she departeth, that she dwell unwedded, or be reconciled to her husband; and the husband forsake not the wife.

<sup>12</sup> But to others I say, not the Lord. If any brother hath an unfaithful, [*or heathen*], wife, and she consenteth to dwell with him, leave he her not.

<sup>13</sup> And if any woman hath an unfaithful husband, and this consenteth to dwell with her, leave she not the husband.

<sup>14</sup> For the unfaithful husband is hallowed by the faithful woman, and the unfaithful woman is hallowed by the faithful husband. Else your children were unclean, but now they be holy.

15 That if the unfaithful departeth, depart he. For why the brother or sister is not subject to servage in such; for God hath called us in peace.

16 And whereof knowest thou, woman, if thou shalt make the man safe; or whereof knowest thou, man, if thou shalt make the woman safe?

17 But as the Lord hath parted to each, and as God hath called each man, so go he, as I teach in all churches.

18 A man circumcised is called, bring he not to prepuce. A man is called in prepuce, be he not circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nought, and prepuce is nought, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Each man in what calling he is called, in that dwell he.

21 Thou [*a*] servant art called, be it no charge to thee; but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 He that is a servant, and is called in the Lord, is a free man of the Lord. Also he that is a free man, and is called, is the servant of Christ.

23 With price ye be bought; do not ye be made servants of men.

24 Therefore each man in what thing he is called a brother, dwell he in this with God.

25 But of virgins I have no commandment of God; but I give counsel, as he that hath gotten mercy of the Lord, that I be true.

26 Therefore I guess, that this thing is good for the present need; for it is good to [*or for*] a man to be so.

27 Thou art bound to a wife, do not thou seek unbinding; thou art unbound from a wife, do not thou seek a wife.

28 But if thou hast taken a wife, thou hast not sinned; and if a maiden is wedded, she sinned not; nevertheless such shall have tribulation of flesh. But I spare you.

29 Therefore, brethren, I say this thing, The time is short. Another is this, that they that have wives, be as though they had none;

30 and they that weep, as they wept not; and they that joy, as they joyed not; and they that buy, as they had not;

31 and they that use this world, as they that use [*it*] not. For why the figure, [*or fairness*], of this world passeth.

32 But I will, that ye be without busyness, for he that is without wife, is busy what things be of the Lord, how he shall please God.

33 But he that is with a wife, is busy what things be of the world, how he shall please the wife [*or his wife*], and he is parted.

34 And a woman unwedded and [*a*] maiden thinketh what things be of the Lord, that she be holy in body and spirit.

But she that is wedded, thinketh what things be of the world, how she shall please the husband [*or her husband*].

<sup>35</sup> And I say these things to your profit, not that I cast to you a snare, but to that that is seemly, and that giveth easiness [*or facility*], without hindering to make prayers, [*or to beseech*], to the Lord.

<sup>36</sup> And if any man guesseth himself to be seen foul on his virgin, that she is full waxen [*or is well old*], and so it behooveth to be done, do she that that she will [*or what he will*]; she sinneth not, if she be wedded, [*+or s/he sinneth not, if s/he be wedded*].

<sup>37</sup> For he that ordained stably, [*or steadfastly*], in his heart, not having need, but having power of his will, and hath deemed in his heart this thing, to keep his virgin [*or his virginity*], doeth well.

<sup>38</sup> Therefore he that joineth his virgin in matrimony, doeth well; and he that joineth not, doeth better.

<sup>39</sup> The woman is bound to the law, as long time as her husband liveth; and if her husband is dead, she is delivered from the law of the husband, be she wedded to whom she will, only in the Lord.

<sup>40</sup> But she shall be more blessed, if she dwelleth thus, after my counsel; and I ween, that I have the Spirit of God.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But of these things that be sacrificed to idols, we know, for all we have knowing. But knowing [*or science*], bloweth [*with pride*], charity edifieth.

<sup>2</sup> But if any man guesseth, [*or deem*], that he knoweth anything, he hath not yet known how it behooveth him to know.

<sup>3</sup> And if any man loveth God, this is known of him.

<sup>4</sup> But of meats that be offered to idols, we know, that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one.

<sup>5</sup> For though there be some that be said gods, either in heaven, either in earth, as there be many gods, and many lords;

<sup>6</sup> nevertheless to us is one God, the Father, of whom *be* all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom *be* all things, and we by him.

<sup>7</sup> But not in all men is knowing. For some men with conscience of idol, *that is, they guess that the idol is some divine thing*, till now eat as thing offered to idols; and their conscience is defouled, for it is sick.

<sup>8</sup> Meat commendeth us not to God; for neither we shall fail, if we eat not, neither if we eat, we shall have plenty [*or we shall abound*].

<sup>9</sup> But see ye, lest peradventure this your leave [*or license*] be made hurting to sick men, [*or frail*].

<sup>10</sup> For if any man shall see him, that hath knowing, eating in a place where idols be worshipped, whether his conscience, since it is sick, shall not be edified to eat things offered to idols?

<sup>11</sup> And the sick, [*or unsteadfast*], brother, for whom Christ died, shall perish in thy knowing.

<sup>12</sup> For thus ye sinning against brethren, and smiting their sick conscience, sin against Christ.

<sup>13</sup> Wherefore if meat causeth my brother to stumble, I shall never eat flesh, lest I cause my brother to stumble.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> Whether I am not free? Am I not apostle? Whether I saw not Jesus Christ, our Lord? Whether ye be not my work in the Lord?

<sup>2</sup> And though to others I am not apostle, but nevertheless to you I am; for ye be the little sign of mine apostlehood in the Lord.

<sup>3</sup> My defence to them that ask me, that is [*or is this*].

<sup>4</sup> Whether we have not power to eat and drink?

<sup>5</sup> Whether we have not power to lead about a woman, a sister, as also other apostles, and brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

<sup>6</sup> Or I alone and Barnabas have not power to work these things?

<sup>7</sup> Who travaileth any time with his own [*soldier's*] wages? Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of his fruit? Who keepeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

<sup>8</sup> Whether after man I say these things? whether also the law saith not these things?

<sup>9</sup> For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not bind [*up*] the mouth of the ox that thresheth. Whether of oxen is charge to God?

<sup>10</sup> Whether for us he saith these things? For why those be written for us; for he that eareth, oweth to ear in hope, and he that thresheth, in hope to take fruits.

<sup>11</sup> If we sow spiritual things to you, is it great, if we reap your fleshly things?

<sup>12</sup> If others be partners of your power, why not rather we? But we use not this power, but we suffer all things, that we give no hindering to the evangel of Christ.

<sup>13</sup> Know ye not, that they that work in the temple, eat those things that be of the temple, and they that serve to the altar, be partners of the altar?

<sup>14</sup> So the Lord ordained to them that tell the gospel, to live of the gospel.

<sup>15</sup> But I used none of these things; and I wrote not these things, that they be done so in me; for it is good rather for me to die, than that any man avoid my glory.

<sup>16</sup> For if I preach the gospel, glory is not to me, for need-like I must do it; for woe to me, if I preach not the gospel.

<sup>17</sup> But if I do this thing willfully [*or willingly*], I have meed; but if against my will, dispensing [*or dispensation*] is betaken to me.

<sup>18</sup> What then is my meed? That I preaching the gospel, put the gospel without others' cost, [*or expense, either taking of sustenance therefore*], that I use [*or mis-use*] not my power in the gospel.

<sup>19</sup> For why when I was free of all men, I made me servant of all men, to win the more men [*or that I should win more men*].

<sup>20</sup> And to Jews I am made as a Jew, to win the Jews; to them that be under the law, as I were under the law, when I was not under the law, to win them that were under the law;

<sup>21</sup> to them that were without law, as I were without law, when I was not without [*the*] law of God, but I was in the law of Christ, to win them that were without [*the*] law.

<sup>22</sup> I am made sick to sick men, to win sick men; to all men I am made all things, to make all men safe.

<sup>23</sup> But I do all things for the gospel, that I be made partner of it.

<sup>24</sup> Know ye not, that they that run in a furlong, all run, but one taketh the prize? So run ye, that ye catch.

<sup>25</sup> Each man that striveth in fight, abstaineth him from all things; and they, that they take a corruptible crown, but we an incorrupt.

<sup>26</sup> Therefore I run so, not as to an uncertain thing; thus I fight, not as beating the air;

<sup>27</sup> but I chastise my body, and bring *it* into servage [*or servitude*]; lest peradventure when I preach to others, I myself be made reprovably.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, I will not, that ye unknow, that all our fathers were under [*a*] cloud, and all passed the sea;

<sup>2</sup> and all were baptized in Moses, in the cloud and in the sea;



<sup>3</sup> and all ate the same spiritual meat,

<sup>4</sup> and all drank the same spiritual drink; and they drank of the spiritual stone following them; and the stone was Christ.

<sup>5</sup> But not in full many of them it was well pleasant to God; for why they were cast down in [*the*] desert.

<sup>6</sup> But these things were done in figure of us, that we be not coveters of evil things, as they coveted.

<sup>7</sup> Neither be ye made idolaters, as some of them; as it is written, The people sat to eat and drink, and they rose up to play.

<sup>8</sup> Neither do we fornication, as some of them did fornication, and three and twenty thousand were dead in one day.

<sup>9</sup> Neither tempt we Christ, as some of them tempted, and perished of serpents.

<sup>10</sup> Neither grutch ye, as some of them grutched, and they perished of a destroyer [*or of the waster*].

<sup>11</sup> And all these things fell to them in figure; but they be written to our amending [*or correction*], into whom the ends of the worlds be come [*or the ends of the world have come*].

<sup>12</sup> Therefore he that guesseth him, that he standeth, see he, that he fall not.

<sup>13</sup> Temptation take not you, but man's *temptation*; for God is true, which shall not suffer you to be tempted above that that ye may; but he shall make with temptation also purveyance, that ye may suffer [*or sustain*].

<sup>14</sup> Wherefore, ye most dearworthy to me, flee ye from the worshipping of maumets [*or idols*].

<sup>15</sup> As to prudent men I speak, deem ye yourselves [*or ye yourselves deem*] that thing that I say.

<sup>16</sup> Whether the cup of blessing which we bless, is not the communing of Christ's blood? and whether the bread which we break, is not the *part-taking* of the body of the Lord?

<sup>17</sup> For we many be one bread and one body, all we that take part of one bread and of one cup.

<sup>18</sup> See ye Israel after the flesh, whether they that eat sacrifices, be not partners of the altar?

<sup>19</sup> What therefore say I, that a thing that is offered to idols is anything, or that the idol is anything?

<sup>20</sup> But those things that heathen men offer, they offer to devils, and not to God. But I will not, that ye be made fellows of fiends;

<sup>21</sup> for ye may not drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of fiends; ye may not be partners of the board of the Lord, and of the board of fiends.

<sup>22</sup> Whether we have envy to the Lord? whether we be stronger than he?

<sup>23</sup> All things be leaveful to me, but not all things be speedful. All things be leaveful to me, but not all things edify.

<sup>24</sup> No man seek that thing that is his own, but that thing that is of another.

<sup>25</sup> All thing that is sold in the butchery, eat ye, asking nothing for conscience.

<sup>26</sup> The earth and the plenty of it, is the Lord's.

<sup>27</sup> If any of heathen [*or of unfaithful*] men call you to supper, and ye will go, all thing that is set to you, eat ye, asking nothing for conscience.

<sup>28</sup> But if any man saith, This thing is offered to idols, do not ye eat, for him that showed [*this thing*], and for conscience;

<sup>29</sup> and I say not, thy conscience, but of another [*man's*]. But whereto is my freedom [*or my liberty*] deemed of another man's conscience?

<sup>30</sup> Therefore if I take part with grace, what am I blasphemed, for that that I do thankings [*or graces*]?

<sup>31</sup> Therefore whether ye eat, or drink, or do any other thing, do ye all things to the glory of God.

<sup>32</sup> Be ye without offence to Jews, and to heathen men, and to the church of God;

<sup>33</sup> as I by all things please to all men, not seeking that that [*or what*] is profitable to me, but that that is profitable to many men, that they be made safe.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> Be ye my followers, as I *am* of Christ.

<sup>2</sup> And, brethren, I praise you, that by all things ye be mindful of me; and as I betook to you my commandments, ye hold [*or ye keep*].

<sup>3</sup> But I will that ye know, that Christ is [*the*] head of each man; but the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.

<sup>4</sup> Each man praying, or prophesying, when his head is covered, defouleth his head.

<sup>5</sup> But each woman praying, or prophesying, when her head is not covered, defouleth her head; for it is one, as if she were polled, [*or were made bald, or clipped*].

<sup>6</sup> And if a woman be not covered [*or veiled*], be she polled; and if it is foul thing to a woman to be polled, or to be made bald, cover she her head.

<sup>7</sup> But a man shall not cover his head, for he is the image and glory of God; but a woman is the glory of man.

<sup>8</sup> For a man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man.

<sup>9</sup> And the man is not made for the woman, but the woman for the man.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore the woman shall have a covering on her head, also for angels.

<sup>11</sup> Nevertheless neither the man is without the woman, neither the woman is without *[the]* man, in the Lord.

<sup>12</sup> For why as the woman is of the man, so the man is by the woman; but all things *be* of God.

<sup>13</sup> Deem ye yourselves; beseemeth *[or becometh]* it a woman not covered on the head to pray to God?

<sup>14</sup> Neither the kind itself teacheth us *[that]*, for if a man nourish long hair, it is shame to him;

<sup>15</sup> but if a woman nourish long hair, it is glory to her, for hairs be given to her for covering.

<sup>16</sup> But if any man is seen to be full of strife, we have none such custom, neither the church of God.

<sup>17</sup> But this thing I command, not praising, that ye come together not into the better, but into the worse.

<sup>18</sup> First for when ye come together into the church, I hear that dissensions, *either partings*, be, and in part I believe.

<sup>19</sup> For it behooveth heresies to be, that they that be approved, be openly known in you.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore when ye come together into one, now it is not to eat the Lord's supper;

<sup>21</sup> for why each man before taketh his supper to eat, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

<sup>22</sup> Whether ye have not houses to eat and drink, or ye despise the church of God, and confound, *[or shame]*, them that have none? *[or that have not?]* What shall I say to you? I praise you, but herein *[or in this thing]* I praise you not.

<sup>23</sup> For I have taken of the Lord that thing, which I have betaken to you. For the Lord Jesus, in what night he was betrayed, took bread,

<sup>24</sup> and did thankings *[or graces]*, and brake, and said, Take ye, and eat ye; this is my body, which shall be betrayed for you; do ye this thing into my mind.

<sup>25</sup> Also *[he took]* the cup, after that he had supped, and said, This cup is the new testament in my blood; do ye this thing, as oft as ye shall drink *[it]*, into my mind.

<sup>26</sup> For as oft as ye shall eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye shall tell *[or show]* the death of the Lord, till that he come *[or till he come]*.

<sup>27</sup> Therefore whoever eateth the bread, or drinketh the cup of the Lord unworthily, he shall be guilty of the body and of the blood of the Lord.

<sup>28</sup> But prove a man himself, and so eat he of that bread, and drink he of the cup.

<sup>29</sup> For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh doom, [*or damnation*], to him[*self*], not wisely deeming the body of the Lord.

<sup>30</sup> Therefore among you many be sick and feeble [*or unstrong*], and many sleep, [*or die*].

<sup>31</sup> And if we deemed wisely us-selves, we should not be deemed;

<sup>32</sup> but while we be deemed of the Lord, we be chastised, that we be not condemned with this world.

<sup>33</sup> Therefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, abide ye together.

<sup>34</sup> If any man hungereth, eat he at home, that ye come not together into doom. And I shall dispose other things, when I come.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> But of spiritual things, brethren, I will not that ye unknow.

<sup>2</sup> For ye know, that when ye were heathen men, how ye were led going to dumb maumets [*or dumb simulacra*].

<sup>3</sup> Therefore I make known to you, that no man speaking in the Spirit of God, saith departing from Jesus; and no man may say the Lord Jesus [*is*], but in the Holy Ghost.

<sup>4</sup> And diverse graces there be, but *it is* all one Spirit;

<sup>5</sup> and diverse services *there be*, but *it is* all one Lord;

<sup>6</sup> and diverse workings there be, but *it is* all one God, that worketh all things in all things.

<sup>7</sup> And to each man the showing of Spirit is given to profit.

<sup>8</sup> And the word of wisdom is given to one by Spirit; to another the word of knowing, by the same Spirit;

<sup>9</sup> faith to another, in the same Spirit; to another, grace of healings [*or of healths*], in one Spirit;

<sup>10</sup> to another, the working of virtues; to another, prophecy; to another, very knowing [*or discretion*] of spirits; to another, kinds of languages [*or tongues*]; to another, expounding [*or interpreting*] of words.

<sup>11</sup> And one and the same Spirit worketh all these things, parting to each by themselves as he will.

<sup>12</sup> For as there is one body, and hath many members, and all the members of the body when those [*or they*] be many, be one body, so also Christ.

13 For in one Spirit all we be baptized into one body, either Jews, either heathen, either servants, either free; and all we be filled with drink [*or have drunk*] in one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, For I am not the hand, I am not of the body; not therefore it is not of the body.

16 And if the ear saith, For I am not the eye, I am not of the body; not therefore it is not of the body.

17 If all the body is the eye, where is [*the*] hearing? and if all the body is hearing, where is [*the*] smelling?

18 But now God hath set [*or put*] members, and each of them in the body, as he would.

19 And if all were one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now there be many members, but one body.

21 And the eye may not say to the hand, I have no need to thy works; or again the head to the feet, Ye be not necessary to me.

22 But much more those that be seen to be the lower members of the body, [*or the more sick*], be more needful;

23 and those that we guess to be the unworthier [*or the unnobler*] members of the body, to them we give more honour; and those members that be dishonest, have more honesty.

24 For our honest members have need of none; but God tempered the body, giving more worship to it, to whom it failed,

25 that debate be not in the body, but that the members be busy into the same thing each for other [*or for each other*].

26 And if one member suffereth any-thing, all members suffer therewith; either if one member joyeth [*or glorieth*], all members joy together.

27 And ye be the body of Christ, and members of member.

28 But God set some men in the church, first apostles, the second time prophets [*or the second prophets*], the third teachers, afterward virtues, afterward graces of healings, helpings, governings, kinds of languages, interpretations of words.

29 Whether all [*be*] apostles? whether all [*be*] prophets? whether all teachers? whether all virtues?

30 whether all have grace of healings? whether all speak with languages? whether all expound [*or interpret*]?

31 But pursue ye the better ghostly gifts. And yet I show to you a more excellent, [*or worthy*], way.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> If I speak with tongues of men and of angels, and I have not charity, I am made as brass sounding, or a cymbal tinkling.

<sup>2</sup> And if I have prophecy, and know all mysteries, and all knowing, [*or science*], and if I have all faith, so that I move hills from their place, [*or from one place to another*], and I have not charity, I am nought.

<sup>3</sup> And if I part all my goods into the meats of poor men, and if I betake my body, so that I burn, and if I have not charity, it profiteth to me nothing.

<sup>4</sup> Charity is patient, it is benign; charity envieth not, it doeth not wickedly, it is not blown [*with pride*],

<sup>5</sup> it is not covetous, [*or ambitious, or covetous of worships*], it seeketh not those things that be his own [*or her own*], it is not stirred to wrath, it thinketh not evil,

<sup>6</sup> it joyeth not on [*or in*] wicked-ness, but it joyeth together to [*or with*] truth;

<sup>7</sup> it suffereth all things, it believeth all things, it hopeth all things, it sustaineth all things.

<sup>8</sup> Charity falleth never down, whether prophecies shall be voided, either languages shall cease, either science shall be destroyed.

<sup>9</sup> For a part we know, and a part we prophesy;

<sup>10</sup> but when that shall come that is perfect, that thing that is of part shall be voided.

<sup>11</sup> When I was a little child, I spake as a little child, I understood as a little child, I thought as a little child; but when I was made a man, I avoided/I voided those things that were of a little child.

<sup>12</sup> And we see now by a mirror in darkness, but then face to face; now I know of part, but then I shall know, as I am known.

<sup>13</sup> And now dwell faith, hope, charity, these three; but the most of these is charity.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> Pursue ye charity, love ye spiritual things, but more that ye prophesy.

<sup>2</sup> And he that speaketh in tongue, speaketh not to men, but to God; for no man heareth. But the Spirit speaketh mysteries.

<sup>3</sup> For he that prophesieth, speaketh to men to edification, and admonishing, and comforting.

<sup>4</sup> He that speaketh in tongue, *that is, in strange language*, edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church of God.

<sup>5</sup> And I will, that all ye speak in tongues, but more that ye prophesy. For he that prophesieth, is more than he that speaketh in languages, [*or in tongues*]; but peradventure he expound, [*or interpret, or declare*], that the church take edification.

<sup>6</sup> But now, brethren, if I come to you, and speak in tongues, what shall I [*or it*] profit to you, but if I speak to you either in revelation, either in science, either in prophecy, either in teaching?

<sup>7</sup> For those things that be without soul, [*or life*], and giveth voices, either pipe, either harp, but those [*or they*] give distinction of soundings, how shall it be known that that is sung, either that that is trumped [*or is harped*].

<sup>8</sup> For if a trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall make himself ready to battle?

<sup>9</sup> So but ye give an open word by tongue, how shall that that is said be known? For ye shall be speaking in vain [*or in the air*].

<sup>10</sup> There be many kinds of languages [*or tongues*] in this world, and nothing is without voice.

<sup>11</sup> But if I know not the virtue of a voice, I shall be to him, to whom I shall speak, a barbaric; and he that speaketh to me, *shall be* a barbaric.

<sup>12</sup> So ye, for ye be lovers of spirits, [*that is, of ghostly gifts*], seek ye that ye be plenteous to edification of the church.

<sup>13</sup> And therefore he that speaketh in language [*or in tongue*], pray, that he expound [*or interpret*].

<sup>14</sup> For if I pray in tongue, my spirit prayeth; mine understanding, [*or my mind, or reasoning*], is without fruit.

<sup>15</sup> What then? I shall pray in spirit, I shall pray in mind; I shall say psalm in spirit, I shall say psalm also in mind.

<sup>16</sup> For if thou blessest in spirit, who filleth the place of an idiot, [*or unlearned man*], how shall he say Amen on thy blessing, for he knoweth not, what thou sayest?

<sup>17</sup> For thou doest well thankings [*or graces*], but another man is not edified.

<sup>18</sup> I thank my God, for I speak in the language [*or the tongue*] of all you;

<sup>19</sup> but in the church I will speak five words in my wit, that also I teach other men, than ten thousand words in tongue [*not understood*].

<sup>20</sup> Brethren, do not ye be made children in wits, but in malice be ye children; but in wits be ye perfect.

<sup>21</sup> For in the law it is written, That in other tongues and other lips I shall speak to this people, and neither so they shall hear me, saith the Lord.

<sup>22</sup> Therefore languages be into token, not to faithful men, but to men out of the faith; but prophecies be not to men out of the faith, but to faithful men.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore if all the church come together into one, and all men speak in tongues, if idiots, either men out of the faith, enter, whether they shall not say, What, be ye mad?

<sup>24</sup> But if all men prophesy, if any unfaithful man or idiot enter, he is convicted of all, he is wisely deemed of all.

<sup>25</sup> For the hid things of his heart be known, and so he shall fall down on the face, and shall worship God, and show verily that God is in you.

<sup>26</sup> What then, brethren? When ye come together, each of you hath a psalm, he hath teaching, he hath apocalypse, [*or revelation*], he hath tongue, he hath expounding [*or interpreting*]; all things be they done to edification.

<sup>27</sup> Whether a man speaketh in tongue, [*be this done*] by two men, either three at the most, and by parts, that one interpret.

<sup>28</sup> But if there be not an interpreter, be he still [*or speak he not*] in the church, and speak he to himself and to God.

<sup>29</sup> Prophets twain or three say, and others wisely deem.

<sup>30</sup> But if anything be showed to a sitter [*or one sitting*], the former be still.

<sup>31</sup> For ye may all prophesy, each by himself, that all men learn, and all admonish.

<sup>32</sup> And the spirits of prophets be subject to prophets;

<sup>33</sup> for why God is not of dissension, but of peace; as I teach in all churches of holy men.

<sup>34</sup> Women in churches be still; for it is not suffered to them to speak, but to be subject, as the law saith.

<sup>35</sup> But if they will anything learn, ask they their husbands at home; for it is foul thing to a woman to speak in the church.

<sup>36</sup> Whether the word of God came forth of you, or to you alone it came?

<sup>37</sup> If any man is seen to be a prophet, or spiritual, know he those things that I write to you, for those [*or they*] be the commandments of the Lord.

<sup>38</sup> And if any man unknoweth, he shall be unknowing.

<sup>39</sup> Therefore, brethren, love ye to prophesy, and do not ye forbid to speak in tongues.

<sup>40</sup> But be all things done honestly, and by due order in you.



## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> Soothly, brethren, I make the gospel known to you, which I have preached to you, which also ye have taken, in which ye stand,

<sup>2</sup> by which also ye shall be saved; by which reason I have preached to you, if ye hold, if ye have not believed idly.

<sup>3</sup> For I betook to you at the beginning [*or in the first*] that thing which also I have received; that Christ was dead for our sins, by the scriptures;

<sup>4</sup> and that he was buried, and that he rose again in the third day, after [*the*] scriptures;

<sup>5</sup> and that he was seen to Cephas, and after these things to eleven;

<sup>6</sup> afterward he was seen to more than five hundred brethren together, of which many live yet, but some be dead;

<sup>7</sup> afterward he was seen to James, and afterward to all the apostles.

<sup>8</sup> And last of all he was seen also to me, as to a dead-born child.

<sup>9</sup> For I am the least of the apostles, that am not worthy to be called apostle, for I pursued the church of God.

<sup>10</sup> But by the grace of God I am that thing that I am; and his grace was not void in me. For I travailed more plenteously than all they; but not I, but the grace of God with me.

<sup>11</sup> But whether I, or they, so we have preached, and so ye have believed.

<sup>12</sup> And if Christ is preached, that he rose again from death, how say some men among you, that the again-rising of dead men is not?

<sup>13</sup> And if the again-rising of dead men is not, neither Christ rose again from death.

<sup>14</sup> And if Christ rose not, our preaching is vain, our faith is vain.

<sup>15</sup> And we be found false witnesses of God, for we have said witnessing against God, that he raised Christ, whom he raised not, if dead men rise not again.

<sup>16</sup> For why if dead men rise not again, neither Christ rose again;

<sup>17</sup> and if Christ rose not again, our faith is vain; and yet ye be in your sins.

<sup>18</sup> And then they that have died [*or slept*] in Christ, have perished.

<sup>19</sup> If in this life only we be hoping in Christ, we be more wretches than all men.

<sup>20</sup> But now Christ hath risen [*or rose*] again from death, the first fruit of dead men;

<sup>21</sup> for death *was* by a man, and by a man *is* again-rising from death.

<sup>22</sup> And as in Adam all men die, so in Christ all men shall be quickened.

<sup>23</sup> But each man in his order; the first fruit [*or first fruits*], Christ, afterward they that be of Christ, that believed in the coming of Christ;

<sup>24</sup> afterward an end, when he shall betake the kingdom to God and to the Father; when he shall void all princehood, and power, and virtue.

<sup>25</sup> But it behooveth him to reign, till he put all his enemies under his feet.

<sup>26</sup> And at the last, death the enemy shall be destroyed;

<sup>27</sup> for he hath made subject all things under his feet. And when he saith, all things be subject to him, without doubt except him that subjected all things to him.

<sup>28</sup> And when all things be subjected to him, then the Son himself shall be subject to him, that made all things subject to him, that God be all things in all things.

<sup>29</sup> Else what shall they do, that be baptized for dead men, if in no wise dead men rise again? whereto be they baptized for them?

<sup>30</sup> And whereto be we in peril every hour?

<sup>31</sup> Each day I die for your glory, brethren, which *glory* I have in Christ Jesus our Lord.

<sup>32</sup> If after man I have fought to beasts, [*or against beasts*], at Ephesus, what profiteth it to me, if dead men rise not again? Eat we, and drink we, for we shall die tomorrow [*or tomorrow forsooth we shall die*].

<sup>33</sup> Do not ye be deceived; for evil speeches, [*or false doctrine*], destroy good conduct [*or corrupt good virtues*].

<sup>34</sup> Awake ye, just men, and do not ye do sin [*or do not ye sin*]; for some men have ignorance of God, but to reverence, *that is, to your shame*, I speak to you.

<sup>35</sup> But some man saith, How shall dead men rise again, or in what manner body shall they come?

<sup>36</sup> [*O!*] Unwise man, that thing that thou sowest, is not quickened, but it die first;

<sup>37</sup> and that thing that thou sowest, thou sowest not the body that is to come, but a naked corn, as of wheat, or of some other *seeds*;

<sup>38</sup> and God giveth to it a body, as he will, and to each of seeds a proper body.

<sup>39</sup> Not each flesh *is* the same flesh, but one *is* of men, another *is* of beasts, another *is* of birds, another *is* of fishes.

40 And *there be* heavenly bodies, and *there be* earthly bodies; but one glory is of heavenly bodies, and another is of earthly [*bodies*].

41 Another clearness is of the sun, another clearness is of the moon, and another clearness is of the stars; and a star diverseth from a star in clearness.

42 And so the again-rising of dead men. It is sown in corruption, it shall rise in uncorruption;

43 it is sown in unnobleness, it shall rise in glory; it is sown in infirmity, it shall rise in virtue;

44 it is sown a beastly body, it shall rise a spiritual body. If there is a beastly body, there is also a spiritual body;

45 as it is written, The first man Adam was made into a soul living, the last Adam into a spirit quickening.

46 But the first is not that [*body*] that is spiritual, but that that is beast-like, afterward that that is spiritual.

47 The first man of earth is earthly; the second man of heaven is heavenly.

48 Such as the earthly man is, such *be* the earthly men; and such as the heavenly man is, such *be* also the heavenly men.

49 Therefore as we have borne the image of the earthly man, bear we also the image of the heavenly *man*.

50 Brethren, I say this thing, that flesh and blood may not wield the king-dom of God, neither corruption shall wield uncorruption [*or incorruption*].

51 Lo! I say to you private [*or a mystery*] of holy things. And all we shall rise again, but not all we shall be changed *to the state of glory*;

52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, in the last trump; for the trump shall sound, and dead men shall rise again, without corruption, and we shall be changed.

53 For it behooveth this corruptible thing to clothe uncorruption [*or incorruption*], and this deadly thing to put away [*or to clothe*] undeadliness.

54 But when this deadly thing shall clothe undeadliness, then shall the word be done [*or fulfilled*], that is written, Death is sopped up in victory.

55 Death, where is thy victory? Death, where is thy prick?

56 But the prick of death is sin; and the virtue of sin is the law.

57 But do we thankings to God, that gave to us victory by our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my dearworthy brethren, be ye steadfast, and unmoveable, being plenteous in work of the Lord, evermore witting that your travail is not idle in the Lord.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> But of the gatherings [*or the collects*] of money that be made into saints, as I *have* ordained in the churches of Galatia, so also do ye

<sup>2</sup> one day of the week. Each of you keep, [*or lay up*], at himself, keeping that that pleaseth to him, that when I come, the gatherings be not made.

<sup>3</sup> And when I shall be present, which men ye approve, I shall send them by epistles to bear your grace into Jerusalem.

<sup>4</sup> That if it be worthy that also I go, they shall go with me.

<sup>5</sup> But I shall come to you, when I shall pass by Macedonia; for why I shall pass by Macedonia.

<sup>6</sup> But peradventure I shall dwell at you, or also dwell the winter; that ye lead me whither ever I shall go.

<sup>7</sup> And I will not now see you in my passing, for I hope to dwell with you a while, if the Lord shall suffer.

<sup>8</sup> But I shall dwell at Ephesus, unto Whitsuntide.

<sup>9</sup> For a great door and an open [*or evident*] is opened to me, and many adversaries.

<sup>10</sup> And if Timothy come, see ye that he be without dread with you, for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore no man despise him; but lead him forth in peace, that he come to me; for I abide him with brethren.

<sup>12</sup> But, brethren, I make known to you of Apollos, that I prayed him much, that he should come to you, with brethren. But it was not his will to come now; but he shall come, when he shall have leisure [*or it shall be able to him*].

<sup>13</sup> Walk ye, and stand ye in the faith; do ye manly, and be ye comforted in the Lord,

<sup>14</sup> and be all your things done in charity.

<sup>15</sup> And, brethren, I beseech you, ye know the house of Stephanas, and of Fortunatus, and Achaicus, for they be the first fruits of Achaia, and into ministry of saints they have ordained themselves;

<sup>16</sup> that also ye be subjects to such, and to each working together and travailling.

<sup>17</sup> For I have joy in the presence of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus; for they [*full*]-filled that thing that failed to you;

<sup>18</sup> for they have refreshed both my spirit and yours. Therefore know ye them, that be such manner *men*.

<sup>19</sup> All the churches of Asia greet you well. Aquila and Priscilla, with their home-church, greet you much in the Lord, at the which also I am harboured.

<sup>20</sup> All brethren greet you well. Greet ye well together in holy kiss.

<sup>21</sup> My greeting by Paul's hand.

<sup>22</sup> If any man loveth not our Lord Jesus Christ, be he cursed, Maranatha, *that is, in the coming of the Lord, or in the day of doom.*

<sup>23</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

<sup>24</sup> My charity be with you all in Christ Jesus our Lord. Amen.

## 2ND CORINTHIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy, brother, to the church of God that is at Corinth, with all saints that be in all Achaia,

<sup>2</sup> grace to you, and peace of God our Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed *be* God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Father of mercies, and God of all comfort,

<sup>4</sup> which comforteth us in all our tribulation, that also we may comfort them, that be in all dis-ease [*or in all pressure*] by the admonishing by which also we be admonished of God.

<sup>5</sup> For as the passions of Christ be plenteous in us, so also by Christ our comfort is plenteous.

<sup>6</sup> And whether we be in tribulation, [*or be troubled, or be pursued*], for your tribulation [*or teaching*] and health, either we be comforted, for your comfort, either we be admonished, for your admonishing and health. Which worketh in you the suffering of the same passions, which also we suffer,

<sup>7</sup> that our hope be firm for you; witting for as ye be fellows of passions, so ye shall be also of comfort.

<sup>8</sup> For, brethren, we will, that ye know of our tribulation, that was done in Asia; for over-measure we were grieved over-might [*or above virtue*], so that it distressed us, yea, to live.

<sup>9</sup> But we in us-selves had answer, [*or certainty*], of death, that we trust not in us, but in God that raiseth dead men.

<sup>10</sup> Which delivered us, and delivereth from so great perils, into whom we hope, also yet he shall deliver,

<sup>11</sup> while also ye help in prayer for us; that of the persons of many faces of that giving that is in us, thankings [*or graces*] be done for us by many men to God.

<sup>12</sup> For our glory is this, the witness-ing of our conscience, that in simple-ness and cleanness of God, and not in fleshly wisdom, but in the grace of God, we lived in this world, but more plenteously to you.

<sup>13</sup> And we write not other things to you, than those that ye have read and know, and I hope that into the end ye shall know,

<sup>14</sup> as also ye have known us a part; for we be your glory, as also ye be ours in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 And in this trusting I would first come to you, that ye should have the second grace,

16 and pass by you into Macedonia, and again from Macedonia come to you, and of you be led into Judea.

17 But when I would this thing, whether I used unsteadfastness, either those things that I think, I think after the flesh, that at me be, it is and it is not? *[or that there be at me, is and is not, or yea and nay?]*

18 But God is true, for our word that was at you, is and is not, is not therein, but is in it, *[or there is not in it yea and nay/there is not in it is and nay, but is, that is truth, is in it].*

19 For why Jesus Christ, the Son of God, which is preached among you by us, by me, and Silvanus, and Timothy, there was not in him, is and is not, but is was in him *[or there was not in him yea and nay, but is, or yea, was in him/but in him was is].*

20 For why how many ever be promises of God, in that is, *be fulfilled, [or in him is, that is, they be fulfilled in him].* And therefore by him we say Amen to God, to our glory.

21 Soothly it is God that confirmeth us with you in Christ, and which anointed us,

22 and which marked us, and gave earnest *[or a wed]* of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 For I call God to witness against my soul, that I sparing you came not over to Corinth;

24 not that we be lords of your faith, but we be helpers of your joy; for through belief ye stand.

## CHAPTER 2

1 And I ordained this *[same]* thing at me, that I should not come again in heaviness *[or in sorrow]* to you.

2 For if I make you sorry, *[or heavy]*, who is he that gladdeth me, but he that is sorrowful of me?

3 And this same thing I wrote to you, that when I come, I have not sorrow on sorrow, of the which it behooved me to have joy. And I trust in you all, that my joy is of all you *[or of you all].*

4 For of much tribulation and anguish of heart I wrote to you by many tears, not that ye be sorry, but that ye know what charity I have more plenteously in you.

5 For if any man hath made me sorrowful, he hath not made me sorrowful but a part *[or but in part]*, that I charge, *[or dis-ease]*, not you all.

6 This blaming that is made of many, sufficeth to him, that is such one *[or that is such a manner man];*

<sup>7</sup> so that on the contrary ye rather forgive and comfort, lest peradventure he that is such a manner *man*, be swallowed up, [*or be sopped up, or despair*], by more great heaviness.

<sup>8</sup> For which thing I beseech you, that ye confirm charity into him.

<sup>9</sup> For why therefore I wrote this, that I know your proof, whether in all things ye be obedient.

<sup>10</sup> For to whom ye have forgiven anything, also I have forgiven. For I, that that I forgave, if I forgave anything, *have forgiven* for you in the person of Christ,

<sup>11</sup> that we be not deceived of Satan; for we know his thoughts.

<sup>12</sup> But when I was come to Troas for the gospel of Christ, and a door was opened to me in the Lord,

<sup>13</sup> I had not rest to my spirit, for I found not my brother Titus, but I said to them farewell, and I passed into Macedonia.

<sup>14</sup> And I do thankings to God, that evermore maketh us to have victory in Christ Jesus, and showeth by us the odour, [*or savour, or sweetness*], of his knowing in each place;

<sup>15</sup> for we be the good odour, [*or savour*], of Christ to God, among these that be made safe, and among these that perish.

<sup>16</sup> To others soothly, [*we be*] odour of death into death, but to the others *we be* odour of life into life. And to these things who is so able?

<sup>17</sup> For we be not as [*full*] many, that do adultery by the word of God [*or adulterating the word of God*], but we speak of cleanness as of God, before God in Christ.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Begin we therefore again to praise us-selves? or whether we need, as some men, epistles [*or letters*] of praising to you, or of you?

<sup>2</sup> Ye be our epistle, written in our hearts, which is known and read of all men,

<sup>3</sup> and [*ye be*] made open, for ye be the epistle of Christ ministered of us, and written, not with ink, but by the Spirit of the living God; not in stone tables, but in fleshly tables of heart.

<sup>4</sup> For we have such trust by Christ to God;

<sup>5</sup> not that we be sufficient to think anything of us-*[selves]*, as of us, but our sufficiency is of God.

<sup>6</sup> Which also made us able ministers of the new testament, not by letter, but by Spirit; for the letter slayeth, but the Spirit quickeneth.



<sup>7</sup> And if the ministration of death written by letter in stones was in glory, so that the children of Israel might not behold into the face of Moses, for the glory of his face, which [*glory*] is voided,

<sup>8</sup> how shall not the ministration of the Spirit be more in glory?

<sup>9</sup> For if the ministration of condemnation was in glory, much more the ministration of rightwiseness is plenteous in glory.

<sup>10</sup> For neither that that was clear was glorified in this part for the excellent glory;

<sup>11</sup> and if that that is voided was by glory, much more that that dwelleth still is in glory.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore we that have such hope, use much trust;

<sup>13</sup> and not as Moses laid [*or put*] a veil on his face, that the children of Israel should not behold into his face, which *veil* is voided.

<sup>14</sup> But the wits of them be astonied; for into this day the same veil in [*the*] reading of the old testament, dwelleth not showed, for it is voided in Christ,

<sup>15</sup> but into this day, when Moses is read, the veil is put on their hearts.

<sup>16</sup> But when Israel shall be converted to God, the veil shall be done away.

<sup>17</sup> And the Spirit is the Lord; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. [*Forsooth the Lord is a Spirit; forsooth where is the Spirit of God, there is liberty.*]

<sup>18</sup> And all we that with open face see the glory of the Lord, be transformed into the same image, from clearness into clearness, as of the Spirit of the Lord.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore we that have this administration, [*or office*], after this that we have gotten mercy, fail we not,

<sup>2</sup> but do we away the privy things of shame, not walking in subtle guile, neither doing adultery by the word of God [*or neither adulterating the word of God*], but in showing of the truth commending us-selves to each conscience of men before God.

<sup>3</sup> For if also our gospel is covered, *or is hid*, in these that perish it is covered;

<sup>4</sup> in which [*the*] god of this world, *that is, the devil*, hath blinded the souls of unfaithful men, that the enlightening [*or the lighting*] of the gospel of the glory of Christ, which is the image of God, shine not.

<sup>5</sup> But we preach not us-selves, but our Lord Jesus Christ [*or but Jesus Christ our Lord*]; and us your servants by Jesus.

<sup>6</sup> For God, that said [*the*] light to shine of darkneses, he hath given light in our hearts, to the enlightening [*or the illumining*] of the science of the clearness of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

<sup>7</sup> And we have this treasure in brittle vessels, that the worthiness [*or the highness*] be of God's virtue, and not of us.

<sup>8</sup> In all things we suffer tribulation, but we be not anguished, *or annoyed*; we be made poor, but we lack nothing [*or we be not destitute*];

<sup>9</sup> we suffer persecution, but we be not forsaken; we be made low, but we be not confounded; we be cast down, but we perish not.

<sup>10</sup> And evermore we bear about the slaying [*or the mortifying*] of Jesus in our body, that also the life of Jesus be showed in our bodies.

<sup>11</sup> For evermore we that live, be taken into death, for Jesus, that the life of Jesus be showed in our deadly flesh.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore death worketh in us, but life in you.

<sup>13</sup> And we have the same spirit of faith, as it is written, I have believed, wherefore I have spoken; and we believe, wherefore also we speak;

<sup>14</sup> witting that he that raised Jesus, shall raise up also us with Jesus, and shall ordain [*us*] with you.

<sup>15</sup> And all things [*be done*] for you, that a plenteous grace by many thankings be plenteous into the glory of God. [*Soothly all things be done for you, that grace being plenteous by many in doing of thanks be plenteous into glory of God.*]

<sup>16</sup> For which thing we fail not, for though our outer man be corrupted; nevertheless the inner man is renewed from day to day.

<sup>17</sup> But that light, [*or easy*], thing of our tribulation that lasteth now, but as it were by a moment, worketh in us overmeasure an everlasting burden [*or an everlasting weight*] into the highness of glory;

<sup>18</sup> while that we behold not those things that be seen, but those [*things*] that be not seen. For those things that be seen, be but during for a short time [*or temporal*]; but those things that be not seen, be everlasting [*or eternal*].

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> And we know, that if our earthly house of this dwelling be dissolved, that we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, ever-lasting in heavens.

<sup>2</sup> For why in this thing we mourn, coveting to be clothed above with our dwelling, which is of heaven;

<sup>3</sup> if nevertheless we be found clothed, and not naked.

<sup>4</sup> For why we that be in this tabernacle, sorrow within, and be heavied [*or be grieved*], for that we will not be despoiled, but be clothed above; that that thing that is deadly, be sopped up of life.

<sup>5</sup> But who is it that maketh us into this same thing? God, that gave to us the earnest, *either wed*, of the Spirit. [*Forsooth he that maketh us into this same thing, is God, that gave to us the earnest, or a wed, of Spirit.*]

<sup>6</sup> Therefore we be hardy always, and know that the while we be in this body, we go in pilgrimage from the Lord;

<sup>7</sup> for we walk by faith, and not by clear sight.

<sup>8</sup> But we be hardy, and have good will, more to be in pilgrimage from the body, and to be present to God.

<sup>9</sup> And therefore we strive, whether absent, whether present, to please him.

<sup>10</sup> For it behooveth us all to be showed before the throne of Christ, that every man tell [*or receive*] the proper things of the body, as he hath done, either good, either evil.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore we witting the dread of the Lord, counsel men, for to God we be open; and I hope, that we be open also in your consciences.

<sup>12</sup> We commend not us-selves again to you, but we give to you occasion to have glory for us, that ye have [*understanding*] to them that glory in the face, and not in the heart.

<sup>13</sup> For either we by mind [*or by reason*] pass, [*it is*] to God, either we be sober, [*it is*] to you.

<sup>14</sup> For the charity of Christ driveth us; guessing [*or deeming*] this thing, that if one died for all, then all were dead.

<sup>15</sup> And Christ died for all, that they that live, live not now to themselves, but to him that died for them, and rose again.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore we from this time know no man after the flesh; though we known [*or knew*] Christ after the flesh, but now we know not.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore if any new creature is in Christ, the old things be passed. Lo! all things be made new,

<sup>18</sup> and all things be of God, which reconciled us to him by Christ, and gave to us the service [*or the ministry*] of reconciling.

<sup>19</sup> And [*for*] God was in Christ, reconciling to him the world, not reckoning to them their guilts, and putted in us the word of reconciling.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore we use message for Christ, as if God admonisheth by us; we beseech you for Christ, be ye reconciled to God.

<sup>21</sup> God the Father made him sin for us, which knew not sin, that we should be made *[the]* rightwiseness of God in him.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> But we helping *[you in work and word]* admonish *[you]*, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

<sup>2</sup> For he saith, In time well-pleasing I have heard thee, and in the day of health, I have helped thee. Lo! now a time acceptable, lo! now a day of health.

<sup>3</sup> Give we to no man any offence, *[or hurting]*, that our service *[or ministry]* be not reprovèd;

<sup>4</sup> but in all things give we us-selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in tribulations, in needs, in anguishes,

<sup>5</sup> in beatings, *[or scourgings]*, in prisons, in dissensions within, in travails, in wakings, in fastings,

<sup>6</sup> in chastity, in knowing *[or in science]*, in long abiding, in sweetness, in the Holy Ghost, in charity not feigned,

<sup>7</sup> in the word of truth, in the virtue of God; by armours or arms of rightwiseness on the right half and on the left half;

<sup>8</sup> by glory and unnobleness; by evil fame and good fame; as deceivers, and true men;

<sup>9</sup> as they that be unknown and known; as men dying, and lo! we live; as chastised, and not made dead;

<sup>10</sup> as sorrowful, and evermore joying *[or but evermore joying]*; as having need, but making many men rich; as nothing having, and wielding all things.

<sup>11</sup> A! ye Corinthians, our mouth is open to you, our heart is enlarged;

<sup>12</sup> ye be not anguished in us, but ye be anguished in your inwardnesses *[or in your entrails]*.

<sup>13</sup> And I say as to sons, ye that have the same reward, be ye enlarged.

<sup>14</sup> Do not ye bear the yoke with unfaithful men. For what parting, *[or communing]*, of rightwiseness with wickedness? or what fellowship of light to darknesses?

<sup>15</sup> and what according of Christ to Belial? or what part of a faithful *[man]* with the unfaithful, *[or heathen]*?

<sup>16</sup> and what consent to the temple of God with maumets? *[or idols?]* And ye be the temple of the living God, as the Lord saith, For I shall dwell in them, and I shall walk among them; and I shall be *[the]* God of them, and they shall be a people to me.

<sup>17</sup> For which thing go ye out of the middle of them, and be ye separated, saith the Lord, and touch not unclean thing; and I shall receive you,

<sup>18</sup> and I shall be to you into a Father, and ye shall be to me into sons and daughters, saith the Lord almighty.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, most dearworthy *brethren*, we that have these promises, cleanse we us from all filth of the flesh and of the spirit, doing holiness in the dread of God.

<sup>2</sup> Take ye us; we have hurt no man, we have impaired [*or corrupted*] no man, we have beguiled no man.

<sup>3</sup> I say not to your condemning; for I said before, that ye be in our hearts, to die together and to live together.

<sup>4</sup> Much trust is to me with you, much glorying is to me for you. I am [*full*]-filled with comfort, I am plenteous [*or I abound*] in joy in all our tribulation.

<sup>5</sup> For when we were come to Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we suffered all tribulation; without-forth fightings, and dreads within.

<sup>6</sup> But God that comforteth meek men, comforted us in the coming of Titus.

<sup>7</sup> And not only in the coming of him, but also in the comfort by which he was comforted in you, telling to us your desire, your weeping, your love for me, so that I joyed more.

<sup>8</sup> For though I made you sorry, in an epistle, it rueth me not; though it rued, [*I*] seeing that though that epistle made you sorry at an hour,

<sup>9</sup> now I have joy; not for ye were made sorrowful, but for ye were made sorrowful to penance. For why ye be made sorry after God, that in nothing ye suffer impairment of us.

<sup>10</sup> For the sorrow that is after God, worketh penance into steadfast health; but sorrow of the world worketh death.

<sup>11</sup> For lo! this same thing, that ye be sorrowful after God, how much busyness it worketh in you; but defending, but indignation, but dread, but desire, but love, but vengeance. In all things ye have given yourselves to be undefouled in the cause.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore though I wrote to you, *I wrote* not for him that did the injury, neither for him that suffered, but to show our busyness, which we have for you before God.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore we be comforted, but in your comfort [*or in our comfort*] more plenteously we joyed more on the joy of Titus, for his spirit is fulfilled of all you.

<sup>14</sup> And if I gloried anything with him of you, I am not confounded, [*or shamed*]; but as we have spoken to you all things [*in truth*], so also our glory that was at Titus, is made truth.

<sup>15</sup> And the inwardness of him be more plenteously in you, which hath in mind the obedience of you all, how with dread and trembling ye received him.

<sup>16</sup> I have joy, that in all things I trust in you.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But, brethren, we make known to you the grace of God, that is given in the churches of Macedonia,

<sup>2</sup> that in much assaying of tribulation, the plenty [*or the abundance*] of the joy of them was, and the highest poverty of them was plenteous into the riches of the simpleness of them.

<sup>3</sup> For I bear witnessing to them, after might, [*or after power*], and above might they were willful,

<sup>4</sup> with much admonishing beseech-ing us the grace and the communing of ministering [*or of the ministry*] that is made to holy men.

<sup>5</sup> And not as we hoped, but they gave themselves first to the Lord, afterward to us by the will of God.

<sup>6</sup> So that we prayed Titus, that as he began, so also he perform in you this grace.

<sup>7</sup> But as ye abound in all things, in faith, and word, and knowing [*or science*], and all busyness, moreover and in your charity into us, that also in this grace ye abound.

<sup>8</sup> I say not as commanding, but by the busyness of other men proving also the good wit of your charity.

<sup>9</sup> And ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, for he was made needy for you, when he was rich, that ye should be made rich by his neediness.

<sup>10</sup> And I give counsel in this thing; for this is profitable to you, that not only have begun to do, but also ye began to have will from the former year.

<sup>11</sup> But now perform ye in deed, that as the discretion of will is ready [*to desire good*], so be it also of perform-ing of that that ye have.

<sup>12</sup> For if the will be ready, it is accepted after that that it hath, not after that that it hath not.

<sup>13</sup> And not that it be remission, [*or idleness, or sloth*], to other men, and to you tribulation;

<sup>14</sup> but of evenness in the present time your abundance fulfill the need of them, that also the abundance of them be a fulfilling of your need, that evenness be made;

<sup>15</sup> as it is written, He that gathered much, was not increased, and he that *gathered* little, had not less.

<sup>16</sup> And I do thankings to God, that gave the same busyness for you in the heart of Titus,

<sup>17</sup> for he received exhortation; but when he was busier, by his will he went forth to you.

<sup>18</sup> And we sent with him a brother, whose praising is in the gospel by all churches.

<sup>19</sup> And not only praised, but also he is ordained of churches the fellow of our pilgrimage into this grace, that is administered of us, to the glory of the Lord, and to our ordained will;

<sup>20</sup> eschewing this thing, that no man blame us in this plenty, that is administered of us, to the glory of the Lord.

<sup>21</sup> For we purvey good things, not only before God, but also before all men.

<sup>22</sup> For we sent with them also our brother, whom we have proved in many things oft, that he was busy, but now much busier, for much trust in you,

<sup>23</sup> either for Titus, that is my fellow and helper in you, either for our brethren, apostles of the churches of the glory of Christ.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore show ye to them in the face of churches, that showing that is of your charity, and of our glory for you.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> For of the ministry that is made to holy men, it is to me of plenty to write to you.

<sup>2</sup> For I know your *[ready]* will, for the which I have glory of you with Macedonians, for also Achaia is ready from a year passed, and your love hath stirred full many.

<sup>3</sup> And we have sent brethren, that this thing that we glory of you, be not voided in this part, that as I said, ye be ready.

<sup>4</sup> Lest when Macedonians come with me, and find you unready, we be shamed, that we say you not or that we saw you not, in this substance.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore I guessed necessary to pray brethren, that they come before to you, and make ready this promised blessing to be ready, so as blessing, and not as avarice.

<sup>6</sup> For I say this thing, he that soweth scarcely, shall also reap scarcely; and he that soweth in blessings, shall reap also of blessings.

<sup>7</sup> Each man as he casted in his heart, not of heaviness, or of need; for God loveth a glad giver.

<sup>8</sup> And God is mighty to make all grace abound in you, that ye in all things evermore have all sufficiency, and abound into all good work;

<sup>9</sup> as it is written, He dealt abroad, he gave to poor men, his righteousness dwelleth without end.

<sup>10</sup> And he that ministereth seed to the sower, shall give also bread to eat, and he shall multiply your seed, and make much the increasings of fruits of your righteousness;

<sup>11</sup> that in all things ye made rich wax plenteous [*or abound*] into all simpleness, which worketh by us doing of thankings to God.

<sup>12</sup> For the ministry of this office not only filleth those things that fail to holy men, but also multiplieth many thankings to God,

<sup>13</sup> by the proving of this ministry, which glorify God in the obedience of your acknowledging in the gospel of Christ, and in simpleness of communication into them and into all [*others*],

<sup>14</sup> and in the beseeching of them for you, that desire you for the excellent grace of God in you.

<sup>15</sup> I do thankings to God of the gift of him, that may not be told.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> And I myself, Paul, beseech you, by the mildness and softness, [*or patience*], of Christ, which in the face am meek among you, and I absent trust in you.

<sup>2</sup> For I pray you, that lest I present be not bold [*or not hardy*] by the trust, in which I am guessed to be bold [*or hardy*] into some, that deem us, as if we wander after the flesh.

<sup>3</sup> For we walking in the flesh, fight not after the flesh.

<sup>4</sup> For the arms or armours of our knighthood be not fleshly, but mighty by God to the destruction of strengths [*or of wardings*].

<sup>5</sup> And we destroy counsels, and all highness that higheth [*or raised*] itself against the science of God, and drive into captivity all understanding into the service of Christ.

<sup>6</sup> And we have ready to avenge all unobedience, when your obedience shall be [*ful*] filled.

<sup>7</sup> See ye the things that be after the face. If any man trusteth to himself, that he is of Christ, think he this thing again with himself, for as he is Christ's, so also we.

<sup>8</sup> For if I shall glory, anything more of our power, which the Lord gave to us into edifying, and not into your destruction, I shall not be shamed.



<sup>9</sup> But that I be not guessed as to fear you by epistles,

<sup>10</sup> for they say, That epistles be grievous [*or be heavy*] and strong, but the presence of the body is feeble, and the word worthy to be despised [*or it is contemptible*].

<sup>11</sup> He that is such one, think this, for such as we absent be in word by epistles, such we *be* present in deed.

<sup>12</sup> For we dare not put us among, or comparison us to some men, that commend themselves; but we measure us in us-selves, and comparison us-selves to us.

<sup>13</sup> For we shall not have glory over-measure, but by the measure of the rule which God measured to us, the measure that stretcheth [*till*] to you.

<sup>14</sup> For we overstretch not forth us, as not stretching to you. For to you we came in the gospel of Christ,

<sup>15</sup> not glorying over-measure in other men's travails. For we have hope of your faith that waxeth in you, to be magnified by our rule in abundance,

<sup>16</sup> also to preach into those things that be beyond you, not to have glory in other man's rule, in these things that be made ready.

<sup>17</sup> He that glorieth, have glory in the Lord.

<sup>18</sup> For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom God commendeth.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> I would that ye would suffer a little thing of mine un wisdom, but also support ye me [*or bear me up*].

<sup>2</sup> For I love you by the love of God; for I have espoused you to one husband, to yield a chaste virgin to Christ, [*or to give you, a chaste virgin, to one man, Christ*].

<sup>3</sup> But I dread, lest as the serpent deceived Eve with his subtle fraud, so your wits be corrupted, and fallen down from the simpleness that is in Christ.

<sup>4</sup> For if he that cometh, preacheth another Christ, whom we preached not, or if ye take another spirit, whom ye took not [*or whom ye received not*], or another gospel, which ye received not, rightly ye should suffer.

<sup>5</sup> For I ween that I have done nothing less than the great apostles.

<sup>6</sup> For though I be unlearned in word, but not in knowing [*or in science*]. For in all things I am open [*or I am showed, or made known*], to you.

<sup>7</sup> Or whether I have done sin, meeking, [*or making low*], myself, that ye be enhanced, for freely I preached to you the gospel of God?

<sup>8</sup> I made naked, [*or I spoiled, or I took gifts of*], other churches, and I took wages to your service.

<sup>9</sup> And when I was among you, and had need, I was chargeous to no man; for brethren that came from Macedonia, fulfilled [*or supplied*] that that failed to me. And in all things I have kept [*me*], and shall keep me without charge to you.

<sup>10</sup> The truth of Christ is in me; for this glory shall not be broken in me in the countries [*or in the regions*] of Achaia.

<sup>11</sup> Why? for I love not you? God knoweth.

<sup>12</sup> For that that I do, and that I shall do, is that I cut away the occasion of them that will occasion, that in the thing, in which they glory, they be found [*such*] as we.

<sup>13</sup> For such false apostles be treach-erous, [*or guileful*], workmen, and transfigure them into apostles of Christ.

<sup>14</sup> And no wonder, for Satan himself transfigureth him into an angel of light.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore it is not great, if his ministers be transfigured as the ministers of rightwiseness, whose end shall be after their works.

<sup>16</sup> Again I say, lest any man guess [*or deem*] me, to be unwise; else take ye me as unwise, that also I have glory a little what.

<sup>17</sup> That that I speak, I speak not after God, but as in un wisdom, in this substance of glory.

<sup>18</sup> For many men glory after the flesh, and I shall glory.

<sup>19</sup> For ye suffer gladly unwise men, when ye yourselves be wise.

<sup>20</sup> For ye suffer, if any man driveth you into servage, if any man devour-eth, if any man taketh, if any man is enhanced [*by pride*], if any man smiteth you on the face.

<sup>21</sup> By unnobleness I say, as if we were sick in this part. In what thing any man dare, in un wisdom I say, and I dare.

<sup>22</sup> They be Hebrews, and I; they be Israelites, and I; they be the seed of Abraham, and I;

<sup>23</sup> they be the ministers of Christ, and I. As less wise I say, I more; in full many travails, in prisons more plente-ously, in wounds above-manner, [*or over-measure*], in deaths oft times.

<sup>24</sup> I received of the Jews five times forty *strokes* one less;

<sup>25</sup> thrice I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned, thrice I was at ship-break, a night and a day I was in the deepness of the sea;

<sup>26</sup> in ways oft, in perils of floods, in perils of thieves, in perils of kin, in perils of heathen men, in perils in [*the*] city, in perils in desert, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

<sup>27</sup> in travail and neediness, in many wakings, in hunger, in thirst, in many fastings, in cold and nakedness.

<sup>28</sup> Without those things that be with-outforth, mine each day's travailing [*for studying*] is the busyness of all churches.

<sup>29</sup> Who is sick, and I am not sick? who is caused to stumble, and I am not burnt?

<sup>30</sup> If it behooveth to glory, I shall glory in *those things* that be of mine infirmity, [*for frailty*].

<sup>31</sup> God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, that is blessed into worlds, knoweth that I lie not.

<sup>32</sup> The provost of Damascus, of the king of the folk Aretas, [*or of the king of the folk of Aretas*], kept the city of Damascenes to take me;

<sup>33</sup> and by a window in a basket I was let down by the wall, and so I escaped his hands.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> If it behooveth to have glory, it speedeth not; but I shall come to the visions and the revelations of the Lord.

<sup>2</sup> I know a man in Christ that before fourteen years; whether in body, whether out of body, I know not, God knoweth; that such a man was ravished unto the third heaven.

<sup>3</sup> And I know such a man; whether in body, or out of body, I know not, God knoweth;

<sup>4</sup> that he was ravished into paradise, and heard privy words, which it is not leaveful to a man to speak.

<sup>5</sup> For such manner things I shall glory; but for me nothing, but in mine infirmities.

<sup>6</sup> For if I shall desire to glory, I shall not be unwise, for I shall say truth; but I spare, lest any man guess me over that thing that he seeth in me, or heareth anything of me.

<sup>7</sup> And lest the greatness of revelations enhance me, in *pride*, the prick of my flesh, an angel of Satan, is given to me, that he buffet me.

<sup>8</sup> For which thing thrice I prayed the Lord, that it should go away from me.

<sup>9</sup> And he said to me, My grace sufficeth to thee; for virtue is perfectly made in infirmity. Therefore gladly I shall glory in mine infirmities, that the virtue of Christ dwell in me.

<sup>10</sup> For which thing I am pleased in mine infirmities, in despisings, [*or reprovings*], in needs, in persecutions, in anguishes, for Christ; for when I am sick, then I am mighty.

<sup>11</sup> I am made unwitting, ye constrained me. For I ought to be commended of you; for I did nothing less than they that be apostles over-measure. Though I am nought,

<sup>12</sup> nevertheless the signs of mine apostlehood be made on you, in all patience, and signs, and great wonders, and virtues.

<sup>13</sup> And what is it, that ye had less than other churches, [*no*] but that I myself grieved you not, [*betaking of you*]? Forgive ye to me this wrong.

<sup>14</sup> Lo! this third time I am ready to come to you, and I shall not be grievous to you; for I seek not those things that be yours, but you. For neither sons owe to [*make*] treasure to father and mother, but the father and mother to the sons.

<sup>15</sup> For I shall give most willfully, and I myself shall be given over for your souls; though I more love you, and be less loved.

<sup>16</sup> But be it; I grieved not you, but when I was subtle [*or wily*], I took you with guile.

<sup>17</sup> Whether I deceived you by any of them, which I sent to you?

<sup>18</sup> I prayed Titus, and I sent with him a brother. Whether Titus beguiled you? whether we went not in the same spirit? whether not in the same steps?

<sup>19</sup> Sometime ye ween, that we shall excuse us with you. Before God in Christ we speak; and, most dear brethren, all things for your edifying.

<sup>20</sup> But I dread, lest when I come, I shall not find you such as I will, and I shall be found of you such as ye will not; lest peradventure strivings, envies, indignations, dissensions and detractions, privy speeches of discord, swellings *by pride*, debates be among you;

<sup>21</sup> *and* lest again when I come, God make me low [*or make me humble*] with you, and I bewail many of them, that before sinned, and did not penance on the uncleanness, and fornication, and unchastity, that they have done.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> Lo! this third time I come to you, and in the mouth of two or of three witnesses every word shall stand.

<sup>2</sup> I said before, and say before, as present twice, and now absent, to them that before have sinned, and to all others; for if I come again, I shall not spare.

<sup>3</sup> Whether ye seek the proof [*or assaying*] of that Christ, that speaketh in me, which is not feeble in you, [*but is mighty in you*]?

<sup>4</sup> For though he was crucified of infirmity, but he liveth of the virtue of God. For also we be sick in him, but we shall live with him of the virtue of God in us.

<sup>5</sup> Assay yourselves, if ye be in the faith; ye yourselves prove. Whether ye know not yourselves, for Christ Jesus is in you? but in hap ye be reprobable.

<sup>6</sup> But I hope, that ye know, that we be not reprobable.

<sup>7</sup> And we pray the Lord, that ye do nothing of evil; not that we seem proved, but that ye do that that is good, and that we be as reprobable.

<sup>8</sup> For we may do nothing against truth, but, for the truth.

<sup>9</sup> For we joy, when we be sick, but ye be mighty; and we pray this thing, your perfection.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore I absent write these things, that I present do not harder, by the power, which the Lord gave to me into edification, and not into *your* destruction.

<sup>11</sup> Brethren, henceforward joy ye, be ye perfect, excite ye [*or and teach ye*]; understand ye the same thing; have ye peace, and God of peace and of love shall be with you.

<sup>12</sup> Greet ye well together in holy kiss.

<sup>13</sup> All holy men greet you well.

<sup>14</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the charity of God, and the communing of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

## GALATIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul the apostle, not of men, nor by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, that raised him from death,

<sup>2</sup> and all the brethren that be with me, to the churches of Galatia,

<sup>3</sup> grace to you and peace of God the Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>4</sup> that gave himself for our sins, to deliver us from the present wicked world, by the will of God and our Father,

<sup>5</sup> to whom is honour and glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>6</sup> I wonder, that so soon ye be thus moved from him that called you into the grace of Christ, into another evangel [*or another gospel*];

<sup>7</sup> which is not another, but that there be some that trouble you, and will mis-turn the evangel of Christ.

<sup>8</sup> But though we, or an angel of heaven, preached to you, besides that that we have preached to you, be he accursed.

<sup>9</sup> As I have said before, and now again I say, if any *man* preach to you besides that that ye have received, be he accursed [*or cursed be he*].

<sup>10</sup> For now whether counsel I men, or God? or whether I seek to please men? If I pleased yet men, I were not Christ's servant.

<sup>11</sup> For, brethren, I make known to you the evangel [*or the gospel*], that was preached of me, for it is not by man;

<sup>12</sup> nor I took it of man, nor learned, but by [*the*] revelation of Jesus Christ.

<sup>13</sup> For ye have heard my conversation sometime in the Jewry, that I pursued surpassingly, [*or over-manner, or over-measure*], the church of God, and fought against it.

<sup>14</sup> And I profited in the Jewry above many of mine even-elders in my kindred, and was more abundantly a follower [*or a lover*] of my fathers' traditions.

<sup>15</sup> But when it pleased him, that parted me from my mother's womb, and called by his grace,

<sup>16</sup> to show his Son in me, that I should preach him among the heathen, anon I drew me not to flesh and blood;

<sup>17</sup> nor I came to Jerusalem to the apostles, that were before me, but I went into Arabia, and again I turned again into Damascus.

<sup>18</sup> And since three years after I came to Jerusalem [*or Afterward after three years I came to Jerusalem*], to see Peter, and I dwelled with him fifteen days;

<sup>19</sup> but I saw none other of the apostles, but James, *our* Lord's brother.

<sup>20</sup> And these things which I write to you, lo! before God I lie not.

<sup>21</sup> Afterward I came into the coasts of Syria and Cilicia.

<sup>22</sup> But I was unknown by face to the churches of Judea, that were in Christ;

<sup>23</sup> and they had only an hearing, that he that pursued us sometime, preacheth now the faith, against which he fought sometime;

<sup>24</sup> and in me they glorified God.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And since fourteen years after [*or Afterward after fourteen years*], again I went up to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took with me Titus.

<sup>2</sup> I went up by revelation, and spake with them the evangel [*or the gospel*], which I preach among the heathen; and by themselves to these that seemed to be somewhat, lest I run [*or lest peradventure I should run*], or had run in vain.

<sup>3</sup> And neither Titus, that had been with me, while he was heathen, was compelled to be circumcised;

<sup>4</sup> but for false brethren that were brought in, which had [*privily*] entered to espy our freedom [*or our liberty*], which we have in Jesus Christ, to bring [*or to drive*] us into servage.

<sup>5</sup> But we gave no place to subjection, that the truth of the gospel should dwell with you.

<sup>6</sup> But of these that seemed to be somewhat; which they were some-time, it pertaineth not to me, for God taketh not the person of man; for they that seemed to be somewhat, gave me nothing.

<sup>7</sup> But on the contrary, when they had seen, that the evangel of prepuce was given to me [*or that the gospel of heathen men is betaken to me*], as the evangel of circumcision was given to Peter;

<sup>8</sup> for he that wrought to Peter in apostlehood of circumcision, wrought also to me among the heathen;

<sup>9</sup> and when they had known the grace of God, that was given to me, James, and Peter [*or Cephas*], and John, which were seen to be the pillars, they gave the right hand of fellowship to me and to Barnabas, that we [*preach*] among the heathen, and they into the circumcision;

<sup>10</sup> only that we had mind of, [*or that we should be mindful of*], poor men, the which thing I was full busy to do.

<sup>11</sup> But when Peter was come to Antioch, I against-stood him in the face, for he was worthy to be reprov'd.

<sup>12</sup> For before that there came some men from James [*or before that some came from James*], he ate with heathen men; but when they were come, he withdrew, and departed him, dreading them that were of circumcision.

<sup>13</sup> And the other Jews assented [*or consented*] to his feigning, so that Barnabas was drawn of them into that feigning.

<sup>14</sup> But when I saw, that they walked not rightly to the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter [*or to Cephas*] before all men, If thou, that art a Jew, livest heathen-like, and not Jew-like, how constrainest thou heathen men to become Jews?

<sup>15</sup> We Jews of kind, and not sinful men of the heathen,

<sup>16</sup> know that a man is not justified of the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ; and we believe in Jesus Christ, that we be justified of [*or by*] the faith of Christ, and not of the works of the law. Wherefore of the works of the law each flesh shall not be justified.

<sup>17</sup> And if we seek to be justified in Christ, we ourselves be found sinful men [*or to be sinners*], whether Christ be minister of sin? God forbid.

<sup>18</sup> And if I build again things that I have destroyed, I make myself a trespasser.

<sup>19</sup> For by the law I am dead to the law, [*For by the law I am dead to the law, that I live to God;*]

<sup>20</sup> and I am fixed to the cross, that I live to God with Christ. And now live not I, but Christ liveth in me. But that I live now in flesh, I live in the faith of God's Son, that loved me, and gave himself for me. [*with Christ I am fixed to the cross. Forsooth I live now, not I, but Christ liveth in me. Forsooth that I live now in flesh, I live in the faith of God's son, the which loved me, and betook himself for me.*]

<sup>21</sup> I cast not away the grace of God; for if rightwiseness be through [*or is by*] law, then Christ died without cause.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> O! unwitting Galatians, before whose eyes Jesus Christ is exiled, [*or O! ye witless men of Galatia, before whose eyes Jesus Christ is damned or condemned*], and is crucified in you, who hath deceived you, that ye obey not to truth?

<sup>2</sup> This only I desire to learn of you, whether ye have received the Spirit of the works of the law, or of hearing of belief?

<sup>3</sup> So ye be fools, that when ye have begun in Spirit, [*now*] ye be ended in flesh.

<sup>4</sup> So great things [*or So many things*] ye have suffered without cause, if it be without cause.



<sup>5</sup> He that giveth to you [*the*] Spirit, and worketh virtues in you, whether of [*the*] works of the law, or of hearing of belief? [*or of faith?*]

<sup>6</sup> As it is written, Abraham believed to God, and it was reckoned to him to rightwiseness.

<sup>7</sup> And therefore know ye, that these that be of belief [*or they that be of faith*], be the sons of Abraham.

<sup>8</sup> And the scripture seeing afar, that God justifieth the heathen of belief, [*or Forsooth the scripture purveying, for God justifieth of faith heathen men*], told before to Abraham, That in thee all the heathen [*or all folks*] shall be blessed.

<sup>9</sup> And therefore these that be of belief, [*or they that be of faith*], shall be blessed with faithful Abraham.

<sup>10</sup> For all that be of the works of the law, be under curse; for it is written, Each man is cursed, that abideth not [*or that dwelleth not*] in all things that be written in the book of the law, to do those things.

<sup>11</sup> And that no man is justified in the law before God, it is open, for a rightful man liveth of belief. [*Forsooth for no man is justified in the law with God, it is known, for a rightful man liveth by faith.*]

<sup>12</sup> But the law is not of belief, but he that doeth those things of the law, shall live in them.

<sup>13</sup> But Christ again-bought us [*or delivered us*] from the curse of the law, and was made accursed for us; for it is written, Each man is cursed that hangeth in the tree;

<sup>14</sup> that among the heathen the blessing of Abraham were made in Jesus Christ, that we receive the promise of Spirit through belief. [*that the blessing of Abraham in heathen men should be made in Christ Jesus, that we take the promise of Spirit by faith.*]

<sup>15</sup> Brethren, I say after man, no man despiseth the testament of a man that is confirmed, or ordaineth above [*other thing*].

<sup>16</sup> The promises were said to Abraham and to his seed; he saith not, In [*the*] seeds, as in many, but as in one, And to thy seed, that is, Christ.

<sup>17</sup> But I say, this testament is confirmed of God; the law that was made after four hundred and thirty years, maketh not the testament vain to void away the promise [*or maketh not void for to do away the promise*].

<sup>18</sup> For if [*the*] heritage were of the law, it were not now of promise. But God granted [*or gave*] to Abraham through promise.

<sup>19</sup> What then the law? that is, Whereto is the law profitable? [*or What therefore profiteth the law?*] It was set for trespassing, till the seed came, to whom he had made the promise. *Which law* was ordained by angels, in the hand of a mediator.

<sup>20</sup> But a mediator is not of one. But God is one.

<sup>21</sup> Is then the law against the promises of God? God forbid. For if the law were given, that might quicken, verily were rightfulness of law, [*or verily rightwiseness were of law*].

<sup>22</sup> But the scripture hath concluded all things under sin, that the promise of the faith of Jesus Christ were given to them that believe.

<sup>23</sup> And before that belief came, they were kept under the law, enclosed into that belief that was to be showed. [*Forsooth before that the faith came, we were kept under the law, shut together into that faith that was to be showed.*]

<sup>24</sup> And so the law was our under-master in Christ, that we be justified of belief [*or of faith*].

<sup>25</sup> But after that belief came, we be not now under the undermaster. [*But after that the faith came, now we be not under the little master.*]

<sup>26</sup> For all ye be the children of God through the belief of Jesus Christ. [*For all ye be the sons of God by faith in Christ Jesus.*]

<sup>27</sup> For all ye that be baptized, be clothed with Christ.

<sup>28</sup> There is no Jew, nor Greek, no bondman, nor free man, no male, nor female; for all ye be one in Christ Jesus.

<sup>29</sup> And if ye *be one* in Jesus Christ, then ye be the seed of Abraham, *and* heirs by promise.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> But I say, as long time as the heir is a little child, he diverseth nothing from a servant, when he is lord of all things [*or lord of all*];

<sup>2</sup> but he is under keepers and tutors, into the time determined of the father.

<sup>3</sup> So we, when we were little children, we served under the elements of the world.

<sup>4</sup> But after that the fulfilling of time came, God sent his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,

<sup>5</sup> that he should again-buy them that were under the law, that we should receive the adoption of sons.

<sup>6</sup> And for ye be God's sons, God sent his Spirit into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. [*Forsooth for ye be the sons of God, God sent the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, that is, father.*]

<sup>7</sup> And so there is not now a servant, but a son; and if *he* is a son, *he* is an heir by God.

<sup>8</sup> But then ye unknowing God, served to them that in kind were not gods.

<sup>9</sup> But now when ye have known God, and be known of God, how be ye turned again to the feeble [*or the sick*] and needy elements, to the which ye will again serve?

<sup>10</sup> Ye take keep to days, [*or Ye keep, or wait on, days*], and months, and times, and years.

<sup>11</sup> But I dread you, lest without cause, I have travailed among you, [*or lest peradventure I have travailed in you without cause*].

<sup>12</sup> Be ye as I, for I *am* as ye. Brethren, I beseech you, ye have hurt me nothing [*or ye have nothing hurt me*].

<sup>13</sup> But ye know, that by infirmity of flesh I have preached [*or I have evangelized*] to you now before;

<sup>14</sup> and ye despised not, neither forsook your temptation in my flesh, but ye received me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus.

<sup>15</sup> Where then is your blessing? [*or Where is therefore your blessedness, that ye had before time?*] For I bear you witness, that if it might have been done, ye would have put out your eyes, and have given them to me.

<sup>16</sup> Am I then made an enemy to you, saying to you the sooth?

<sup>17</sup> They love not you well [*or They love you not well*], but they will exclude you, that ye pursue them.

<sup>18</sup> But pursue ye the good evermore in good, and not only when I am present with you.

<sup>19</sup> My small children, which I bear again, till that Christ be formed in you, [*My little sons, whom I child, or I bring forth by travail, again, till Christ be formed in you,*]

<sup>20</sup> and I would now be at you, and change my voice, for I am confounded among you.

<sup>21</sup> Say to me, ye that will be under the law, have ye not read the law?

<sup>22</sup> For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, one of a servant [*or a handmaiden*], and one of a free woman [*or a wife*].

<sup>23</sup> But he that *was* of the servant [*or the handmaiden*] was born after the flesh; but he that *was* of the free woman [*or the wife*] by a promise.

<sup>24</sup> The which things be said by another understanding [*or allegory*]. For these be two testaments; one in the hill of Sinai [*or mount Sinai*], engendering into servage, which is Agar.

<sup>25</sup> For Sinai is an hill *that is* in Arabia, which *hill* is joined to it that is now Jerusalem, and serveth with her children.

<sup>26</sup> But that Jerusalem that is above, is free, which is our mother.

<sup>27</sup> For it is written, Be glad, thou barren, that bearest not; break out and cry, *[thou]* that bringest forth no children; for many sons *be* of her that is left of her husband, more than of her that hath an husband.

<sup>28</sup> For, brethren, we be *[the]* sons of promise after Isaac;

<sup>29</sup> but now as this that was born after the flesh pursued him that *was* after the Spirit, so now.

<sup>30</sup> But what saith the scripture? Cast out the servant *[or the handmaiden]* and her son, for the son of the servant shall not be heir with the son of the free *wife*.

<sup>31</sup> And so, brethren, we be not sons of the servant *[or of the handmaiden]*, but of the free *wife*, by which freedom *[or liberty]* Christ hath made us free.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Stand ye therefore, and do not ye again be held in the yoke of servage.

<sup>2</sup> Lo! I, Paul, say to you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall nothing profit to you.

<sup>3</sup> And I witness again to each man that circumciseth himself, that he is a debtor of all the law to be done.

<sup>4</sup> And ye be voided away from Christ, and ye that be justified in the law, ye have fallen away from grace.

<sup>5</sup> For we through the Spirit of belief abide the hope of rightwiseness. *[For we by Spirit of faith abide the hope of rightwiseness.]*

<sup>6</sup> For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision is anything worth, neither prepuce, but the belief that worketh by charity *[or but faith that worketh by charity]*.

<sup>7</sup> Ye ran well; who hindered you that ye obeyed not to the truth?

<sup>8</sup> Consent ye to no man; for this counsel is not of him that hath called you.

<sup>9</sup> A little sourdough impaireth *[or maketh sour]* all the gobbet.

<sup>10</sup> I trust on you in our Lord, that ye should understand none other thing. And who that disturbeth or dis-troubleth you, shall bear doom, whoever he be.

<sup>11</sup> And, brethren, if I preach yet circumcision, what suffer I yet persecution? then the stumbling of the cross is avoided/is voided.

<sup>12</sup> I would that they were cut away, that disturb you. [*I would that they that distrouble you, be also cut off.*]

<sup>13</sup> For, brethren, ye be called into freedom [*or into liberty*]; only give ye not freedom [*or liberty*] into occasion of flesh, but by charity of [*the*] Spirit serve ye together.

<sup>14</sup> For every law [*or all the law*] is fulfilled in one word, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>15</sup> And if ye bite, and eat each other, see ye, lest ye be wasted each from other.

<sup>16</sup> And I say to you *in Christ*, walk ye in Spirit, and ye shall not perform the desires of the flesh.

<sup>17</sup> For the flesh coveteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these be adversaries together, that ye do not all things that ye will.

<sup>18</sup> That if ye be led by [*the*] Spirit, ye be not under the law.

<sup>19</sup> And the works of the flesh be open, which be fornication, unclean-ness, unchastity, lechery,

<sup>20</sup> service of false gods [*or serving of idols*], witchcrafts, enmities, strivings [*or strives*], indignations, wraths, chidings, dissensions, sects [*or heresies*],

<sup>21</sup> envies, manslayings, drunkennesses, unmeasurable eatings [*or gluttonies*], and things like to these, which I say to you before, as I have told to you before, for they that do such things, shall not have the kingdom of God.

<sup>22</sup> But the fruit of the Spirit is charity, joy, peace, patience, long abiding, benignity, [*or good will*], goodness, mildness, faith,

<sup>23</sup> temperance, continence, chastity; against such things is no law.

<sup>24</sup> And they that be of Christ, have crucified their flesh with vices and covetings [*or concupiscences*].

<sup>25</sup> If we live by Spirit, walk we by Spirit;

<sup>26</sup> be we not made covetous of vain glory, stirring each other to wrath, *or* having envy each to other.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, if a man be occupied in any guilt [*or overcome in any trespass*], ye that be spiritual, inform ye [*or teach*] such one in spirit of softness, [*or meekness*], beholding thyself, lest that thou be tempted, [*falling in the same wise*].

<sup>2</sup> Each bear other's charges, and so ye shall fulfill the law of Christ.

<sup>3</sup> For who that troweth [*or guesseth*] that he be aught, when he is nought, he beguileth himself.

<sup>4</sup> But each man prove his own work, and so he shall have glory [*only*] in himself, and not in another.

<sup>5</sup> For each man shall bear his own charge.

<sup>6</sup> He that is taught in word, commune he with him that teacheth him, in all goods [*or in all good things*].

<sup>7</sup> Do not ye err, God is not scorned; for those things that a man soweth, those things he shall reap.

<sup>8</sup> For he that soweth in his flesh, of the flesh he shall reap corruption; but he that soweth in the Spirit, of the Spirit he shall reap everlasting life.

<sup>9</sup> And doing good fail we not; for in his time we shall reap, not failing.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore while we have time, work we good to all men; but most to them that be home-like [*or that be the household meine*] of the faith.

<sup>11</sup> See ye, what manner letters I have written to you with mine own hand.

<sup>12</sup> For whoever will please in the flesh, these constrain you to be circumcised, only that they suffer not the persecution of Christ's cross.

<sup>13</sup> For neither they that be circumcised keep the law; but they will, that they have glory in your flesh.

<sup>14</sup> But far be it from me to have glory, [*no*] but in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified to me, and I to the world.

<sup>15</sup> For in Jesus Christ neither circum-cision is anything worth, nor prepuce, but a new creature.

<sup>16</sup> And whoever [*shall*] pursue this rule, peace on them, and mercy, and on Israel of God.

<sup>17</sup> And hereafter [*or From hence-forth*], no man be heavy to me; for I bear in my body the tokens, [*or the wounds*], of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>18</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit, brethren. Amen.

## EPHESIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, the apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to all the saints that be at Ephesus, and to the faithful men in Jesus Christ,

<sup>2</sup> grace *be* to you and peace of God, our Father, and of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed *be* God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, that hath blessed us in all spiritual blessing in heavenly things in Christ,

<sup>4</sup> as he hath chosen us in himself before the making of the world, that we were holy [*or that we should be holy*], and without wem in his sight, in charity.

<sup>5</sup> Which hath before-ordained us into [*the*] adoption of sons by Jesus Christ into him, by the purpose of his will,

<sup>6</sup> into the praising of the glory of his grace; in which he hath glorified us [*or he made us able to his grace*] in his dearworthy Son.

<sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption by his blood, [*and*] forgiveness of sins, after the riches of his grace,

<sup>8</sup> that abounded greatly in us in all wisdom and prudence,

<sup>9</sup> to make known to us the sacrament of his will, by the good pleasance of him;

<sup>10</sup> the which *sacrament* he purposed in him in the dispensation of plenty of times, to store up all things in Christ, which be in heavens, and which *be* in earth, in him.

<sup>11</sup> In whom [*also*] we be called by lot, before-ordained by the purpose of him that worketh all things by the counsel of his will;

<sup>12</sup> that we be into the praising of his glory, we that have hoped before [*or we that before hoped*] in Christ.

<sup>13</sup> In whom also ye *were called*, when ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your health, in whom ye believing be marked with the Holy Ghost of promise,

<sup>14</sup> which is the earnest [*or a wed*] of our heritage, into the redemption of purchasing, into [*the*] praising of his glory.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore and I hearing your faith, that is in Christ Jesus, and the love into all saints,

<sup>16</sup> cease not to do thankings for you, making mind of you in my prayers;

<sup>17</sup> that God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, give to you the spirit of wisdom and of revelation, into the knowing of him;

<sup>18</sup> and the eyes of your heart enlightened, that ye know, which is the hope of his calling, and which be the riches of the glory of his heritage in saints;

<sup>19</sup> and which is the excellent greatness of his virtue, into us that have believed, by the working of the might of his virtue,

<sup>20</sup> which he wrought in Christ, raising him from death, and setting *him* on his right half in heavenly things,

<sup>21</sup> above each principat, and potentate, and virtue, and domination, and *above* each name that is named, not only in this world, but also in the world to coming [*or to come*];

<sup>22</sup> and made all things subject under his feet, and gave him to be head over all the church,

<sup>23</sup> that is the body of him, and the plenty of him, which is all things in all things fulfilled.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And when ye were dead in your guilts and sins,

<sup>2</sup> in which ye wandered sometime, after the course of this world, after the prince of the power of this air, of the spirit that worketh now into the sons of unbelief;

<sup>3</sup> in which also we all lived sometime in the desires of our flesh, doing the wills of the flesh and of the thoughts, and we were by kind the sons of wrath, as other men;

<sup>4</sup> but God, that is rich in mercy, for his full much charity in which he loved us,

<sup>5</sup> yea, when we were dead in sins, quickened us together in Christ, by whose grace ye be saved,

<sup>6</sup> and again-raised together, and made together to sit in heavenly things in Christ Jesus;

<sup>7</sup> that he should show in the worlds above coming the plenteous riches of his grace in goodness on us in Christ Jesus.

<sup>8</sup> For by grace ye be saved by faith, and this not of you; for it is the gift of God,

<sup>9</sup> not of works, that no man have glory.

<sup>10</sup> For we be the making of him, made of nought in Christ Jesus, in good works, which God hath ordained, that we go in those *works*.

<sup>11</sup> For which thing be ye mindful that sometime ye were heathen in flesh, which were said prepuce, from that that is said circumcision made by hand in flesh;

<sup>12</sup> and ye were in that time without Christ, alienated [*or strangers*] from the living of Israel, and guests of the testaments, not having hope of promise, and without God in this world.



<sup>13</sup> But now in Christ Jesus ye that were sometime far, be made nigh in the blood of Christ.

<sup>14</sup> For he is our peace, that made both one, and unbinding the middle wall of a wall without mortar,

<sup>15</sup> enmities in his flesh; and voided the law of commandments by dooms, that he make two in himself into a new man, making peace,

<sup>16</sup> to reconcile both in one body to God by the cross, slaying the enmities in himself.

<sup>17</sup> And he coming preached peace to you that were far, and peace to them that were nigh;

<sup>18</sup> for by him we both have nigh coming in one Spirit to the Father.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore now ye be not guests and strangers, but ye be citizens of saints, and [*the*] household meine of God;

<sup>20</sup> above builded on the founda-ment of apostles and of prophets, upon that highest cornerstone, Christ Jesus;

<sup>21</sup> in whom each building made waxeth into an holy temple in the Lord.

<sup>22</sup> In whom also ye be builded together into the habitation of God, in the Holy Ghost.

### CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> For the grace of this thing I, Paul, the bound of Christ Jesus, for you heathen men,

<sup>2</sup> if nevertheless ye have heard the dispensation of God's grace, that is given to me in you.

<sup>3</sup> For by revelation the sacrament is made known to me, as I above wrote in short thing,

<sup>4</sup> as ye may read, and understand my prudence in the mystery of Christ.

<sup>5</sup> Which was not known to other generations to the sons of men, as it is now showed to his holy apostles and prophets in the Spirit,

<sup>6</sup> that heathen men be even-heirs, and of one body, and partners together of his promise in Christ Jesus by the evangel;

<sup>7</sup> whose minister I am made, by the gift of God's grace, which is given to me by the working of his virtue.

<sup>8</sup> To me, least of all saints, this grace is given to preach [*or to evangelize*] among heathen men the unsearchable riches of Christ,

<sup>9</sup> and to enlighten all men, which is the dispensation of [*the*] sacrament hid from worlds in God, that made all things of nought;

<sup>10</sup> that the much-fold wisdom of God be known to princes and potentates in heavenly things by the church,

<sup>11</sup> by the before-ordinance [*or after the setting*] of worlds, which he made in Christ Jesus our Lord.

<sup>12</sup> In whom we have trust and nigh coming [*to*], in trusting by the faith of him.

<sup>13</sup> For which thing I ask, that ye fail not in my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

<sup>14</sup> For grace of this thing I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>15</sup> of whom each fatherhood in heavens [*or in heaven*] and in earth is named,

<sup>16</sup> that he give to you, after the riches of his glory, virtue to be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

<sup>17</sup> that Christ dwell by faith in your hearts; that ye rooted and grounded in charity,

<sup>18</sup> may comprehend with all saints, which is the breadth, and the length, and the highness, and the deepness;

<sup>19</sup> also to know the charity of Christ more excellent than science, that ye be [*full*]-filled in all the plenty of God.

<sup>20</sup> And to him that is mighty to do all things more plenteously than we ask or understand, by the virtue that worketh in us,

<sup>21</sup> to him be glory in the church, and in Christ Jesus, into all the generations of the world[s] of worlds. Amen.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore I bound for the Lord beseech you, that ye walk worthily in the calling, in which ye be called,

<sup>2</sup> with all meekness and mildness, with patience supporting each other in charity,

<sup>3</sup> busy to keep unity of Spirit in the bond of peace.

<sup>4</sup> One body and one Spirit, as ye be called in one hope of your calling;

<sup>5</sup> one Lord, one faith, one baptism,

<sup>6</sup> one God and Father of all, which is above all men, and by all things, and in us all.

<sup>7</sup> But to each of us grace is given by [*or after*] the measure of the giving of Christ;

<sup>8</sup> for which thing he saith, He ascending on high, led captivity captive, he gave gifts to men.

<sup>9</sup> But what is it, that he went up [*or ascended*], no but that also he came down first into the lower parts of the earth?

<sup>10</sup> He it is that came down, and that ascended [*or went up*] on all heavens, that he should fill all things.

<sup>11</sup> And he gave some apostles, some prophets, others evangelists, others shepherds and teachers,

<sup>12</sup> to the full ending of saints, into the work of ministry, into [*the*] edification of Christ's body,

<sup>13</sup> till we run all, into [*or in*] unity of faith and of knowing of God's Son, into a perfect man, after the measure of the age of the plenty of Christ;

<sup>14</sup> that we be not now little children, moving as waves, and be not borne about with each wind of teaching, in the waywardness of men, in subtle wit, to the deceiving of error.

<sup>15</sup> But do we truth in charity, and wax in him by all things, that is Christ our head;

<sup>16</sup> of whom all the body set together, and bound together by each jointure of under-serving, by working into the measure of each member, maketh increasing of the body, into [*the*] edification of itself in charity.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore I say and witness this thing in the Lord, that ye walk not now, as heathen men walk, in the vanity of their wit;

<sup>18</sup> that have understanding darkened with darkneses, and be alienated [*or made far*] from the life of God, by ignorance that is in them, for the blindness of their heart.

<sup>19</sup> Which despairing betook them-selves to unchastity, into the working of all uncleanness in covetousness.

<sup>20</sup> But ye have not so learned Christ,

<sup>21</sup> if nevertheless ye heard him, and be taught in him, as is truth in Jesus.

<sup>22</sup> Do ye away by the old living [*or after the first living*], the old man, that is corrupt by the desires of error;

<sup>23</sup> and be ye renewed [*or made new again*] in the spirit of your soul;

<sup>24</sup> and clothe ye the new man, which is made after God in rightwiseness and holiness of truth.

<sup>25</sup> For which thing put ye away leasing, and speak ye truth each man with his neighbour, for we be members each to other [*or together*].

<sup>26</sup> Be ye wroth, and do not do sin [*or do not ye sin*]; the sun fall not down on your wrath.

<sup>27</sup> Do not ye give stead to the devil.

<sup>28</sup> He that stole, now steal he not; but more *rather* travail he in working with his hands that that is good, that he have whereof he shall give to the needy.

<sup>29</sup> Each evil word go not out of your mouth; but if any is good to the edification of faith, that it give grace to men that hear.

<sup>30</sup> And do not ye make the Holy Ghost of God sorry, [*or heavy*], in which ye be marked in the day of redemption.

<sup>31</sup> All bitterness, and wrath, and indignation, and cry, and blasphemy be taken away from you, with all malice;

<sup>32</sup> and be ye together benign, [*or of good will*], merciful, forgiving together, as also God forgave to you in Christ.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Therefore be ye followers of God, as most dearworthy sons;

<sup>2</sup> and walk ye in love, as Christ loved us, and gave himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God, into the odour of sweetness.

<sup>3</sup> And fornication, and all uncleanness, or avarice, be not named among you, as it becometh holy men;

<sup>4</sup> either filth, or folly speech, or buffoonery [*or harlotry*], that pertaineth not to profit, but more *rather* doing of thankings.

<sup>5</sup> For know ye this, and understand, that each lecher [*or each fornicator*], or uncleanness, or covetous [*man*], that serveth to maumets [*or to idols*], hath not heritage in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

<sup>6</sup> No man deceive you by vain words; for why for these things the wrath of God came upon the sons of unbelief.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore do not ye be made partners of them.

<sup>8</sup> For ye were sometime darkneses, but now ye *be* light in the Lord. Walk ye as the sons of light.

<sup>9</sup> For the fruit of light is in all goodness, and rightwiseness, and truth.

<sup>10</sup> And prove ye what thing is well pleasing to God.

<sup>11</sup> And do not ye commune to unfruituous works of darkneses; but more *rather* reprove ye [*them*].

<sup>12</sup> For what things be done of them in privy, it is foul, yea, to speak.

<sup>13</sup> And all things that be reprov'd of the light, be openly showed [*or be made open*]; for all thing that is showed, is light.

<sup>14</sup> For which thing he saith, Rise thou that sleepest, and rise up from death, and Christ shall lighten [*or illumine*] thee.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore, brethren, see ye, how warily ye shall go; not as unwise men, but as wise men,

<sup>16</sup> again-buying the time, for the days be evil.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore do not ye be made unwise, but understanding which is the will of God [*or of the Lord*].

18 And do not ye be drunk of wine, in which is lechery [*or is luxury*], but be ye filled with the Holy Ghost;

19 and speak ye to yourselves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and saying psalm in your hearts to the Lord;

20 evermore doing thankings for all things, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ to God and to the Father.

21 *Be ye* subject together in the dread of Christ.

22 Women, be they subject to their husbands, as to the Lord,

23 for the man is head of the woman, as Christ is head of the church; he is Saviour of his body.

24 But as the church is subject to Christ, so women to their husbands in all things.

25 Men, love ye your wives, as Christ loved the church, and gave himself for it,

26 to make it holy; and cleansed it with the washing of water, in the word of life,

27 to give the church glorious to himself, that it had no wem, [*or spot*], nor rivelling [*or wrinkle*], or any such thing, but that it be holy and undefouled.

28 So and men shall love their wives, as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife, loveth himself;

29 for no man hated ever his own flesh, but nourisheth and fostereth it, as Christ *doeth* the church.

30 And we be members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this thing a man shall forsake his father and mother, and he shall draw [*or he shall cleave*] to his wife; and they shall be twain in one flesh.

32 This sacrament is great; yea, I say in Christ, and in the church.

33 Nevertheless ye all, each man love his wife as himself; and the wife dread her husband.

## CHAPTER 6

1 Sons, obey ye to your father and mother, in the Lord; for this thing is rightful [*or is just*].

2 Honour thou thy father and mother, that is the first commandment in [*the*] promise;

3 that it be well to thee, and that thou be long living on the earth.

4 And, fathers, do not ye provoke your sons to wrath; but nourish ye them in the teaching and chastising [*or in the discipline and correction*] of the Lord.

5 Servants, obey ye to fleshly lords with dread and trembling, in simple-ness of your heart, as to Christ;

<sup>6</sup> not serving at the eye, as pleasing to men, but as servants of Christ; doing the will of God by discretion,

<sup>7</sup> with good will serving as to the Lord, and not as to men;

<sup>8</sup> witting that each man, whatever good thing he shall do, he shall receive this of the Lord, whether servant, whether free man.

<sup>9</sup> And, ye lords, do the same things to them, forgiving menacings; witting that both their Lord and yours is in heavens, and the taking of persons is not with God.

<sup>10</sup> Here afterward, brethren, be ye comforted in the Lord, and in the might of his virtue.

<sup>11</sup> Clothe you with the armour of God, that ye may stand against the ambushings, [*or assailings*], of the devil.

<sup>12</sup> For why striving [*or battle*] is not to us against flesh and blood, but against [*the*] princes and potentates, against governors of the world of these darkneses, against spiritual things of wickedness, in heavenly things.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore take ye the armour of God, that ye may against-stand in the evil day; and in all things stand perfect.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore stand ye, and be girded about your loins in soothfastness, and clothed with the habergeon of rightwiseness,

<sup>15</sup> and your feet shod in making ready of the gospel of peace.

<sup>16</sup> In all things take ye the shield of faith, in which ye may quench all the fiery darts of *him that is* most wicked or the worst.

<sup>17</sup> And take ye the helmet of health, and the sword of the Ghost, that is, the word of God.

<sup>18</sup> By all prayer and beseeching pray ye all time in Spirit, and in him waking in all busyness, and beseeching for all holy men [*or for all saints*].

<sup>19</sup> and for me; that word be given to me in opening of my mouth, with trust to make known the mystery of the gospel,

<sup>20</sup> for which I am set in message in a chain; so that in it I be hardy to speak, as it behooveth me [*to speak out*].

<sup>21</sup> And [*that*] ye know, what things be about me, what I do, Tychicus, my most dear brother, and true minister in the Lord, shall make all things known to you;

<sup>22</sup> whom I sent to you for this same thing, that ye know what things be about us, and that he comfort your hearts.

<sup>23</sup> Peace to brethren, and charity, with faith of God our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>24</sup> Grace with all men that love our Lord Jesus Christ in uncorruption. Amen, *that is, So be it.*

## PHILIPPIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ, to all the holy men in Christ Jesus, that be at Philippi, with bishops and deacons,

<sup>2</sup> grace and peace to you of God our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> I do thankings to my God in all mind of you

<sup>4</sup> evermore in all my prayers for all you with joy, and make beseeching

<sup>5</sup> on your communing in the gospel of Christ, from the first day till now;

<sup>6</sup> trusting this same thing, that he that began in you a good work, shall perform *it* till into the day of Jesus Christ.

<sup>7</sup> As it is just to me to feel this thing for all you, for that I have you in heart, and in my bonds, and in defending and confirming of the gospel, that all ye be fellows of my joy.

<sup>8</sup> For God is a witness to me, how I covet all you in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

<sup>9</sup> And this thing I pray, that your charity be plenteous more and more in knowing [*or in science*], and in all wit;

<sup>10</sup> that ye approve the better things, that ye be clean and without offence in the day of Christ;

<sup>11</sup> [*full*]-filled with the fruit of rightwiseness by Jesus Christ, into the glory and praising of God.

<sup>12</sup> For, brethren, I will that ye know, that the things that be about me have come more to the profit of the gospel,

<sup>13</sup> so that my bonds were made known in Christ, in each moot hall, and in all other places;

<sup>14</sup> that more of [*the*] brethren trusting in the Lord more plenteously for my bonds, durst without dread speak the word of God.

<sup>15</sup> But some for envy and strife, some for good will, preach Christ;

<sup>16</sup> and some of charity, witting that I am put in the defence of the gospel.

<sup>17</sup> But some of strife [*or of contention*] show Christ not cleanly, guessing them to raise tribulation to my bonds.

<sup>18</sup> But what? while on all manner, either by occasion, either by truth, Christ is showed; and in this thing I have joy, but also I shall have joy.

<sup>19</sup> And I know, that this thing shall come to me into health, by your prayer, and the underministering of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

<sup>20</sup> by mine abiding and hope. For in nothing I shall be ashamed, but in all trust as evermore and now, Christ shall be magnified in my body, either by life, either by death.

<sup>21</sup> For *[to]* me to live is Christ, and to die is winning.

<sup>22</sup> That if to live in flesh, *[this]* is fruit of work to me, lo! what I shall choose, I know not.

<sup>23</sup> But I am constrained of two things, I have desire to be departed *[from the body]*, and to be with Christ, *it is much more better;*

<sup>24</sup> but to dwell in flesh, is needful for you.

<sup>25</sup> And I trusting this thing, know that I shall dwell, and perfectly dwell to all you, to your profit and joy of faith,

<sup>26</sup> that your thanking abound in Christ Jesus in me, by my coming again to you.

<sup>27</sup> Only live ye worthily to the gospel of Christ, that whether when I come and see you, either absent I hear of you, that ye stand in one spirit of one will, travailing together to the faith of the gospel.

<sup>28</sup> And in nothing be ye afeared of adversaries, which is to them cause of perdition, but to you *a cause* of health. And this thing is of God.

<sup>29</sup> For it is given to you for Christ, that not only ye believe in him, but also that ye suffer for him;

<sup>30</sup> having the same strife, which ye saw in me, and now ye have heard of me.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore if any comfort *is* in Christ, if any solace of charity, if any fellowship of Spirit, if any inwardness of mercy doing,

<sup>2</sup> *[ful]* fill ye my joy, that ye under-stand the same thing, and have the same charity, of one will, and feel the same thing;

<sup>3</sup> nothing *[doing]* by strife, neither by vain glory, but in meekness, deeming each other to be higher *[in virtue]* than himself;

<sup>4</sup> not beholding each by himself what things be his own, but those things that be of other men.

<sup>5</sup> And feel ye this thing in you, which *was* also in Christ Jesus;

<sup>6</sup> which when he was in the form of God, deemed not raven, that himself were even to God *[or himself to be even to God]*,

<sup>7</sup> but he lowed *[or meeked]* himself, taking the form of a servant, and was made into the likeness of men,



<sup>8</sup> and in habit was found as a man. He meeked himself, and was made obedient to the death, yea, to the death of the cross.

<sup>9</sup> For which thing God enhanced him, and gave to him a name that is above all name;

<sup>10</sup> that in the name of Jesus each knee be bowed, of heavenly things, [and] of earthly things, and of hell's;

<sup>11</sup> and each tongue acknowledge, that the Lord Jesus Christ is in the glory of God the Father.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore, my most dearworthy *brethren*, as evermore ye have obeyed, not in my presence only, but much more now in mine absence, work ye with dread and trembling your health.

<sup>13</sup> For it is God that worketh in you, both to will, and to perform, for good will.

<sup>14</sup> And do ye all things without grutchings, and doubtings;

<sup>15</sup> that ye be without complaint, and simple as the sons of God, without reproof, in the middle of a shrewd nation and a wayward; among which ye shine as givers of light in the world.

<sup>16</sup> And hold ye together the word of life to my glory in the day of Christ; for I have not run in vain, neither I have travailed in vain.

<sup>17</sup> But though I be offered or slain on the sacrifice and service of your faith, I have joy, and I thank you all.

<sup>18</sup> And for the same thing have ye joy, and [together] thank ye me.

<sup>19</sup> And I hope in the Lord Jesus, that I shall send Timothy soon to you, that I be of good comfort, when those things be known that be about you.

<sup>20</sup> For I have no man so of one will, that is busy for you with clean affection.

<sup>21</sup> For all men seek those things that be their own, not those that be of Christ Jesus.

<sup>22</sup> But know ye the assay of him, for as a son to the father he hath served with me in the gospel.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore I hope that I shall send him to you, anon as I see what things be about me.

<sup>24</sup> And I trust in the Lord, that also myself shall come to you soon.

<sup>25</sup> And I guessed it needful to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and even-worker, and mine even-knight, but your apostle, and the minister of my need.

<sup>26</sup> For he desired you all, and he was sorrowful, therefore that ye heard that he was sick.

<sup>27</sup> For he was sick to the death, but God had mercy on him; and not only on him, but also on me, lest I had heaviness on heaviness.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore more hastily I sent him, that when ye have seen him, ye have joy again, and I be without heaviness.

<sup>29</sup> Therefore receive ye him with all joy in the Lord, and have ye such with *all* honour.

<sup>30</sup> For the work of Christ he went to death, giving his life, that he should fulfill that that failed of you with my service.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Henceforward, my brethren, have ye joy in the Lord. To write to you the same things, to me *it is* not slow, and to you *it is* necessary.

<sup>2</sup> See ye hounds, see ye evil work-men, see ye division [*or concision*].

<sup>3</sup> For we be circumcision, which by Spirit serve to God, and glory in Christ Jesus, and have not trust in the flesh,

<sup>4</sup> though I have trust, yea, in the flesh. If any other man is seen to trust in the flesh, I more,

<sup>5</sup> that was circumcised in the eighth day, of the kin [*or the kindred*] of Israel, of the lineage of Benjamin, an Hebrew of Hebrews, by the law a Pharisee,

<sup>6</sup> by love pursuing the church of God, by rightwiseness that is in the law living without complaint.

<sup>7</sup> But which things were to me winnings, I have deemed these impairings for Christ.

<sup>8</sup> Nevertheless I guess all things to be impairment for the clear science of Jesus Christ my Lord. For whom I made all things impairment, and I deem as drit [*or as turds*], that I win Christ,

<sup>9</sup> and that I be found in him, not having my rightwiseness that is of the law, but that that is of the faith of Christ Jesus, that is of God the right-wiseness in faith,

<sup>10</sup> to know him, and the virtue of his rising again, and the fellowship of his passion, and to be made like [*or configured*] to his death,

<sup>11</sup> if on any manner I come to the resurrection that is from death.

<sup>12</sup> Not that now I have taken, or now I am perfect; but I pursue, if in any manner I comprehend [*or I take*] in which thing also I am compre-hended of Jesus Christ.

<sup>13</sup> Brethren, I deem me not that I have comprehended; but one thing, I forget those things that be behind, and stretching forth myself to those things that be before,

<sup>14</sup> and pursue to the ordained meed [*or to the prize*] of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore whoever we be perfect, feel we this thing. And if ye under-stand in other manner anything, this thing God shall show to you.

<sup>16</sup> Nevertheless to what thing we have come, that we understand the same thing, and that we perfectly dwell in the same rule.

<sup>17</sup> Brethren, be ye my followers, and wait ye them that walk so, as ye have our form.

<sup>18</sup> For many walk, which I have said oft to you, but now I weeping say, [*them*], the enemies of Christ's cross,

<sup>19</sup> whose end is death, whose god is the womb, and the glory in [*the*] confusion of them, that savour [*or that understand*] earthly things.

<sup>20</sup> But our living is in heavens [*or in heaven*]; from whence also we abide the Saviour our Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>21</sup> which shall reform the body of our meekness, *that is* made like [*or configured*] to the body of his clearness, by the working by which he may also make all things subject to him.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, my brethren most dear-worthy and most desired, my joy and my crown, so stand ye in the Lord, most dear *brethren*.

<sup>2</sup> I pray Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, to understand the same thing in the Lord.

<sup>3</sup> Also I pray and thee, germane fellow, help thou those *women* that travailed with me in the gospel, with Clement and other mine helpers, whose names be in the book of life.

<sup>4</sup> Joy ye in the Lord evermore; again I say, joy ye.

<sup>5</sup> Be your patience [*or your temperance*] known to all men; the Lord is nigh.

<sup>6</sup> Be ye nothing busy, but in all prayer and beseeching, with doing of thankings, be your askings known at God.

<sup>7</sup> And the peace of God, that passeth all wit, keep your hearts and understandings in Christ Jesus.

<sup>8</sup> From henceforth, brethren, what-ever things be sooth, whatever things chaste, whatever things just, whatever things holy, whatever things able to be loved, [*or amiable, or lovable*], whatever things of good fame, if any virtue, if any praising of discipline, think ye these things,

<sup>9</sup> that also ye have learned, and taken, and heard, and seen in me. Do ye these things, and God of peace shall be with you.

<sup>10</sup> But I joyed greatly in the Lord, that sometime afterward ye flowered again to feel for me, as also ye feeled. But ye were occupied,

<sup>11</sup> I say not as for need, for I have learned to be sufficient in which things I am.

<sup>12</sup> And I know also how to be lowed, [*or how to be bowed, or meeked*], I know also how to have plenty [*or how to abound*]. Every-where and in all things I am taught to be [*full*]-filled, and to hunger, and to abound, and to suffer mis-ease.

<sup>13</sup> I may all things in him that comforteth me.

<sup>14</sup> Nevertheless ye have done well, communing to my tribulation.

<sup>15</sup> For ye, Philippians, know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I went forth from Macedonia, no church communed with me in reason, of thing given and taken, but ye alone.

<sup>16</sup> Which sent to Thessalonica once and twice also into use to me.

<sup>17</sup> Not for I seek gift, but I require, [*or seek again*], fruit abounding in your reason.

<sup>18</sup> For I have all things, and abound; I am [*full*]-filled [*or replete*] with those things taken of Epaphroditus, which ye sent into the odour of sweetness, a covenable sacrifice, pleasing to God.

<sup>19</sup> And my God [*ful*]fill all your desire, by his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.

<sup>20</sup> But to God and our Father be glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>21</sup> Greet ye well every holy *man* in Christ Jesus. Those brethren that be with me, greet you well.

<sup>22</sup> All holy men greet you well, most soothly they that be of the emperor's [*or of Caesar's*] house.

<sup>23</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

## COLOSSIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy, brother,

<sup>2</sup> to them that be at Colosse, holy and faithful brethren in Christ Jesus, grace and peace to you of God our Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> We do thankings to God, and to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, evermore praying for you,

<sup>4</sup> hearing your faith in Christ Jesus, and the love that ye have to all holy men,

<sup>5</sup> for the hope that is kept to you in heavens. Which ye heard in the word of truth of the gospel,

<sup>6</sup> that came to you, as also it is in all the world, and maketh fruit, and waxeth, as *[it is]* in you, from that day in which ye heard and knew the grace of God in truth.

<sup>7</sup> As ye learned of Epaphras, our fellow *[or our even-servant]*, most dearworthy, which is a true minister of Jesus Christ for you;

<sup>8</sup> which also showed to us your loving in Spirit.

<sup>9</sup> And therefore we from the day in which we heard, cease not to pray for you, and to ask, that ye be filled with the knowing of his will in all wisdom and ghostly understanding;

<sup>10</sup> that ye walk worthily to God pleasing by all things, and make fruit in all good work, and wax in the science of God,

<sup>11</sup> and be comforted in all virtue, by the might of his clearness, in all patience and long abiding with joy,

<sup>12</sup> that ye do thankings to God and to the Father *[or doing thankings to God the Father]*, which made you worthy into the part of heritage of holy men in light.

<sup>13</sup> Which delivered us from the power of darkneses, and translated *[us]* into the kingdom of the Son of his loving,

<sup>14</sup> in whom we have again-buying, and remission of sins.

<sup>15</sup> Which is the image of God invisible, the first begotten of each creature.

<sup>16</sup> For in him all things be made, in heavens and in earth, visible and invisible, either thrones, either dominations, either princehoods, either powers, all things be made of nought by him, and in him,

<sup>17</sup> and he is before all, and all things be in him.

<sup>18</sup> And he is head of the body of the church; which is the beginning, *[or the first of all]*, and the first begotten of dead men, that he hold the first dignity *[or primacy]*, in all things.

<sup>19</sup> For in him it pleased all plenty to inhabit,

<sup>20</sup> and by him all things to be reconciled into him, and made peace by the blood of his cross, those things that be in earths, either that be in heavens.

<sup>21</sup> And when ye were sometime aliened [*or made strangers*], and enemies by wit, in evil works, now he hath reconciled you

<sup>22</sup> in the body of his flesh by death, to have you holy, and unwemmed, and without reproof before him.

<sup>23</sup> If nevertheless ye dwell in the faith, founded, and stable, and unmoveable from the hope of the gospel that ye have heard, which is preached in all creature that is under heaven. Of which I, Paul, am made a minister,

<sup>24</sup> and now I have joy in passion for you, and I [*ful*] fill those things that fail of the passions of Christ in my flesh, for his body, that is the church.

<sup>25</sup> Of which I Paul am made minister [*or a servant*] by the dispensation of God, that is given to me in you, that I [*ful*] fill the word of God,

<sup>26</sup> the private [*or the mystery*] that was hid from worlds and generations. But now it is showed to his saints,

<sup>27</sup> to whom God would make known the riches of the glory of this sacrament in heathen men, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

<sup>28</sup> Whom we show, reprovng each man, and teaching each man in all wisdom, that we offer each man perfect in Christ Jesus.

<sup>29</sup> In which thing also I travail, in striving by the working of him, that he worketh in me in virtue.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> But I will that ye know, what busyness I have for you, and for them that be at Laodicea, and whichever saw not my face in flesh,

<sup>2</sup> that their hearts be comforted, and they *be* taught in charity, into all the riches of the plenty of under-standing, into the knowing of [*the*] mystery of God, the Father of Jesus Christ,

<sup>3</sup> in whom all the treasures of wisdom and of science, [*or of cunning*], be hid.

<sup>4</sup> For this thing I say, that no man deceive you in height of words.

<sup>5</sup> For though I be absent in body, by spirit I am with you, joyng and seeing your order and the firmness of your belief that is in Christ.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore as ye have taken Jesus Christ our Lord, walk ye in him,

<sup>7</sup> and be ye rooted and builded above in him, and confirmed in the belief, as ye have learned, abounding in him in doing of thankings.

<sup>8</sup> See ye that no man deceive you by philosophy and vain fallacy, after the tradition of men, after the elements of the world, and not after Christ.

<sup>9</sup> For in him dwelleth body-like all the fullness of the Godhead.

<sup>10</sup> And ye be [*ful*] filled in him, that is head of all principat and power.

<sup>11</sup> In whom also ye be circumcised in circumcision not made with hand, in despoiling [*or in nakedness*] of the body of flesh, but in circumcision of Christ;

<sup>12</sup> and ye be buried together with him in baptism, in whom also ye have risen again by faith of the working of God, that raised him from death.

<sup>13</sup> And when ye were dead in your guilts, and in the prepuce of your flesh, he quickened together *you* with him; forgiving to you all guilts [*or all trespasses*],

<sup>14</sup> doing away that writing of decree that was against us, that was contrary to us; and he took away that from the middle, pitching it on the cross;

<sup>15</sup> and he spoiled principats and powers, and led out trustily, openly overcoming them in himself.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore no man judge you in meat, or in drink, or in part of feast day, or of new moon, or of sabbaths,

<sup>17</sup> which be shadow of things to coming [*or to come*]; for the body is of Christ.

<sup>18</sup> No man deceive you, willing *to teach* in meekness, and [*the*] religion of angels, those things which he hath not seen, walking vainly, swollen [*or in-blown*] with wit of his flesh,

<sup>19</sup> and not holding the head, of which all the body, by bands and joinings together under-ministered and made, waxeth into [*the*] increasing of God.

<sup>20</sup> For if ye be dead with Christ from the elements of the world, what yet as men living to the world deem ye?

<sup>21</sup> That ye touch not, neither taste, neither treat with hands those things,

<sup>22</sup> which all be into death by that use, after the commandments and teachings of men;

<sup>23</sup> which have a reason of wisdom in vain religion [*or in superstition*] and meekness, and not to spare the body, not in any honour to the fulfilling of the flesh.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Therefore if ye have risen together with Christ, seek ye those things that be above, where Christ is sitting on the right half of God.

<sup>2</sup> Savour [*or Understand*] ye those things that be above, not those that *be* on the earth.

<sup>3</sup> For ye be dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

<sup>4</sup> For when Christ shall appear, your life, then also ye shall appear with him in glory.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore slay ye your members, which be on the earth, fornication, uncleanness, lechery, evil covetousness, and avarice, which is service of maumets [*or simulacra*];

<sup>6</sup> for which things the wrath of God came on the sons of unbelief;

<sup>7</sup> in which also ye walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

<sup>8</sup> But now put ye away all things, wrath, indignation, malice, blasphemy and foul words of your mouth.

<sup>9</sup> Do not ye lie, [*or gab*], together; despoil ye you from the old man with his deeds,

<sup>10</sup> and clothe ye the new man, that is made new again into the knowing of God, after the image of him that made him;

<sup>11</sup> where is not male and female, heathen man and Jew, circumcision and prepuce, barbarous and Scythian, bondman and free, but all things and in all things Christ.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore ye, as the chosen of God, holy and loved, clothe [*ye*] you with the entrails of mercy, benignity, and meekness, temperance, patience;

<sup>13</sup> and support ye each other, [*or bearing up together*], and forgive to yourselves, if any man against any hath a quarrel; as the Lord [*Christ*] forgave to you, so also ye.

<sup>14</sup> And upon all these things have ye charity, that is the bond of perfectness [*or of perfection*].

<sup>15</sup> And the peace of Christ enjoy in your hearts, in which ye be called in one body, and be ye kind.

<sup>16</sup> The word of Christ dwell in you plenteously, in all wisdom; and teach and admonish yourselves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, in grace singing in your hearts to the Lord.

<sup>17</sup> All thing, whatever thing ye do, in word or in deed, all things in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, doing thankings to God and to the Father by him [*or doing thankings to God the Father by him*].

<sup>18</sup> Women, be ye subject to your husbands, as it behooveth in the Lord.



<sup>19</sup> Men, love ye your wives, and do not ye be bitter to them.

<sup>20</sup> Sons, obey ye to your father and mother by [*or in*] all things; for this is well pleasing in the Lord.

<sup>21</sup> Fathers, do not ye provoke your sons to indignation, that they be not made feeble-hearted.

<sup>22</sup> Servants, obey ye by all things to fleshly lords, not serving at the eye, as pleasing to men, but in simpleness of heart, dreading the Lord [*God*].

<sup>23</sup> Whatever ye do, work ye of will as to the Lord and not to men;

<sup>24</sup> witting that of the Lord ye shall take yielding of heritage. Serve ye to the Lord Christ.

<sup>25</sup> For he that doeth injury [*or wrong*] shall receive that that he did evil; and acception [*or taking*] of persons is not with God.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Lords, give ye to servants that that is just and even, witting that also ye have a Lord in heaven.

<sup>2</sup> Be ye busy in prayer, and wake in it, in doing of thankings;

<sup>3</sup> and pray each for other, and for us, that God open to us the door of word, to speak the mystery of Christ; for which also I am bound,

<sup>4</sup> that I show it, so as it behooveth me to speak.

<sup>5</sup> Walk ye in wisdom to them that be withoutforth, again-buying time.

<sup>6</sup> Your word be savoured with salt evermore in grace; that ye know, how it behooveth you to answer to each man.

<sup>7</sup> Tychicus, most dear brother, and faithful minister, and my fellow [*or my even-servant*] in the Lord, shall make all things known to you, that be about me.

<sup>8</sup> Whom I sent to you to this same thing, that he know what things be about you, and comfort your hearts,

<sup>9</sup> with Onesimus, most dear and faithful brother, which is of you; which shall make all things that be done here, known to you.

<sup>10</sup> Aristarchus, prisoner with me [*or mine even-captive*], greeteth you well, and Marcus, the cousin of Barnabas, of whom ye have taken commandments; if he come to you, receive ye him;

<sup>11</sup> and Jesus, that is said Justus; which be of circumcision; they alone be mine helpers in the kingdom of God, that were to me in solace.

<sup>12</sup> Epaphras, that is of you, the servant of Jesus Christ, greeteth you well; ever busy for you in prayers, that ye stand perfect and full in all the will of God.

<sup>13</sup> And I bear witnessing to him, that he hath much travail for you, and for them that be at Laodicea, and that be at Hierapolis.

<sup>14</sup> Luke, the leech most dear, and Demas, greet you well.

<sup>15</sup> Greet ye well the brethren that be at Laodicea, and *the woman* Nympha, and the church that is in her house.

<sup>16</sup> And when this epistle is read among you, do ye, that it be read in the church of Laodiceans; and read ye that *epistle* that is of Laodiceans.

<sup>17</sup> And say ye to Archippus, See the ministry, that thou hast taken in the Lord, that thou [*ful*] fill it.

<sup>18</sup> My salutation, by the hand of Paul. Be ye mindful of my bonds. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

## 1ST THESSALONIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church of Thessalonians, in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ, grace and peace to you.

<sup>2</sup> We do thankings to God ever-more for all you, and we make mind of you in our prayers without ceasing;

<sup>3</sup> having mind [*or mindful*] of the work of your faith, and travail, and charity, and abiding of the hope of our Lord Jesus Christ, before God and our Father.

<sup>4</sup> Ye beloved brethren of God, we witting you're choosing,

<sup>5</sup> for our gospel was not at you in word only, but also in virtue, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much plenty; as ye know, which we were among you for you;

<sup>6</sup> and ye be made followers of us, and of the Lord, receiving the word in much tribulation, with joy of the Holy Ghost;

<sup>7</sup> so that ye be made ensample to all men that believe, in Macedonia and in Achaia.

<sup>8</sup> For of you the word of the Lord is published [*or is much told*], not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but your faith that is to God, in each place is gone forth, [*or but in each place your faith that is to God, is gone forth*]; so that it is not need to us to speak anything.

<sup>9</sup> For they show of you, what manner entry we had to you, and how ye be converted to God from maumets [*or from simulacra*], to serve to the living God and very;

<sup>10</sup> and to abide his Son from heavens, whom he raised from death, the Lord Jesus, that delivered us from wrath to coming [*or to come*].

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> For, brethren, ye know our entry to you, for it was not vain;

<sup>2</sup> but first we suffered, and were punished with wrongs, as ye know in Philippi, and had trust in our Lord, to speak to you the gospel of God in much busyness.

<sup>3</sup> And our exhortation [*or our teaching*] is not of error, neither of uncleanness, neither in guile,

<sup>4</sup> but as we be approved of God, that the gospel of God should be taken to us, so we speak; not as pleasing to men, but to God that proveth our hearts.

<sup>5</sup> For neither we were any time in word of glossing [*or of flattering*], as ye know, neither in occasion of avarice; God is witness;

<sup>6</sup> neither seeking glory of men, neither of you, neither of others, when we, as Christ's apostles, might have been in charge [*or chargeous*] to you.

<sup>7</sup> But we were made little in the middle of you, as if a nurse foster her sons;

<sup>8</sup> so we desiring you with great love, would have betaken to you not only the gospel of God, but also our lives, for ye be made most dear-worthy to us.

<sup>9</sup> For, brethren, ye be mindful of our travail and weariness; we worked night and day, that we should not grieve any of you, and preached to you the gospel of God.

<sup>10</sup> God and ye be witnesses, how holily, and justly, and without complaint [*or quarrel*], we were to you that believed.

<sup>11</sup> As ye know, how we prayed you, and comforted each of you, as the father his sons,

<sup>12</sup> and we have witnessed, that ye should go worthily to God, that called you into his kingdom and glory.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore we do thankings to God without ceasing. For when ye had taken of us the word of the hearing of God, ye took it not as the word of men, but as it is verily, the word of God, that worketh in you that have believed.

<sup>14</sup> For, brethren, ye be made followers of the churches of God, that be in Judea, in Christ Jesus, for ye have suffered the same things of your even-lineages, as they of the Jews.

<sup>15</sup> Which slew both the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and pursued us, and they please not to God, and they be adversaries to all men;

<sup>16</sup> forbidding us to speak to heathen men, that they be made safe, that they [*full*]-fill their sins evermore; for the wrath of God came on them into the end.

<sup>17</sup> And, brethren, we desolate from you for a time, by mouth and in beholding, [*as in presence*], but not in heart, have hied more plenteously to see your face with great desire.

<sup>18</sup> For we would come to you, yea, I, Paul, once and again, but Satan hindered us.

<sup>19</sup> For why what is our hope, or joy, or crown of glory? Whether ye be not before our Lord Jesus Christ in his coming?

<sup>20</sup> For ye be our glory and joy.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> For which thing we suffered no longer, and it pleased to us to dwell alone at Athens;

<sup>2</sup> and we sent Timothy, our brother, and minister of God in the evangel of Christ, to you to be confirmed, and to be taught, [*or admonished*], for your faith,

<sup>3</sup> that no man be moved in these tribulations. For [*ye*] yourselves know, that in this thing we be set.

<sup>4</sup> For when we were at you, we before-said to you, that we should suffer tribulations; as it is done, and ye know.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore I, *Paul*, no longer abiding, sent to know your faith, lest peradventure he that tempteth [*shall*] tempt you, and your travail [*or our travail*] be made vain.

<sup>6</sup> But now, when Timothy shall come to us from you, and tell to us your faith and charity, and that ye have good mind of us, ever[*more*] desiring to see us, as we also you;

<sup>7</sup> therefore, brethren, we be comforted in you, in all our need and tribulation, by your faith.

<sup>8</sup> For now we live, if ye stand in the Lord.

<sup>9</sup> For what doing of thankings may we yield to God for you, in all joy, in which we joy for you before our Lord?

<sup>10</sup> night and day more plenteously praying, that we see your face, and fulfill those things that fail to [*or of*] your faith.

<sup>11</sup> But God himself and our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, address our way to you.

<sup>12</sup> And the Lord multiply you, and make your charity to be plenteous of each to other [*or for to abound together*], and into all men, as also we in you;

<sup>13</sup> that your hearts be confirmed without complaint in holiness, before God and our Father, in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints. Amen.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, brethren, from hence-forward we pray you, and beseech in the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us, how it behooveth you to go and to please God, so walk ye, that ye abound more.

<sup>2</sup> For ye know what commandments I have given to you by the Lord Jesus.

<sup>3</sup> For this is the will of God, your holiness, that ye abstain you from fornication.

<sup>4</sup> That each of you know how to wield his vessel in holiness, and honour;

<sup>5</sup> not in passion of lust, as heathen men that know not God.

<sup>6</sup> And that no man over-go, neither deceive his brother, in chaffering. For the Lord is avenger of all these things, as we before-said to you, and have witnessed.

<sup>7</sup> For God called not us into uncleanness, but into holiness.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore he that despiseth these things, despiseth not man, but God, that also gave his Holy Spirit in us.

<sup>9</sup> But of the charity of brotherhood, we had no need to write to you; ye yourselves have learned of God, that ye love together;

<sup>10</sup> for ye do that into all brethren in all Macedonia. And, brethren, we pray you, that ye abound more;

<sup>11</sup> and take keep, [*for and give work, or busyness*], that ye be quiet; and that ye do your need, and that ye work with your [*own*] hands, as we have commanded to you;

<sup>12</sup> and that ye wander honestly to them that be without-forth, and that of no man ye desire anything.

<sup>13</sup> For, brethren, we will not, that ye unknow of men that die, that ye be not sorrowful, as others that have not hope.

<sup>14</sup> For if we believe, that Jesus was dead, and rose again, so God shall lead with him them that be dead by Jesus.

<sup>15</sup> And we say this thing to you in the word of the Lord, that we that live, that be left in the coming of the Lord, shall not come before them that be dead.

<sup>16</sup> For the Lord himself shall come down from heaven, in the command-ment [*for in the commanding*], and in the voice of an archangel, and in the trump of God; and the dead men that be in Christ, shall rise again first.

<sup>17</sup> Afterward we that live, that be left, shall be ravished together with them in clouds, meeting Christ in the air; and so evermore we shall be with the Lord.

<sup>18</sup> Therefore be ye comforted together in these words.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> But, brethren, of times and moments ye need not that I write to you.

<sup>2</sup> For ye yourselves know diligently, that the day of the Lord shall come, as a thief in the night.

<sup>3</sup> For when they shall say peace is, and secureness, then sudden death [*for suddenly perishing*] shall come on them, as sorrow to a woman that is with child, and they shall not escape.

<sup>4</sup> But, brethren, ye be not in darknesses, that that day as a thief catch you.

<sup>5</sup> For all ye be the sons of light, and sons of [*the*] day; we be not of night, neither of darknesses.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore sleep we not as others; but wake we, and be we sober.

<sup>7</sup> For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that be drunken, be drunken in the night.

<sup>8</sup> But we that be of the day, be sober, clothed in the habergeon of faith and of charity, and in the helmet of hope of health.

<sup>9</sup> For God putted not us into wrath, but into the purchasing of health, by our Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>10</sup> that was dead for us; that whether we wake, whether we sleep, we live together with him.

<sup>11</sup> For which thing comfort ye together, and edify ye each other, as ye do.

<sup>12</sup> And, brethren, we pray you, that ye know them that travail among you, and be sovereigns [*or be before*] to you in the Lord, and teach you,

<sup>13</sup> that ye have them more abundantly in charity; and for the work of them, have ye peace with them.

<sup>14</sup> And, brethren, we pray you, reprove, [*or chastise*], unpeaceable [*or unquiet*] men. Comfort ye men of little heart, receive ye sick men, be ye patient to all men.

<sup>15</sup> See ye, that no man yield evil for evil to any man; but evermore pursue ye that that is good, each to other, and to all *men*.

<sup>16</sup> Evermore joy ye;

<sup>17</sup> without ceasing pray ye;

<sup>18</sup> in all things do ye thankings. For this is the will of God in Christ Jesus, in all you.

<sup>19</sup> Do not ye quench the Spirit,

<sup>20</sup> do not ye despise prophecies.

<sup>21</sup> But prove ye all things, and hold ye that thing that is good.

<sup>22</sup> Abstain [*ye*] you from all evil species, [*or likeness*].

<sup>23</sup> And God himself of peace make you holy by all things, that your spirit be kept whole, and soul, and body, without complaint, in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>24</sup> God is true, that called you, which also shall do [*work of grace in you*].

<sup>25</sup> Brethren, pray ye for us.

<sup>26</sup> Greet ye well all brethren in holy kiss.

<sup>27</sup> I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read to all holy brethren.

<sup>28</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you. Amen.

## 2ND THESSALONIANS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church of Thessalonians, in God our Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>2</sup> grace to you and peace of God, our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> We owe to do thankings ever-more to God for you, brethren, so as it is worthy, for your faith over-waxeth [*or ever-waxeth*], and the charity of each of you to other aboundeth.

<sup>4</sup> So that we us-selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations. Which ye sustain

<sup>5</sup> into the ensample of the just doom of God, that ye be had worthy in the kingdom of God, for which ye suffer.

<sup>6</sup> If nevertheless it is just before God to requite tribulation to them that trouble you,

<sup>7</sup> and to you that be troubled, rest with us in the showing of the Lord Jesus from heaven, with angels of his virtue,

<sup>8</sup> in the flame of fire, that shall give vengeance to them that know not God, and that obey not to the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>9</sup> Which shall suffer everlasting pains, in perishing from the face of the Lord, and from the glory of his virtue,

<sup>10</sup> when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be made wonderful in all men that believed, for our witnessing is believed on you, in that day.

<sup>11</sup> In which thing also we pray evermore for you, that our God make you worthy to his calling, and [*ful*] fill all the will of his goodness, and the work of faith in virtue;

<sup>12</sup> that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ be clarified in you, and ye in him, by the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> But, brethren, we pray you by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and of our congregation into the same coming [*or the same thing*],

<sup>2</sup> that ye be not moved soon from your wit, neither be afeared, neither by spirit, neither by word, neither by epistle as sent by us, as if the day of the Lord be nigh.

<sup>3</sup> No man deceive you in any manner. For but dissension [*or departing away*] come first, and the man of sin be showed, the son of perdition,



<sup>4</sup> that is adversary, and is enhanced over all thing that is said God, or that is worshipped, so that he sit in the temple of God, and show himself as if he were God.

<sup>5</sup> Whether ye hold not, that yet when I was at you, I said these things to you?

<sup>6</sup> And now what withholdeth [*him*], ye know, that he be showed in his time.

<sup>7</sup> For the private [*or the mystery*] of wickedness worketh now; only that he that holdeth now, hold, till he be done away.

<sup>8</sup> And then that wicked *man* shall be showed, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with lightening, [*or the illumining, or shining*], of his coming;

<sup>9</sup> him, whose coming is by the working of Satan, in all virtue, and signs, and great wonders, false, [*or leasing*],

<sup>10</sup> and in all deceit of wickedness, to them that perish. For that they received not the charity of truth, that they should be made safe.

<sup>11</sup> And therefore God shall send to them a working of error, that they believe to leasing,

<sup>12</sup> that all be deemed, [*or be damned*], which believed not to truth, but consented to wickedness.

<sup>13</sup> But, brethren loved of God, we owe to do thankings evermore to God for you, that God chose us the first fruits into health, in hallowing of Spirit and in faith of truth;

<sup>14</sup> in which also he called you by our gospel, into the getting of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore, brethren, stand ye, and hold ye the traditions, that ye have learned, either by word, either by our epistle.

<sup>16</sup> And our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father, which loved us, and gave everlasting comfort and good hope in grace,

<sup>17</sup> stir [*or admonish*] your hearts, and confirm [*you*] in all good work and word.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, from henceforward pray ye for us, that the word of God run, and be clarified, as *it is* with you;

<sup>2</sup> and that we be delivered from noxious and evil men; for faith is not of all men.

<sup>3</sup> But the Lord is true, that shall confirm you, and shall keep [*us*] from evil.

<sup>4</sup> And, *brethren*, we trust of you in the Lord, for whatever things we command to you, both ye do and shall do.

<sup>5</sup> And the Lord address your hearts, in the charity of God, and in the patience of Christ.

<sup>6</sup> But, brethren, we announce to you in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw you from each brother that wandereth out of order, [*or against good order*], and not after the teaching, that they received of us.

<sup>7</sup> For ye yourselves know, how it behooveth to pursue us. For we were not unpeaceable [*or unquiet*] among you,

<sup>8</sup> neither without our own travail, we ate bread of any man, but in travail and weariness wrought night and day, that we grieved none of you.

<sup>9</sup> Not as we had not power, but that we should give ourselves ensample to you to pursue us.

<sup>10</sup> For also when we were among you, we announced this thing to you, that if any man will not work, neither eat he.

<sup>11</sup> For we have heard that some among you go unrestfully, [*or unquietly, or unpeaceably*], and nothing work, but do curiously.

<sup>12</sup> But we announce to them that be such men, and beseech in the Lord Jesus Christ, that they work with silence, and eat their own bread.

<sup>13</sup> But do not ye, brethren, fail well-doing.

<sup>14</sup> That if any man obey not to our word [*sent*] by epistle, mark ye him, and commune ye not with him, that he be ashamed;

<sup>15</sup> and do not ye guess him as an enemy, but reprove ye him as a brother.

<sup>16</sup> And God himself of peace give to you everlasting peace in all place. The Lord be with you all.

<sup>17</sup> My salutation by the hand of Paul; which sign in each epistle I write thus.

<sup>18</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

## 1ST TIMOTHY

<sup>1</sup> Paul, [*the*] apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of God our Saviour, and of Jesus Christ our hope,

<sup>2</sup> to Timothy, beloved son in the faith, grace and mercy and peace, of God the Father, and of Jesus Christ, our Lord.

<sup>3</sup> As I prayed thee, that thou shouldest dwell at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou shouldest command to some men, that they should not teach other way,

<sup>4</sup> neither give attention to fables and genealogies that be uncertain [*or without end*], which give questions, more than edification of God, that is in the faith.

<sup>5</sup> For the end of the commandment is charity of clean heart, and good conscience, and of faith not feigned.

<sup>6</sup> From which things some men have erred, and be turned into vain speech;

<sup>7</sup> and will to be teachers of the law, and understand not what things they speak, neither of what things they affirm.

<sup>8</sup> And we know that the law is good, if any man use it lawfully;

<sup>9</sup> and witting this thing, that the law is not set [*or not put*] to a just man, but to unjust men and not subject, to wicked men and to sinners, to cursed men and defouled, to slayers of father, and slayers of mother, to manslayers

<sup>10</sup> and lechers, to them that do lechery with men, [*or and fornicators, to them that trespass with males against kind, sellers, or stealers, of men*], leasing-mongers and forsworn, and if any other thing is contrary to the wholesome teaching,

<sup>11</sup> that is after the gospel of the glory of blessed God, which is betaken to me.

<sup>12</sup> I do thankings to him, that comforted me in Christ Jesus our Lord, for he guessed me faithful, and put me in ministry,

<sup>13</sup> that first was a blasphemer, and a pursuer, and full of wrongs. But I have gotten the mercy of God, for I unknowing did in unbelief.

<sup>14</sup> But the grace of our Lord over-abounded, with faith and love that is in Christ Jesus.

<sup>15</sup> A true word and worthy all receiving, for Christ Jesus came into this world to make sinful men safe, of which I am the first.

<sup>16</sup> But therefore I have gotten mercy, that Christ Jesus should show in me first all patience, to the informing of them that shall believe to him into everlasting life.

<sup>17</sup> And to the king of worlds, undeadly, and invisible God alone, be honour and glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>18</sup> I betake this commandment to thee, thou son Timothy, after the prophecies that have been heretofore in thee, that thou travail [*or fight*] in them a good travail,

<sup>19</sup> having faith and good conscience, which some men cast away, and perished about the faith.

<sup>20</sup> Of which is Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I betook to Satan, that they learn not to blaspheme.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore I beseech first of all things, that beseechings, prayers, askings, doing of thankings, be made for all men,

<sup>2</sup> for kings and all that be set in highness, that we lead a quiet and a peaceable life, in all piety and chastity.

<sup>3</sup> For this thing is good and accepted before God, our Saviour,

<sup>4</sup> that will that all men be made safe, and that they come to the knowing of truth.

<sup>5</sup> For one God and one mediator is of God and of men, a man Christ Jesus,

<sup>6</sup> that gave himself redemption for all men. Whose witnessing is confirmed in his times;

<sup>7</sup> in which I am set a preacher and an apostle. For I say truth [*in Christ Jesus*], and I lie not, *that am* a teacher of heathen men in faith and in truth.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore I will, that men pray in all place, lifting up clean hands without wrath and strife [*or disputing*].

<sup>9</sup> Also women in suitable habit, with shamefastness and soberness arraying themselves, not in wreathed hairs, either in gold, or pearls, or precious clothes;

<sup>10</sup> but that that becometh women, promising piety by good works.

<sup>11</sup> A woman learn in silence, with all subjection.

<sup>12</sup> But I suffer not a woman to teach, neither to have lordship on the husband [*or on the man*], but to be in silence.

<sup>13</sup> For Adam was first formed, afterward Eve;

<sup>14</sup> and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived, in breaking of the law [*or prevarication*].

<sup>15</sup> But she shall be saved by generation of children, if she dwell perfectly in faith, and love, and holiness, with soberness.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> A faithful word [*I shall say*]. If any man desireth a bishopric, he desireth a good work.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore it behooveth a bishop to be without reproof, the husband of one wife, sober, prudent, chaste, virtuous, holding hospitality, a teacher;

<sup>3</sup> not given much to wine, not a smiter, but temperate [*or patient*], not full of chiding [*or strife*], not covetous,

<sup>4</sup> well-ruling his house, and have sons subject with all chastity;

<sup>5</sup> for if any man know not how to govern his house, how shall he have diligence [*or the keeping*] of the church of God?

<sup>6</sup> not new converted to the faith, lest he be borne up into pride, and fall into [*the*] doom of the devil.

<sup>7</sup> For it behooveth him to have also good witnessing of them that be with-outforth, that he fall not into reproof, and into the snare of the devil.

<sup>8</sup> Also *it behooveth* deacons to be chaste, not double-tongued, not given much to wine [*or not given to much wine*], not following foul winning;

<sup>9</sup> that have the mystery of faith in clean conscience.

<sup>10</sup> But be they proved first, and minister they so, having no crime, [*or great sin*].

<sup>11</sup> Also *it behooveth* women to be chaste, not backbiting, sober, faithful in all things.

<sup>12</sup> Deacons be husbands of one wife; which govern well their sons and their houses.

<sup>13</sup> For they that minister well, shall get a good degree to themselves, and much trust in the faith, that is in Christ Jesus.

<sup>14</sup> Son Timothy, I write to thee these things, hoping that I shall come soon to thee;

<sup>15</sup> but if I tarry, that thou knowest, how it behooveth thee to live in the house of God, that is the church of living God, a pillar and firmness of truth.

<sup>16</sup> And openly it is a great sacrament of piety, that thing that was showed in flesh, it is justified in Spirit, it appeared to angels, it is preached to heathen men, it is believed in the world, it is taken up into glory.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> But the Spirit saith openly, that in the last times some men shall depart from the faith, giving attention to spirits of error, and to teachings of devils;

<sup>2</sup> that speak leasing in hypocrisy, and have their conscience corrupted,

<sup>3</sup> forbidding to be wedded, and to abstain from meats, which God made to take with doing of thankings, to faithful men, and them that have known the truth.

<sup>4</sup> For each creature of God is good, and nothing is to be cast away, which is taken with doing of thankings;

<sup>5</sup> for it is hallowed by the word of God, and by prayer.

<sup>6</sup> Thou putting forth these things to brethren, shalt be a good minister of Christ Jesus; nourished with words of faith and of good doctrine, which thou hast gotten.

<sup>7</sup> But eschew [*or shun*] thou uncovenable fables, and old women's *fables*; haunt thyself to piety.

<sup>8</sup> For bodily exercitation is profitable to little thing; but piety is profitable to all things, that hath a promise of life that now is, and that is to come.

<sup>9</sup> A true word, and worthy all acceptation or acception.

<sup>10</sup> And in this thing we travail, and be cursed, for we hope in living God, that is Saviour of all men, most of faithful men.

<sup>11</sup> Command thou this thing, and teach.

<sup>12</sup> No man despise thy youth, but be thou ensample of faithful men, in word, in living, in charity, in faith, in chastity.

<sup>13</sup> Till I come, take attention to reading, to exhortation and teaching.

<sup>14</sup> Do not thou little care, the grace which is in thee, that is given to thee by prophecy, with putting on of the hands of [*the*] priesthood.

<sup>15</sup> Think thou these things, in these be thou, that thy profiting be showed to all men.

<sup>16</sup> Take attention to thyself and to doctrine; be busy in them. For thou doing these things, shalt make both thyself safe, and them that hear thee.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Blame thou not an elder man, but beseech [*him*] as a father, young men as brethren;

<sup>2</sup> old women as mothers, young women as sisters, in all chastity.

<sup>3</sup> Honour thou [*the*] widows, that be very widows.

<sup>4</sup> But if any widow hath children of sons, learn she first to govern her house, and requite to father and mother; for this thing is accepted before God.

<sup>5</sup> And she that is a widow verily, and desolate, hope [*she*] into God, and be busy in beseechings and prayers night and day.

<sup>6</sup> For she that is living in delights, is dead [*in soul*].

<sup>7</sup> And command thou this thing, that they be without reproof.

<sup>8</sup> For if any man hath not care of his own, and mostly of his household men or meine, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an unfaithful, [*or heathen*], man.

<sup>9</sup> A widow be chosen [*into the temple*] not less than sixty years, that was wife of one husband,

<sup>10</sup> and hath witnessing in good works, if she nourished children, if she re-ceived poor men to harbour, if she hath washed the feet of holy men, if she ministered to men that suffered trib-ulation, if she followed all good work.

<sup>11</sup> But eschew thou younger widows; for when they have done lechery, they will be wedded in Christ, [*or when they have done lechery in Christ, they will be wedded*],

<sup>12</sup> having damnation, for they have made void the first faith.

<sup>13</sup> Also they idle learn to go about houses, not only idle, but [*they be*] full of words and curious [*or curiosity*], speaking things that it behooveth not.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore I will, that younger widows be wedded, and bring forth children, and be housewives, to give none occasion to the adversary, because of cursed thing.

<sup>15</sup> For now some be turned aback after Satan.

<sup>16</sup> If any faithful man hath widows, minister he to them, that the church be not charged, that it suffice to them that be very widows.

<sup>17</sup> The priests that be well governors, [*that is, truly keep well priesthood*], be they had worthy to double honour; most they that travail in word and teaching.

<sup>18</sup> For the scripture saith, Thou shalt not bridle the mouth of the ox threshing, and, A workman is worthy his hire.

<sup>19</sup> Do not thou receive accusing against a priest, but under twain or three witnesses.

<sup>20</sup> But reprove thou men that sin before all men, that also others have dread.

<sup>21</sup> I pray [*or I adjure*] thee before God, and Jesus Christ, and his chosen angels, that thou keep these things without prejudice, and do nothing in bowing to the other side.

<sup>22</sup> Put thou hands to no man, neither anon commune thou with other men's sins. Keep thyself chaste. [*Put thou hands to no man soon, neither commune thou with other men's sins. Keep thyself chaste.*]

<sup>23</sup> Do not thou yet drink water, but use a little wine, for thy stomach, and for thine oft-falling infirmities.

<sup>24</sup> Some men's sins be open, before going to doom; but of some men they come after [*or they follow*].

<sup>25</sup> And also good deeds be open, and those that have them in other manner, may not be hid.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Whatever servants be under yoke, deem they their lords worthy all honour, lest the name of the Lord and the doctrine [*or his doctrine*] be blasphemed.

<sup>2</sup> And they that have faithful, [*or christian*], lords, despise them not, for they be brethren; but more serve they [*them*], for they be faithful and loved, which be partners of beneficence, [*or good doing*]. Teach thou these things, and admonish thou these things.

<sup>3</sup> If any man teach otherwise, and accordeth not to the wholesome words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to that teaching that is by piety,

<sup>4</sup> he is proud, and knoweth nothing, but languisheth about questions and strivings [*or fightings*] of words, of the which be brought forth envies, strives, blasphemies, evil suspicions,

<sup>5</sup> fightings of men, that be corrupt in soul [*or in reason*], and that be deprived from truth, that deem winning to be piety.

<sup>6</sup> But a great winning is piety, with sufficiency.

<sup>7</sup> For we brought in nothing into this world, and no doubt, that we may not bear anything away.

<sup>8</sup> But we having foods, and with what things we shall be covered [*or clothed*], be we satisfied with these things.

<sup>9</sup> For they that will be made rich, fall into temptation, and into the snare of the devil, and into many unprofitable desires and noxious, which drown men into death and perdition.

<sup>10</sup> For the root of all evils is covetousness, which some men coveting erred from the faith, and besetted them with many sorrows.

<sup>11</sup> But, thou, man of God, flee these things; but follow thou rightwiseness, piety, faith, charity, patience, mildness.

<sup>12</sup> Strive thou a good strife of faith, catch everlasting life, into which thou art called, and hast acknowledged a good acknowledging before many witnesses.

<sup>13</sup> I command to thee before God, that quickeneth all things, and *before* Christ Jesus, that yielded a witnessing under Pilate of Pontii, a good confession,

<sup>14</sup> that thou keep the commandment without wem, without reproof, into the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ;

<sup>15</sup> whom the blessed and alone almighty King of kings and Lord of lords shall show in his times.

<sup>16</sup> Which alone hath undeadliness [*or immortality*], and dwelleth in light, to which *light* no man may come; whom



no man saw, neither may see; to whom glory, and honour, and empire *be* without end. Amen.

<sup>17</sup> Command thou to the rich men of this world, that they understand not highly [*or proudly*], neither that they hope in uncertainty of riches, but in the living God, that giveth to us all things plenteously to use;

<sup>18</sup> to do well, to be made rich in good works, lightly to give, to commune,

<sup>19</sup> to treasure to themselves a good fundament, into time to coming [*or time to come*], that they catch everlasting life.

<sup>20</sup> Thou Timothy, keep the thing [*or the deposit*] betaken to thee, eschew-ing cursed novelties of voices, and opinions of false name of knowing;

<sup>21</sup> which some men promising, about the faith fell down [*or fell down about the faith*]. The grace of God *be* with thee. Amen.

## 2ND TIMOTHY

<sup>1</sup> Paul, [*the*] apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, by the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus,

<sup>2</sup> to Timothy, his most dearworthy son, grace, mercy, and peace of God the Father, and of Jesus Christ, our Lord.

<sup>3</sup> I do thankings to my God, to whom I serve from my progenitors [*or my ancestors*], in clean conscience, that without ceasing I have mind of thee in my prayers, night and day,

<sup>4</sup> desiring to see thee; having mind of thy tears, [*or mindful of thy tears*], that I be [*ful*] filled with joy.

<sup>5</sup> And I bethink of that faith, that is in thee not feigned, which also dwelled first in thine aunt Lois, and in thy mother Eunice. And I am certain, that also in thee.

<sup>6</sup> For which cause I admonish thee, that thou raise again the grace of God, that is in thee by the setting on [*or the on-putting*] of mine hands.

<sup>7</sup> For why God gave not to us the spirit of dread, but of virtue, and of love, and of soberness.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore do not thou shame the witnessing of our Lord Jesus Christ, neither me, his prisoner; but travail thou together in the gospel by the virtue of God;

<sup>9</sup> that delivered us, and called with his holy calling, not after our works, but by his purpose and grace, that is given [*to us*] in Christ Jesus before worldly times;

<sup>10</sup> but now it is open by the lightening of our Saviour Jesus Christ, which destroyed death, and lightened life and uncorruption by the gospel.

<sup>11</sup> In which I am set a preacher and apostle, and master of heathen men.

<sup>12</sup> For which cause also I suffer these things; but I am not confound-ed. For I know to whom I have believed, and I am certain that he is mighty to keep that is taken to my keeping, into that day.

<sup>13</sup> Have thou the form of whole-some words, which thou heardest of me in faith and love in Christ Jesus.

<sup>14</sup> Keep thou the good [*deposit, or thing*], taken to thy keeping by the Holy Ghost, that dwelleth in us.

<sup>15</sup> Thou knowest this, that all that be in Asia be turned away from me, of which is Phygellus and Hermogenes.

<sup>16</sup> The Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus, for oft he refreshed me, and shamed not my chain.

<sup>17</sup> But when he came to Rome, he sought me busily, and found *[me]*.

<sup>18</sup> The Lord give to him to find mercy of God in that day. And how great things he ministered to me at Ephesus, thou knowest better.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore thou, my son, be comforted in grace that is in Christ Jesus.

<sup>2</sup> And what things thou hast heard of me by many witnesses, betake thou these to faithful men, which shall be able also to teach other men.

<sup>3</sup> Travail thou as a good knight of Christ Jesus.

<sup>4</sup> No man holding knighthood to God, *[en]* wrappeth himself with worldly needs, that he please to him, to whom he hath proved himself.

<sup>5</sup> For he that fighteth in a battle, shall not be crowned, but he fight lawfully.

<sup>6</sup> It behooveth an earth-tiller to receive first of the fruits.

<sup>7</sup> Understand thou what things I say. For the Lord shall give to thee understanding in all things.

<sup>8</sup> Be thou mindful that the Lord Jesus Christ of the seed of David hath risen again from death, after my gospel,

<sup>9</sup> in which I travail unto bonds, as working evil, but the word of God is not bound.

<sup>10</sup> Therefore I suffer *[or I sustain]* all things for the chosen, that also they get the health that is in Christ Jesus, with heavenly glory.

<sup>11</sup> A true word *[is this that I say]*, that if we be dead together *[to the world]*, also we shall live together *[in bliss]*;

<sup>12</sup> if we suffer *[or if we sustain]*, we shall reign together *[with Christ]*; if we deny *[him]*, he shall deny us;

<sup>13</sup> if we believe not, he dwelleth faithful, he may not deny himself.

<sup>14</sup> Teach thou these things, witness-ing before God. Do not thou strive in words; for to nothing it is profitable, but to the subverting of men that hear.

<sup>15</sup> Busily keep *[or Take care]* to give thyself a proved, praiseable workman to God, without shame, rightly treating the word of truth.

<sup>16</sup> But eschew thou *[or shun thou]* unholy and vain speeches, for why those profit much to unfaithfulness,

<sup>17</sup> and the word of them creepeth as a canker. Of whom Philetus is, and Hymenaeus,

<sup>18</sup> which felled down from the truth, saying that the rising-again is now done, and they subverted *[or turned upside-down]* the faith of some men.

19 But the firm fundament of God standeth, having this mark, The Lord knoweth which be his, and, Each man that nameth the name of the Lord, departeth from wickedness.

20 But in a great house be not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of tree, and of earth; and so some *be* into honour, and some into despite.

21 Therefore, if any man cleanseth himself from these, he shall be a vessel hallowed into honour, and profitable to the Lord, ready to all good work.

22 And flee thou [*the*] desires of youth, but follow thou rightwiseness, faith, charity, peace, with them that inwardly call [*or that in-call*] the Lord of a clean heart.

23 And eschew thou [*or shun*] foolish questions, and without knowing, [*or discipline*], witting that those engender chidings.

24 But it behooveth the servant of the Lord to chide not; but to be mild to all men, able to teach, patient,

25 with temperance reproving them that against-stand the truth, that some-time God give to them repenting [*or penance*], that they know the truth,

26 and that they rise again from the snares of the devil, of whom they be held prisoners at his will.

## CHAPTER 3

1 But know thou this thing, that in the last days perilous times shall nigh,

2 and men shall be loving them-selves, covetous, high of bearing, proud, blasphemers, not obedient to father and mother, unkind, cursed,

3 without affection, [*or good will*], without peace, false blamers [*or false challengers*], uncontinent, [*or unchaste*], unmild, without benignity,

4 traitors, over-thwart [*or froward*], swollen [*or blown*]*with proud thoughts*, blind, lovers of lusts more than of God,

5 having the likeness of piety, but denying the virtue of it. And eschew thou these *men*.

6 Of these they be that pierce houses, and lead women captives [*or and lead little women captive*], charged with sins, which be led with diverse desires,

7 evermore learning, and never perfectly coming to the science, [*or to the knowing*], of truth.

8 And as Jannes and Jambres against-stood Moses, so these against-stand the truth, men corrupt in understanding [*or in soul*], reprov'd about the faith.

<sup>9</sup> But further they shall not profit, for the unwisdom of them shall be known to all men, as theirs was.

<sup>10</sup> But thou hast gotten my teaching [*or my doctrine*], ordinance, purposing [*or purpose*], faith, long abiding, love, patience,

<sup>11</sup> persecutions, passions, which were made to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what manner persecutions I suffered, and the Lord hath delivered me of all.

<sup>12</sup> And all men that will live faithfully [*or piously*] in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

<sup>13</sup> But evil men and deceivers shall increase into worse, erring [*them-selves*], and sending [*others*] into error.

<sup>14</sup> But dwell thou in these things that thou hast learned, and that be betaken to thee, witting of whom thou hast learned;

<sup>15</sup> for thou hast known holy letters from thy youth, which may learn thee [*or may inform thee*] to health, by faith that is in Christ Jesus.

<sup>16</sup> For all scripture inspired of God is profitable to teach, to reprove, to chastise, [*for*] to learn in rightwiseness,

<sup>17</sup> that the man of God be perfect, learned to all good work[s].

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> I witness before God and Christ Jesus, that shall deem the quick and the dead, by the coming of him, and he kingdom of him,

<sup>2</sup> preach the word, be thou busy covenantably without rest, reprove thou, beseech thou, blame thou in all patience and doctrine.

<sup>3</sup> For time shall be, when men shall not suffer [*or not sustain*] whole-some teaching, but at their desires they shall gather together to themselves masters itching [*or pleasing*] to the ears.

<sup>4</sup> And truly they shall turn away the hearing from truth, but to fables they shall turn.

<sup>5</sup> But wake thou, in all things travail thou, do [*thou*] the work of an evangelist, fulfill thy service, [*or office*], be thou sober.

<sup>6</sup> For I am sacrificed now, and the time of my departing is nigh.

<sup>7</sup> I have striven a good strife, I have ended the course, I have kept the faith.

<sup>8</sup> In the tother time a crown of rightwiseness is kept to me, which the Lord, a just doomsman, shall yield to me in

that day; and not only to me, but also to these that love his coming.

<sup>9</sup> Hie thou to come to me soon.

<sup>10</sup> For Demas, loving this world, hath forsaken me, and went to Thessalonica, Crescens into Galatia, Titus into Dalmatia;

<sup>11</sup> Luke alone is with me. Take thou Mark, and bring with thee; for he is profitable to me into service.

<sup>12</sup> Forsooth I sent Tychicus to Ephesus.

<sup>13</sup> The cloth which I left at Troas at Carpas, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but most the parchments.

<sup>14</sup> Alexander, the treasurer, showed to me much evil; the Lord shall yield to him after his works.

<sup>15</sup> Whom also thou eschew; for he against-stood full greatly our words.

<sup>16</sup> In my first defence no man helped me, but all forsook me; be it not areckoned to them.

<sup>17</sup> But the Lord helped me [*or the Lord stood nigh to me*], and comforted me, that the preaching be [*full*]-filled by me, and that all folks hear, that I am delivered from the mouth of the lion.

<sup>18</sup> And the Lord delivered me from all evil work, and shall make me safe into his heavenly kingdom, to whom *be* glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>19</sup> Greet well Prisca, and Aquila, and the house of Onesiphorus.

<sup>20</sup> Erastus left [*or dwelt*] at Corinth, and I left Trophimus sick at Miletum.

<sup>21</sup> Hie thou to come before winter. Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all brethren, greet thee well.

<sup>22</sup> Our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. The grace of God *be* with you. Amen.

## TITUS

<sup>1</sup> Paul, the servant of God, and apostle of Jesus Christ, by the faith of the chosen of God, and by the knowing of the truth, which is after piety,

<sup>2</sup> into the hope of everlasting life, which *life* God that lieth not, promised before times of the world;

<sup>3</sup> but he hath showed in his times his word in preaching, that is betaken to me, by the commandment of God, our Saviour,

<sup>4</sup> to Titus, most dearworthy [*or beloved*] son, by the common faith, grace and peace of God the Father, and of Christ Jesus, our Saviour.

<sup>5</sup> For cause of this thing I left thee at Crete, that thou amend those things that fail, and ordain priests by cities, as also I assigned to thee.

<sup>6</sup> If any man is without crime, [*or great sin*], an husband of one wife, and hath faithful sons, not in accusation of lechery, or not subject.

<sup>7</sup> For it behooveth a bishop to be without crime, [*as*] a dispenser of God, not proud, not wrathful, not given to drunkenness, not [*a*] smiter, not covetous of foul winning;

<sup>8</sup> but holding hospitality, benign, prudent, sober, just, holy, continent,

<sup>9</sup> taking [*or embracing*] that true word, that is after doctrine; that he be mighty to admonish in wholesome teaching [*or doctrine*], and to reprove them that gainsay.

<sup>10</sup> For there be many unobedient, and vain speakers, and deceivers, most they that be of circumcision,

<sup>11</sup> which it behooveth to be reproved; which subvert all houses, teaching which things it behooveth not, for [*the*] love of foul winning.

<sup>12</sup> And one of them, their proper prophet said, Men of Crete *be* ever more liars, evil beasts, of slow womb.

<sup>13</sup> This witnessing is true. For which cause blame them sore, that they be whole in faith,

<sup>14</sup> not giving attention to fables of Jews, and to commandments of men, that turn away them [*or turn them away*] from truth.

<sup>15</sup> And all things be clean to clean men; but to unclean men and to unfaithful, nothing is clean, for the soul and conscience of them be made unclean.

<sup>16</sup> They acknowledge that they know God, but by deeds they deny *[him]*; when they be abominable, and unbelievable, and reprobable to all good work.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> But speak thou those things that beseem *[or that become]* wholesome teaching;

<sup>2</sup> that old men be sober, chaste, prudent, whole in faith, in love, and patience;

<sup>3</sup> also old women in holy habit, not slanderers *[or backbiters]*, not serving much to wine, well-teaching, that they teach prudence.

<sup>4</sup> *Admonish thou* young women, that they love their husbands, that they love their children;

<sup>5</sup> and that they be prudent, chaste, sober, having care of the house, benign, subject to their husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

<sup>6</sup> Also admonish young men, that they be sober.

<sup>7</sup> In all things give thyself ensample of good works, in teaching, in wholeness *[or in holiness of living]*, that is, in cleanness of soul and body, in firmness *[of virtues]*.

<sup>8</sup> An wholesome word, and unreprouable; that he that is of the contrary side, be ashamed, having none evil thing to say of you.

<sup>9</sup> *Admonish thou* servants to be subject to their lords; in all things pleasing, not gainsaying,

<sup>10</sup> not defrauding, but in all things showing good faith, that they honour in all things the doctrine of God, our Saviour.

<sup>11</sup> For the grace of God, our Saviour, hath appeared to all men,

<sup>12</sup> and taught us, that we forsake wickedness *[or unpiety]*, and worldly desires, and live soberly, and justly, and piously in this world,

<sup>13</sup> abiding the blessed hope and the coming of the glory of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

<sup>14</sup> that gave himself for us, to again-buy us from all wickedness, and make clean to himself a people acceptable, and pursuer of good works.

<sup>15</sup> Speak thou these things, and admonish thou, and reprove thou with all commandment; no man despise thee.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Admonish them to be subjects *[or to be subject]* to princes, and to powers; to obey to that that is said, and to be ready to all good work;



<sup>2</sup> to blaspheme no man, to be not full of chiding, but temperate [*or patient*], showing all mildness to all men.

<sup>3</sup> For we were sometime unwise, unbelieveful, erring, and serving to desires, and to diverse lusts, doing in malice and envy, worthy to be hated, hating each other.

<sup>4</sup> But when the benignity and the manhood [*or the humanity*] of our Saviour God appeared,

<sup>5</sup> not of works of rightwiseness that we did, but by his mercy he made us safe, by [*the*] washing, [*or baptism*], of again-begetting, and again-newing of the Holy Ghost,

<sup>6</sup> whom he shedded [*out*] into us plenteously by Jesus Christ, our Saviour,

<sup>7</sup> that we justified by his grace, be heirs by hope of everlasting life.

<sup>8</sup> A true word is [*this*], and of these things I will that thou confirm others, that they that believe in God, be busy to be above [*or to be before*] others in good works. These things be good, and profitable to men.

<sup>9</sup> And eschew thou foolish questions, and genealogies, and strivings [*or strives*], and fightings of the law; for those be unprofitable and vain.

<sup>10</sup> Eschew [*or Shun*] thou a man heretic, after one and the second correction;

<sup>11</sup> witting that he that is such a manner *man* is subverted, and trespasseth, and is condemned by his own doom.

<sup>12</sup> When I send to thee Artemas, or Tychicus, hie thou [*or haste*] to come to me to Nicopolis; for I have purposed to dwell in winter there.

<sup>13</sup> Busily before send [*or send before*] Zenas, a wise man of law, and Apollos, that nothing fail to them.

<sup>14</sup> They that be of ours, learn to be governors [*or to be before*] in good works, to necessary uses, that they be not without fruit.

<sup>15</sup> All men that be with me greet thee well. Greet thou well them, that love us in [*the*] faith. The grace of God be with you all. Amen.

## PHILEMON

<sup>1</sup> Paul, the bound of Christ Jesus, and Timothy, brother, to Philemon, beloved, and our helper,

<sup>2</sup> and to Apphia, most dear sister, and to Archippus, our even-knight, and to the church that is in thine house,

<sup>3</sup> grace *be* to you, and peace of God our Father, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>4</sup> I do thankings to my God, ever-more making mind of thee, in my prayers,

<sup>5</sup> hearing thy charity, and faith, that thou hast in the Lord Jesus, and to all holy men,

<sup>6</sup> that the communing of thy faith be made open, in knowing of all good thing in Christ Jesus.

<sup>7</sup> And I had great joy and comfort in thy charity, for the entrails of holy men rested [*or were refreshed*] by thee, brother.

<sup>8</sup> For which thing I having much trust in Christ Jesus, to command to thee that that pertaineth to profit;

<sup>9</sup> but I beseech more for charity, since thou art such as the old Paul, and now the bound of Jesus Christ.

<sup>10</sup> I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I in bonds begat,

<sup>11</sup> which sometime was unprofitable to thee, but now profitable, both to thee and to me;

<sup>12</sup> whom I sent again to thee. And receive thou him as mine entrails;

<sup>13</sup> whom I would withhold with me, that he should serve for thee to me in bonds of the gospel;

<sup>14</sup> but without thy counsel I would not do anything, that thy good should not be as of need, but willful.

<sup>15</sup> For peradventure therefore he departed from thee for a time, that thou shouldest receive him without end;

<sup>16</sup> now not as a servant, but for a servant a most dear brother [*or but more than a servant, most dear brother*], most to me; and how much more to thee, both in [*the*] flesh and in the Lord?

<sup>17</sup> Therefore if thou hast me a fellow, receive him as me;

<sup>18</sup> for if he hath anything annoyed thee, either oweth, areckon thou this thing to me.

<sup>19</sup> I, Paul, wrote with mine hand, I shall yield; that I say not to thee, that also thou owest to me thyself.

<sup>20</sup> So, brother, I shall use thee in the Lord; [*full*]-fill thou mine entrails in Christ.

<sup>21</sup> I trusting of thine obedience wrote to thee, witting that thou shalt do over that that I say.

<sup>22</sup> Also make thou ready to me an house to dwell in; for I hope that by your prayers I shall be given to you.

<sup>23</sup> Epaphras, prisoner with me in Christ Jesus, greeteth thee well,

<sup>24</sup> and Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, mine helpers.

<sup>25</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

## HEBREWS

<sup>1</sup> God, that spake sometime by prophets in many manners to our fathers,

<sup>2</sup> at the last in these days he hath spoken to us by the Son; whom he hath ordained heir of all things, and by whom he made the worlds.

<sup>3</sup> Which when also he is the brightness of glory, and [*the*] figure of his substance, and beareth all things by word of his virtue, he maketh purgation of sins, and sitteth on the right half of the majesty in heavens;

<sup>4</sup> and so much is made better than angels, by how much he hath inherited a more diverse name before them.

<sup>5</sup> For to which of the angels said God any time, Thou art my Son, I have engendered thee today? And again, I shall be to him into a Father, and he shall be to me into a Son?

<sup>6</sup> And when again he bringeth in the first begotten Son into the world, he saith, And all the angels of God worship him.

<sup>7</sup> But he saith to angels, He that maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers flame of fire.

<sup>8</sup> But to the Son *he saith*, God, thy throne *is* into the world of world[s]; a rod of equity is the rod of thy realm;

<sup>9</sup> thou hast loved rightwiseness, and hatedst wickedness; therefore the God [*or therefore God*], thy God, anointed thee with oil of joy, more than thy fellows.

<sup>10</sup> And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning foundedest the earth, and heavens be works of thine hands;

<sup>11</sup> they shall perish, but thou shalt perfectly dwell; and all shall wax old as a cloth,

<sup>12</sup> and thou shalt change them as a cloth, and they shall be changed. But thou art the same thyself, and thy years shall not fail.

<sup>13</sup> But to which of the angels said God at any time, Sit thou on my right half, till I put thine enemies a stool of thy feet?

<sup>14</sup> Whether they all be not serving spirits, sent to serve for them that take the heritage of health?

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore more plenteously it behooveth us to keep those things, that we have heard, lest peradventure we float away.

<sup>2</sup> For if that word that was said by angels, was made firm, and each breaking of the law [*or each tres-passing*], and unobedience took just retribution of meed,

<sup>3</sup> how shall we escape, if we despise so great an health? Which, when it had taken beginning to be told out by the Lord, of them that heard, is confirmed into us.

<sup>4</sup> For God witnessed together by miracles [*or signs*], and wonders, and great marvels, and diverse virtues, and partings [*or distributions*] of the Holy Ghost, by his will.

<sup>5</sup> But not to angels God subjected the world that is to coming, of which we speak. [*Forsooth not to angels God subjected the roundness of the earth to come, of which we speak.*]

<sup>6</sup> But some man witnessed in a place, and said, What thing is man, that thou art mindful of him, or man's son, for thou visitest him?

<sup>7</sup> Thou hast made him a little less than angels; thou hast crowned him with glory and honour; and thou hast ordained him on the works of thine hands.

<sup>8</sup> Thou hast made all things subject under his feet. And in that that he subjected all things to him, he left nothing unsubject to him. But now we see not yet all things subject to him;

<sup>9</sup> but we see him that was made a little less than angels, Jesus, for the passion of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he through [*the*] grace of God should taste death for all men.

<sup>10</sup> For it beseemed him, for whom all things, and by whom all things *were made*, which had brought many sons into glory, *and was[the] author [or the maker]* of the health *or salvation* of them, that he had an end by passion.

<sup>11</sup> For he that halloweth, and they that be hallowed, *be* all of one; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

<sup>12</sup> saying, I shall tell thy name to my brethren; in the middle of the church I shall praise thee.

<sup>13</sup> And again, I shall be trusting into him; and again, Lo! I and my children, which God gave to me.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore for children communed to flesh and blood, and he also took part of the same, that by death he should destroy him that had lordship of death, that is to say, the devil,

<sup>15</sup> and that he should deliver them that by dread of death, by all life were bound to servage.

<sup>16</sup> And he took never angels, but he took the seed of Abraham.

<sup>17</sup> Wherefore he ought to be likened to brethren by all things, that he should be made merciful and a faithful

bishop to God, that he should be merciful to the trespasses of the people.

<sup>18</sup> For in that thing in which he suffered, and was tempted, he is mighty to help also them that be tempted.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Therefore, holy brethren, and partners of heavenly calling, behold ye the apostle and the bishop of our confession, Jesus,

<sup>2</sup> which is true to him that made him, as also Moses in all the house of him.

<sup>3</sup> But this *bishop* is had worthy of more glory than Moses, by as much as he hath more honour of the house, that made the house.

<sup>4</sup> For each house is made of some man; he that made all things of nought is God.

<sup>5</sup> And Moses was true in all his house, as a servant, into witnessing of those things that were to be said;

<sup>6</sup> but Christ as a son in his house. Which house we be, if we hold firm trust and glory of hope into the end.

<sup>7</sup> Wherefore as the Holy Ghost saith, Today, if ye have heard his voice,

<sup>8</sup> do not ye harden your hearts, as in wrathing, like the day of temptation in desert;

<sup>9</sup> where your fathers tempted me, and proved, and saw my works forty years.

<sup>10</sup> Wherefore I was wroth to this generation, and I said, Evermore they err in heart, for they knew not my ways;

<sup>11</sup> to which I swore in my wrath, they shall not enter into my rest.

<sup>12</sup> Brethren, see ye, lest peradventure in any of you be an evil heart of unbelief, to depart from the living God.

<sup>13</sup> But admonish yourselves by all days, the while today is named, that none of you be hardened by fallacy [*for falseness*] of sin.

<sup>14</sup> For we be made partners of Christ, if nevertheless we hold the beginning of his substance firm into the end.

<sup>15</sup> While it is said, today, if ye have heard the voice of him, do not ye harden your hearts, as in that wrathing.

<sup>16</sup> For some men hearing wrathed, but not all they that went out of Egypt by Moses.

<sup>17</sup> But to whom was he wrathed forty years? Whether not to them that sinned, whose carrions were cast down in desert?

<sup>18</sup> And to whom swore he, that they should not enter into the rest of him [*or into his rest*], no but to them that were unbelievful?

<sup>19</sup> And we see, that they might not enter into the rest of him for unbelief.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore dread we, lest peradventure while the promise of entering into his rest is left, that any of us be guessed to be away [*or to fail*].

<sup>2</sup> For it is told also to us, as to them. And the word that was heard profited not to them, not mingled to faith of those things that they heard.

<sup>3</sup> For we that have believed, shall enter into rest, as he said, As I swore in my wrath, they shall not enter into my rest. And when the works were made perfect at the ordinance of the world,

<sup>4</sup> he said thus in a place [*or in some place*] of the seventh day, And God rested in the seventh day from all his works.

<sup>5</sup> And in this *place* again, They shall not enter into my rest.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore for it pursueth, that some men shall enter into it, and they to which it was told to before, entered not for their unbelief.

<sup>7</sup> Again, he determineth some day, and saith in David, Today, after so much time of time, as it is before-said, Today if ye have heard his voice, do not ye harden your hearts.

<sup>8</sup> For if Jesus, *that is, Joshua*, had given rest to them, he should never speak of other after this day.

<sup>9</sup> Therefore the sabbath [*or rest*] is left to the people of God.

<sup>10</sup> For he that is entered into his rest, rested of his works, as also God of his.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore haste we to enter into that rest, that no man fall into the same ensample of unbelief.

<sup>12</sup> For the word of God is quick, and speedy in working, and more able to pierce than any twain-edged sword, and stretcheth forth [*till*] to the parting of the soul and of the spirit, and of the jointures and marrows, and [*it is the*] deemer of thoughts, and of intents of hearts.

<sup>13</sup> And no creature is invisible in the sight of God. For all things be naked and open to his eyes, to whom a word to us.

<sup>14</sup> Therefore we that have a great bishop, that pierced heavens, Jesus, the Son of God, hold we the acknowledging [*or the confession*] of our hope.

<sup>15</sup> For we have not a bishop, that may not have compassion on our infirmities, but was tempted by all things by likeness, without sin.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore go we with trust to the throne of his grace, that we get mercy, and find grace in covenable help.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> For each bishop taken of men, is ordained for men in these things that be to God, that he offer gifts and sacrifices for sins.

<sup>2</sup> Which may together sorrow with them, that be unknowing, and err; for also he is environed with infirmity.

<sup>3</sup> And therefore he oweth, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

<sup>4</sup> Neither any man taketh to him honour, but he that is called of God, as Aaron *was*.

<sup>5</sup> So Christ clarified not himself, that he were bishop, but he that spake to him, Thou art my Son, today I engendered thee.

<sup>6</sup> As in another place he saith, Thou art a priest without end, after the order of Melchizedek.

<sup>7</sup> Which in the days of his flesh offered, with great cry and tears, prayers and beseechings to him that might make him safe from death, and was heard for his reverence.

<sup>8</sup> And when he was God's Son, he learned obedience of these things that he suffered;

<sup>9</sup> and he brought to the end [*or he led to perfection*] is made cause of everlasting health to all that obey him,

<sup>10</sup> *and is* called of God a bishop, by the order of Melchizedek.

<sup>11</sup> Of whom *there is* to us a great word for to say, and able to be expounded, for ye be made feeble to hear.

<sup>12</sup> For when ye ought to be masters for a time, again ye need that ye be taught, which be the letters [*or the elements*] of the beginning of God's words. And ye be made those, to whom is need of milk, and not [*of*] firm meat.

<sup>13</sup> For each that is partner of milk, is without part of the word of rightwiseness, for he is a little child.

<sup>14</sup> But of perfect men is firm meat, of them that for custom have [*their*] wits exercised to discretion of good and of evil.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> Therefore we bringing in a word of the beginning of Christ, be we born to the perfection of *him*, not again laying the fundament of penance from dead works, and of the faith to God,



<sup>2</sup> and of teaching of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of rising again of dead men, and of everlasting doom.

<sup>3</sup> And this thing we shall do, if God shall suffer.

<sup>4</sup> But it is impossible, that they that be once enlightened [*or illumined*], and have tasted also an heavenly gift, and be made partners of the Holy Ghost,

<sup>5</sup> and nevertheless have tasted the good word of God, and the virtues of the world to coming [*or to come*],

<sup>6</sup> and be slid far away, that they be renewed again to penance. *Which* again crucify to themselves the Son of God, and have him to scorn.

<sup>7</sup> For the earth that drinketh rain oft coming on it, and bringeth forth covenable herb, to them of which it is tilled, taketh blessing of God.

<sup>8</sup> But that that is bringing forth thorns and briars, is reprovably, and next to curse, whose ending shall be into burning.

<sup>9</sup> But, ye most dearworthy, we trust of you better things, and nearer to health, though we speak so.

<sup>10</sup> For God is not unjust, that he forget your work and love, which ye have showed in his name; for ye have ministered to saints, and minister.

<sup>11</sup> And we covet that each of you show the same busyness to the [*full*]-filling of hope into the end;

<sup>12</sup> that ye be not made slow, but also pursuers of them, which by faith and patience shall inherit the promises.

<sup>13</sup> For God promising to Abraham, for he had none greater, by whom he should swear, swore by himself,

<sup>14</sup> and said, I blessing shall bless thee, and I multiplying shall multiply thee;

<sup>15</sup> and so he long abiding had the promise [*or got repromission*].

<sup>16</sup> For men swear by a greater than themselves, and the end of all their plea, [*for all their controversy, or debate*], is an oath to confirmation.

<sup>17</sup> In which thing God willing to show plenteouslier, to the heirs of his promise the firmness [*or the unmoveableness*] of his counsel, put betwixt an oath,

<sup>18</sup> that by two things unmoveable, by which it is impossible that God lie, we have strongest solace, [*or comfort*], we that flee together to hold the hope that is put forth to us.

<sup>19</sup> Which *hope* as an anchor we have secure to the soul, and firm, and going into the inner things of hiding;

<sup>20</sup> where the before-goer, Jesus, that is made bishop without end by the order of Melchizedek, entered for us.

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> And this Melchizedek, king of Salem, and *[the]* priest of the highest God, which met Abraham, as he turned again from the slaying of the kings, and blessed him;

<sup>2</sup> to whom also Abraham parted tithes of all things; first he is said king of rightwiseness, and afterward king of Salem, that is to say, king of peace,

<sup>3</sup> without father, without mother, without genealogy, neither having beginning of days, neither end of life; and he is likened to the Son of God, and dwelleth priest without end.

<sup>4</sup> But behold ye how great is this *[man]*, to whom Abraham the patriarch gave tithes of the best things.

<sup>5</sup> For men of the sons of Levi taking priesthood have commandment to take tithes of the people, by the law, that is to say, of their brethren, though also they went out of the loins of Abraham.

<sup>6</sup> But he whose generation is not numbered in them, took tithes of Abraham; and he blessed this *Abraham*, which had repromissions.

<sup>7</sup> Without any gainsaying, that that is less, is blessed of the better.

<sup>8</sup> And here deadly men take tithes; but there he beareth witnessing, that he liveth.

<sup>9</sup> And that it be said so, by Abraham also Levi, that took tithes, was tithed;

<sup>10</sup> and yet he was in his father's loins, when Melchizedek met him.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore if perfection was by the priesthood of Levi, for under him the people took the law, what yet was it needful, another priest to rise, by the order of Melchizedek, and not to be said by the order of Aaron?

<sup>12</sup> For why when the priesthood is translated, it is need<sup>[ful]</sup> that also *[the]* translation of the law be made.

<sup>13</sup> But he in whom these things be said, is of another lineage, of which no man was priest to the altar.

<sup>14</sup> For it is open *[or it is openly known]*, that our Lord is born of Judah, in which lineage Moses spake nothing of priests.

<sup>15</sup> And more yet it is known, if by the order of Melchizedek another priest is risen up;

<sup>16</sup> which is not made by the law of fleshly commandment, but by *[the]* virtue of life that may not be undone *[or is indissoluble]*.

<sup>17</sup> For he witnesseth, That thou art a priest without end, by the order of Melchizedek;

<sup>18</sup> that reproving of the command-ment before-going is made, for the unfirmness and unprofit of it.

<sup>19</sup> For why the law brought nothing to perfection, but there is a bringing in of a better hope, by which we nigh to God.

<sup>20</sup> And how great it is, not without swearing, [*that Christ is made priest after the order of Melchizedek*];

<sup>21</sup> but the others be made priests without an oath; but this priest with an oath, by him that said to him, The Lord swore, and it shall not rue him, Thou art a priest without end, by the order of Melchizedek;

<sup>22</sup> in so much Jesus is made [*better*] promiser of the better testament.

<sup>23</sup> And [*soothly*] the others were made many priests, therefore for they were forbidden by death to dwell still;

<sup>24</sup> but this *man*, for he dwelleth without end, hath an everlasting priesthood.

<sup>25</sup> Wherefore also he may save without end, coming nigh by himself to God, and evermore liveth to pray for us.

<sup>26</sup> For it beseemed that such a man were a bishop to us, holy, innocent, undefouled, clean, separated from sinful men, and made higher than heavens;

<sup>27</sup> which hath not need each day, as priests, first for his own guilts to offer sacrifices, and afterward for the people; for he did this thing in offering himself once.

<sup>28</sup> And the law ordained men priests having sickness, [*or frailty*]; but the word of swearing, which is after the law, *ordained* the Son perfect without end.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> But a capital, *that is, a short comprehending of many things*, on those things that be said. We have such a bishop, that sat on the right half of the seat of greatness in heavens,

<sup>2</sup> the minister of saints, and of the very tabernacle, that God made, and not man.

<sup>3</sup> For each bishop is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices; wherefore it is need, that also this *bishop* have something that he shall offer.

<sup>4</sup> Therefore if he were on earth, he were no priest, when there were that should offer gifts by the law,

<sup>5</sup> which serve to the exemplar, [*or figure*], and shadow of heavenly things. As it was answered to Moses, when he should end [*or should make*] the tabernacle, See [*thou*], he said, make thou all things by the exemplar, that is showed to thee in the mount.

<sup>6</sup> But now he hath gotten a better ministry, by so much as he is a mediator of a better testament, which is confirmed with better promises.

<sup>7</sup> For if that first had lacked blame, the place of the second should not have been sought.

<sup>8</sup> For he reproving them saith, Lo! days come, saith the Lord, and I shall make perfect a new testament on the house of Israel, and on the house of Judah;

<sup>9</sup> not like the testament that I made to their fathers, in the day in which I caught their hand, that I should lead them out of the land of Egypt; for they dwelled not perfectly in my testament, and I have despised them, saith the Lord.

<sup>10</sup> But this is the testament which I shall assign [*or I shall dispose*] to the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord, in giving my laws into the souls of them, and into the hearts of them I shall above write them; and I shall be to them into a God [*or into God*], and they shall be to me into a people.

<sup>11</sup> And each man shall not teach his neighbour, and each man his brother, saying, Know thou the Lord; for all men shall know me, from the least to the more of them.

<sup>12</sup> For I shall be merciful to the wickedness of them, and now I shall not bethink on the sins of them.

<sup>13</sup> But in saying a new the former waxed old; and that that is of many days, and waxeth old, is nigh the death.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And the former *testament* had justifyings of worship, and holy thing enduring for a time.

<sup>2</sup> For the tabernacle was made first, in which were candlesticks, and [*a*] board, and setting forth [*or putting forth*] of loaves, which is said holy.

<sup>3</sup> And after the veil, the second tabernacle, that is said *sanctum sanctorum*, *that is, holy of holy things*;

<sup>4</sup> having a golden censer, and the ark of the testament, covered about on each side with gold, in which *was* a pot of gold having manna, and the rod of Aaron that flowered, and the tables of the testament;

<sup>5</sup> on which things were cherubims of glory, overshadowing the propiti-atory, [*or mercyable place*]; of which things it is not now to say by all.

<sup>6</sup> But when these were made thus together, priests entered evermore in the former tabernacle, doing the offices of sacrifices;

<sup>7</sup> but in the second *tabernacle*, the bishop, [*alone*]*entered* once in the year, not without blood, which he offered for his ignorance and the people's.

<sup>8</sup> For the Holy Ghost signified this thing, that not yet the way of saints was opened, while the former tabernacle had state.

<sup>9</sup> Which parable is of this present time, by which also gifts and sacrifices be offered, which may not make a man serving perfect by conscience,

<sup>10</sup> only in meats, and drinks, and diverse washings, and rightwisenesses of flesh, that were set [*till*] to the time of correction.

<sup>11</sup> But Christ being a bishop of goods to coming [*or to come*], *entered* by a larger and perfecter tabernacle, not made by hand, that is to say, not of this making,

<sup>12</sup> neither by blood of goat bucks, or of calves, but by his own blood, entered once into the holy things, that were found by an everlasting redemption.

<sup>13</sup> For if the blood of goat bucks, and of bulls, and the ashes of a cow calf sprinkled, halloweth unclean men to the cleansing of flesh,

<sup>14</sup> how much more the blood of Christ, which by the Holy Ghost offered himself unwemmed to God, shall cleanse our conscience from dead works, to serve God that liveth? [*or to serve to living God?*]

<sup>15</sup> And therefore he is a mediator of the new testament, that by death falling betwixt, into redemption of the trespassings that were under the former testament, they that be called take the behest of everlasting heritage.

<sup>16</sup> For where a testament is, it is need, that the death of the testament-maker come betwixt.

<sup>17</sup> For a testament is confirmed in dead *men*; else it is not worth [*or no worth*], while he liveth, that made the testament.

<sup>18</sup> Wherefore neither the first testament was hallowed without blood.

<sup>19</sup> For when each commandment of the law was read of Moses to all the people, he took the blood of calves, and of bucks of goats, with water, and red wool, and hyssop, and besprinkled both that book and all the people,

<sup>20</sup> and said, This is the blood of the testament that God commanded to you.

<sup>21</sup> Also he sprinkled with blood the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the service in like manner.

<sup>22</sup> And almost all things be cleansed in blood by the law; and without shedding of blood remission of sins is not made.

<sup>23</sup> Therefore it is need, that the exemplars of heavenly things be cleansed with these things; but those heavenly things with better sacrifices than these.

<sup>24</sup> For Jesus entered not into holy things made by hands, *that be[the]* exemplars of very things, but into heaven itself, that he appear now to the face of God for us;

<sup>25</sup> neither that he offer himself oft, as the bishop entered into holy things by all years in alien blood,

<sup>26</sup> else it behooved him to suffer oft from the beginning of the world; but now once in the ending of the worlds, to the destruction of sin by his sacrifice he appeared.

<sup>27</sup> And as it is ordained to men, once to die, but after this is the doom,

<sup>28</sup> so Christ was offered once, to void, *[or do away]*, the sins of many men; the second *time* he shall appear without sin to men that abide him into health.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> For the law having a shadow of good things to come, not that image of things, may never make men nighing *[or coming nigh]* perfect by those same sacrifices, which they offer without ceasing by all years;

<sup>2</sup> else they should have ceased to be offered, for as much as the worshippers cleansed once, had not furthermore conscience of sin.

<sup>3</sup> But in them *[by oft offering]*, mind of sins is made by all years.

<sup>4</sup> For it is impossible that sins be done away by blood of bulls, and of bucks of goats.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore he entering into the world, saith, Thou wouldest not sacrifice and offering; but thou hast shaped a body to me;

<sup>6</sup> *[and]* burnt sacrifices also for sin pleased not to thee.

<sup>7</sup> Then I said, Lo! I come; in the beginning of the book it is written of me, that I do thy will, God.

<sup>8</sup> He saying before, That thou wouldest not sacrifices, and offerings, and burnt sacrifices for sin, nor those things be pleasant to thee, which be offered by the law,

<sup>9</sup> then I said, Lo! I come, that I do thy will, God. He doeth away the first, that he make steadfast the second.

<sup>10</sup> In which will we be hallowed by the offering of the body of Christ Jesus once.

<sup>11</sup> And each priest is ready ministering each day, and oft times offering the same sacrifices, which may never do away sins.

12 But this *man* offering one sacrifice for sins, for evermore sitteth in [*or on*] the right half of God the Father;

13 from thenceforth abiding, till his enemies be put a stool of [*or under*] his feet.

14 For by one offering he made perfect for ever[*more*] hallowed men.

15 And the Holy Ghost witnesseth to us; for after that he said,

16 This is the testament, which I shall witness to them after those days, the Lord saith, in giving my laws in the hearts of them, and in the souls of them I shall above write them;

17 and now I shall no more think on the sins and the wickedness of them.

18 And where remission of these is, now is there none offering for sin.

19 Therefore, brethren, having trust into the entering of holy things, in the blood of Christ,

20 which [*he*] hallowed to us a new way, and living by the covering [*or by a veil*], that is to say, his flesh,

21 and *we having* the great priest on the house of God,

22 nigh we with very heart, in the plenty of faith; and be our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with clean water,

23 and hold we the confession of our hope, bowing to no side, [*or unbowing, or unpliant*]; for he is true that hath made the promise.

24 And behold we together in the stirring of charity, and of good works;

25 not forsaking our gathering together, as it is the custom to some men, but comforting [*them*], and by so much the more, by how much ye see the day nighing.

26 For why now a sacrifice for sins is not left to us, that sin willfully, after that we have taken the knowing of truth.

27 For why some abiding of doom is dreadful, and the pursuing of fire, which shall waste adversaries.

28 Who that breaketh Moses' law, dieth without any mercy, by two or three witnesses;

29 how much more guess ye, that he deserveth worse torments, which defouleth the Son of God, and holdeth the blood of the testament polluted, in which he is hallowed, and doeth despite [*or wrong*] to the Spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that said, To me vengeance, and I shall yield. And again, For the Lord shall deem his people.

31 It is fearedful to fall into the hands of God living. [*It is fearful to fall into the hands of living God.*]

<sup>32</sup> And have ye mind on the former days, in which ye were enlightened, and suffered great strife of passions.

<sup>33</sup> And in the tother ye were made a spectacle by shames, and tribulations; in another ye were made fellows of men living so.

<sup>34</sup> For also to bound men ye had compassion, and ye received with joy the robbing of your goods, knowing that ye have a better and a dwelling substance.

<sup>35</sup> Therefore do not ye lose your trust, which hath great rewarding.

<sup>36</sup> For patience is needful to you, that ye do the will of God, and bring again the promise.

<sup>37</sup> For yet a little, and he that is to come shall come, and he shall not tarry.

<sup>38</sup> For my just man liveth of faith; that if he withdraweth himself, he shall not please to my soul.

<sup>39</sup> But we be not the sons of withdrawing away into perdition, but of faith into *[the]* getting of soul.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> But faith is the substance of things that be to be hoped *[or the substance of things to be hoped]*, and an argument, *[or certainty]*, of things not appearing.

<sup>2</sup> And in this *faith* old men have gotten witnessing.

<sup>3</sup> By faith we understand that the worlds were made *[or were shaped]* by God's word, that visible things were made of invisible things.

<sup>4</sup> By faith Abel offered a much more sacrifice than Cain to God *[or Abel offered full much more host, or sacrifice, to God than Cain]*, by which he got witnessing to be just, for God bare witnessing to his gifts; and by that *faith* he dead speaketh yet.

<sup>5</sup> By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death; and he was not found, for the Lord translated him. For before *[the]* translation he had witnessing that he pleased God.

<sup>6</sup> And it is impossible to please God without faith. For it behooveth that a man coming to God, believe that he is, and that he is *[a]* rewarder of men that seek him.

<sup>7</sup> By faith Noah dreaded, through answer taken of these things that yet were not seen, and shaped a ship *[or an ark]* into the health of his house; by which he condemned the world, and is ordained heir of rightwiseness, which is by faith.



<sup>8</sup> By faith he that is called Abraham, obeyed to go out into a place, which he should take into heritage; and he went out, not witting whither he should go.

<sup>9</sup> By faith he dwelt in the land of promise, as in an alien *land*, dwelling in little houses with Isaac and Jacob, even-heirs of the same promise.

<sup>10</sup> For he abode a city having foundations, whose craftsman and maker is God.

<sup>11</sup> By faith also that Sarah barren, took virtue in conceiving of seed, yea, against the time of age; for she believed him true, that had promised.

<sup>12</sup> For which thing of one, and yet nigh dead, there were born as stars of heaven in multitude, and as gravel, that is at the seaside out of number [*or unnumberable*].

<sup>13</sup> By faith all these be dead, when the behests were not taken, but they beheld them afar, and greeting them well, and acknowledged that they were pilgrims, and harboured men on the earth.

<sup>14</sup> And they that say these things, signify that they seek a country.

<sup>15</sup> If they had had mind of that, of which they went out, they had time of turning again;

<sup>16</sup> but now they desire a better, that is to say, heavenly. Therefore God is not confounded, [*or ashamed*], to be called the God of them; for he made ready to them a city.

<sup>17</sup> By faith Abraham offered Isaac, when he was tempted; and he offered the one begotten [*son*], which had taken the behests;

<sup>18</sup> to whom it was said, For in Isaac the seed shall be called to thee.

<sup>19</sup> For he deemed, that God is mighty to raise him, yea, from death; wherefore he took him also into a parable.

<sup>20</sup> By faith also of things to coming [*or to come*], Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau.

<sup>21</sup> By faith Jacob dying blessed all the sons of Joseph, and honoured the highness of his staff [*or of his rod*].

<sup>22</sup> By faith Joseph dying had mind of the passing forth of the children of Israel, and commanded of his bones.

<sup>23</sup> By faith Moses born, was hid three months of his father and mother, for that they saw the young child fair, [*or seemly*]; and they dreaded not the commandment of the king.

<sup>24</sup> By faith Moses was made great, and denied that he was the son of Pharaoh's daughter,

<sup>25</sup> and chose more [*or rather*] to be tormented with the people of God, than to have mirth of temporal sin;

<sup>26</sup> deeming the reproof of Christ more riches, than the treasures of *[the]* Egyptians; for he beheld into the rewarding.

<sup>27</sup> By faith he forsook Egypt, and dreaded not the hardness of the king; for he abode, as seeing him that was invisible.

<sup>28</sup> By faith he hallowed pask, and the shedding out of blood, that he that destroyed the first things off*[the]*Egyptians, should not touch them.

<sup>29</sup> By faith they passed the Red Sea, as by dry land, which thing Egyptians assaying were devoured *[in the waters]*.

<sup>30</sup> By faith the walls of Jericho felled down, by compassing of seven days.

<sup>31</sup> By faith Rahab the whore received the spies with peace, and perished not with unbelieveful men.

<sup>32</sup> And what yet shall I say? For time shall fail to me telling of Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, and Samuel, and of other prophets;

<sup>33</sup> which by faith overcame realms, wrought rightwiseness, got repromissions; they stopped the mouths of lions,

<sup>34</sup> they quenched the fierceness of fire, they drove away the edge of sword, they recovered of sickness, they were made strong in battle, they turned the hosts of aliens.

<sup>35</sup> Women received their dead *children* from death to life; but others were held forth, *[or died]*, not taking redemption, that they should find a better again-rising.

<sup>36</sup> And others assayed scornings and beatings, moreover and bonds and prisons.

<sup>37</sup> They were stoned, they were sawed, they were tempted, they were dead in slaying of sword. They went about in badger skins, and in skins of goats, needy, anguished, tormented;

<sup>38</sup> to which the world was not worthy. They wandered in wilder-nesses, and in mountains and dens, and *[in]* caves of the earth.

<sup>39</sup> And all these, proved by witnessing of faith, took not repromission;

<sup>40</sup> for God provided some better thing for us, that they should not be made perfect without us.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> Therefore we that have so great a cloud of witnesses put to *[us]*, do we away all charge, and sin standing about us, and by patience run we to the battle, *[or the strife, or fight]*, purposed to us,

<sup>2</sup> beholding into the maker of faith, and the perfect ender, Jesus; which when joy was purposed to him, he suffered the

cross, and despised confusion, and sitteth on the right half of the seat of God.

<sup>3</sup> And bethink ye on him that suffered such gainsaying of sinful men against himself, that ye be not made weary, failing in your souls.

<sup>4</sup> For ye against-stood not yet unto blood, fighting against sin.

<sup>5</sup> And ye have forgotten the comfort that speaketh to you as to sons, and saith, My son, do not thou despise the teaching [*or the discipline*] of the Lord, neither be thou made weary, the while thou art chastised of him.

<sup>6</sup> For the Lord chastiseth him that he loveth; he beateth [*or scourgeth*] every son that he receiveth.

<sup>7</sup> Abide ye still in chastising [*or discipline*]; God proffereth [*or offereth*] him to you as to sons. For what son is it, whom the father chastiseth not?

<sup>8</sup> That if ye be out of chastising [*or discipline*], whose partners be ye all made, then ye be adulterers, and not sons.

<sup>9</sup> And afterward we had fathers of our flesh, teachers, and we with reverence dreaded them. Whether not much more we shall obey to the Father of spirits, and we shall live?

<sup>10</sup> And they in time of few days taught us by their will; but this Father teacheth to that thing that is profitable, in receiving the hallowing of him.

<sup>11</sup> And each chastising in [*this*] present *time* seemeth to be not of joy, but of sorrow; but afterward it shall yield fruit of rightwiseness most peaceable to men exercised by it.

<sup>12</sup> For which thing raise ye [*up*] slow hands, and knees unbound,

<sup>13</sup> and make ye rightful steps to your feet; that no man halting err, but more be healed.

<sup>14</sup> Pursue ye peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see God.

<sup>15</sup> Behold ye, that no man fail to the grace of God, that no root of bitterness burrowing upward hinder [*us*], and many be defouled by it;

<sup>16</sup> that no man be lecher, either unholy, as Esau, which for one [*meal's*] meat sold his first things, [*or heritage*].

<sup>17</sup> For know ye, that afterward he coveting to inherit blessing, was reproved. For he found not place of penance, though he sought it with tears.

<sup>18</sup> But ye have not come to the fire able to be touched, and able to come to, and to the whirlwind [*or the great wind*], and mist, and tempest,

<sup>19</sup> and sound of trump, and voice of words; which they that heard, excused them, that the word should not be made to them.

<sup>20</sup> For they bare not that that was said, And if a beast touched the hill, it was stoned [*or it shall be stoned*].

<sup>21</sup> And so dreadful it was that was seen, that Moses said, I am afeared, and full of trembling.

<sup>22</sup> But ye have come nigh to the hill [*of*] Zion, and to the city of God living [*or of living God*], the heavenly Jerusalem, and to the multitude of many thousand angels,

<sup>23</sup> and to the church of the first men, which be written in heavens, and to God, doomsman of all, and to the spirit of just perfect men,

<sup>24</sup> and to Jesus, mediator of the new testament, and to the sprinkling of blood, speaking better than Abel [*or better speaking than Abel's blood*].

<sup>25</sup> See ye, that ye forsake [*or refuse*] not the speaker; for if they that forsaked [*or refusing*] him that spake on the earth, escaped not, much more we that turn away from him that speaketh to us from heavens.

<sup>26</sup> Whose voice then moved the earth, but now he again promiseth, and saith, Yet once and I shall move not only the earth, but also heaven.

<sup>27</sup> And that he saith, Yet once, he declareth the translation of moveable things, as of made things, that those things dwell, that be unmoveable.

<sup>28</sup> Therefore we receiving the kingdom unmoveable, have we grace, by which serve we pleasing to God with dread and reverence.

<sup>29</sup> For our God is fire that wasteth.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> The charity of brotherhood dwell in you,

<sup>2</sup> and do not ye forget hospitality; for by this some men pleased to angels, that were received to harbour.

<sup>3</sup> Think ye on bound men, as ye were together bound, and of travailing men, as yourselves dwelling in the body.

<sup>4</sup> Wedding is in all things honourable, and bed unwemmed [*or undefouled*]; for God shall deem fornicators and adulterers.

<sup>5</sup> Be *your* manners without covetousness, satisfied with present things; for he said, I shall not leave thee, neither forsake,

<sup>6</sup> so that we say trustily, The Lord is an helper to me; I shall not dread what a man shall do to me.

<sup>7</sup> Have ye mind of your sovereigns, that have spoken to you the word of God; of whom behold ye the going out of living, and pursue ye the faith of them,

<sup>8</sup> Jesus Christ, yesterday, and today, he is also into worlds.

<sup>9</sup> Do not ye be led away with diverse and strange teachings. For it is best to stablish the heart with grace, not with meats, which profited not to men wandering [*for going*] in them.

<sup>10</sup> We have an altar, of which they that serve to the tabernacle, have not power [*or leave*] to eat.

<sup>11</sup> For of which beasts the blood is borne in for sin into holy things by the bishop, the bodies of them be burnt without the castles.

<sup>12</sup> For which thing Jesus, that he should hallow the people by his blood, suffered without the gate.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore go we out to him without the castles, bearing his reproof.

<sup>14</sup> For we have not here a city dwelling, but we seek a city to coming [*or to come*].

<sup>15</sup> Therefore by him offer we a sacrifice of praising evermore to God, that is to say, the fruit of lips acknowledging to his name.

<sup>16</sup> And do not ye forget well-doing, and communing; for by such sacrifices God is well-served.

<sup>17</sup> Obey ye to your sovereigns, and be ye subject to them; for they perfectly wake, as to yielding reason for your souls, that they do this thing with joy, and not sorrowing; for this thing speedeth not to you.

<sup>18</sup> Pray ye for us, and we trust that we have good conscience in all things, willing to live well.

<sup>19</sup> Moreover I beseech you to do [*this thing*], that I be restored the sooner to you.

<sup>20</sup> And God of peace, that led out from death the great shepherd of sheep, in the blood of [*the*] ever-lasting testament, our Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>21</sup> shape you in all good thing [*or make you able in each good work*], that ye do the will of him; and he do in you that thing that shall please before him, by Jesus Christ, to whom be glory into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>22</sup> And, brethren, I pray you, that ye suffer a word of solace; for by few things I have written to you.

<sup>23</sup> Know ye our brother Timothy, that is sent forth, with whom if he shall come more hastily, I shall see you.

<sup>24</sup> Greet ye well all your sovereigns, and all holy men [*or all saints*]. The brethren of Italy greet you well.

<sup>25</sup> The grace of God be with you all. Amen.

## JAMES

<sup>1</sup> James, the servant of God, and of our Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve kindreds, that be in scattering abroad, health.

<sup>2</sup> My brethren, deem ye all joy, when ye fall into diverse temptations,

<sup>3</sup> witting that the proving of your faith worketh patience;

<sup>4</sup> and patience hath a perfect work, that ye be perfect and whole, and fail in nothing.

<sup>5</sup> And if any of you needeth wisdom, ask he of God, which giveth to all men largely, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given to him.

<sup>6</sup> But ask he in faith, and doubt nothing; for he that doubteth, is like to a wave of the sea, which is moved and borne about of the wind.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore guess not that man, that he shall take anything of the Lord.

<sup>8</sup> A man double in soul is unstable in all his ways.

<sup>9</sup> And a meek brother have glory in his enhancing,

<sup>10</sup> and a rich man in his lowness; for as the flower of grass he shall pass.

<sup>11</sup> The sun rose up with heat, and dried the grass [*or the hay*], and the flower of it felled down, and the fairness of his cheer perished; and so a rich man withereth in his ways.

<sup>12</sup> Blessed is the man, that suffereth temptation; for when he shall be proved, he shall receive the crown of life, which God promised to men that love him.

<sup>13</sup> No man when he is tempted, say, that he is tempted of God; for why God is not a tempter of evil things, for he tempteth no man.

<sup>14</sup> But each man is tempted, drawn and stirred, of his own coveting. [*Soothly each man is tempted of his own coveting, drawn from reason, and snared, or deceived.*]

<sup>15</sup> Afterward [*or Then*] coveting, when it hath conceived, bringeth forth sin; but sin, when it is [*ful*] filled, engendereth death.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore, my most dearworthy brethren, do not ye err.

<sup>17</sup> Each good gift, and each perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is none other changing, nor over-shadowing of reward.

<sup>18</sup> For willfully he begat us by the word of truth, that we be a beginning of his creature.

<sup>19</sup> Know ye, my brethren most loved, be each man swift to hear, but slow to speak, and slow to wrath;

<sup>20</sup> for the wrath of man worketh not the rightwiseness of God.

<sup>21</sup> For which thing cast ye away all uncleanness, and plenty of malice, and in mildness, receive ye the word that is planted, that may save your souls.

<sup>22</sup> But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves.

<sup>23</sup> For if any man is an hearer of the word, and not a doer, this shall be likened to a man that beholdeth the cheer of his birth in a mirror;

<sup>24</sup> for he beheld himself, and went away, and anon he forgot which [*or what*] he was.

<sup>25</sup> But he that beholdeth into the law of perfect freedom, and dwelleth in it, and is not made a forgetful hearer, but a doer of work, this shall be blessed in his deed.

<sup>26</sup> And if any man guesseth himself to be religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiveth his heart, the religion of him is vain.

<sup>27</sup> A clean religion, and unwemmed with God and the Father, is this, to visit fatherless and motherless children, and widows in their tribulation, and to keep himself undefouled from this world.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> My brethren, do not ye have the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ of glory, in acception of persons. [*My brethren, do not in acception, or taking, of persons, have the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ of glory.*]

<sup>2</sup> For if a man that hath a golden ring, and in a fair clothing, cometh in your company, and a poor man entereth in a foul clothing,

<sup>3</sup> and if ye behold into him that is clothed with clear clothing, and if ye say to him, Sit thou here well; but to the poor man ye say, Stand thou there, either sit under the stool of my feet;

<sup>4</sup> whether ye deem not with your-selves, and be made doomsmen of wicked thoughts?

<sup>5</sup> Hear ye, my most dearworthy brethren, whether God chose not poor men in this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom, that God promised to men that love him?

<sup>6</sup> But ye have despised the poor man. Whether rich men oppress not you by power, and they draw you to dooms?

<sup>7</sup> Whether they blaspheme not the good name, that is called to help on you? [*or that is in-called of you?*]

<sup>8</sup> Nevertheless if ye perform the King's law, by scriptures, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.

<sup>9</sup> But if ye take persons, ye work sin, and be reprov'd of the law, as trespassers [*or as transgressors*].

<sup>10</sup> And whoever keepeth all the law, but offendeth in one, he is made guilty of all.

<sup>11</sup> For he that said, Thou shalt do no lechery [*or Thou shalt not do lechery*], said also, Thou shalt not slay; that if thou doest no lechery, but thou slayest, thou art made [*a*] trespasser of the law.

<sup>12</sup> Thus speak ye, and thus do ye, as beginning to be deemed by the law of freedom.

<sup>13</sup> For why doom without mercy is to him, that doeth no mercy; but mercy above raiseth doom.

<sup>14</sup> My brethren, what shall it profit, if any man say that he hath faith, but he hath not works? whether faith shall be able to save him?

<sup>15</sup> And if a brother or sister be naked, and have need of each day's livelode [*or lifelode*],

<sup>16</sup> and if any of you say to them, Go ye in peace, be ye made hot, and be ye [*full*]-filled; but if ye give not to them those things that be necessary to the body, what shall it profit?

<sup>17</sup> So also faith, if it hath not works, is dead in itself.

<sup>18</sup> But some man shall say, Thou hast faith, and I have works; show thou to me thy faith without works, and I shall show to thee my faith of works.

<sup>19</sup> Thou believest, that one God is; thou doest well; and devils believe, and [*together*] tremble.

<sup>20</sup> But wilt thou know, thou vain man, that faith without works is idle?

<sup>21</sup> Whether Abraham, our father, was not justified of works, offering Isaac, his son, on the altar?

<sup>22</sup> Therefore thou seest, that faith wrought with his works, and his faith was [*ful*] filled of works.

<sup>23</sup> And the scripture was [*ful*] filled, saying, Abraham believed to God, and it was areckoned to him to rightwiseness, and he was called the friend of God.

<sup>24</sup> Ye see that a man is justified of works, and not of faith only.

<sup>25</sup> In like manner, whether also Rahab, the whore, was not justified of works, and received the messengers, and sent them out by another way?

<sup>26</sup> For as the body without spirit is dead, so also faith without works is dead.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> My brethren, do not ye be made many masters, witting that ye take the more doom.



<sup>2</sup> For all we offend in many things. If any man offendeth not in word, this is a perfect man, for also he may lead about all the body with a bridle.

<sup>3</sup> For if we put bridles into horses' mouths, for to consent to us, and we lead about all the body of them.

<sup>4</sup> And lo! ships, when they be great, and be driven of strong winds, yet they be borne about of a little rudder, where the moving of the governor will.

<sup>5</sup> So also the tongue is but a little member, and raiseth great things. Lo! how little fire burneth [*or kindleth*] a full great wood.

<sup>6</sup> And our tongue is fire, the university of wickedness. The tongue is ordained in our members, which defouleth all the body; and it is enflamed, [*or set afire*], of hell, and enflameth the wheel of our birth.

<sup>7</sup> And all the kind of beasts, and of fowls, and of serpents, and of others is chastised, and those be made tame of man's kind;

<sup>8</sup> but no man may chastise the tongue, for it is an unpeaceable evil, and full of deadly venom.

<sup>9</sup> In it we bless God, the Father, and in it we curse men, that be made to the likeness of God.

<sup>10</sup> Of the same mouth passeth [*or cometh*] forth blessing and cursing. My brethren, it behooveth not that these things be done so.

<sup>11</sup> Whether a well of the same hole bringeth forth sweet and salt water?

<sup>12</sup> My brethren, whether a fig tree may make grapes, either a vine figs? So neither salt water may make sweet water.

<sup>13</sup> Who is wise, and taught among you? show he of good living his working [*or his work*], in mildness of his wisdom.

<sup>14</sup> That if ye have bitter envy, and strivings [*or strives*] be in your hearts, do not ye have glory, and be liars against the truth.

<sup>15</sup> For this wisdom is not from above coming down, but earthly, and beastly, and fiendly.

<sup>16</sup> For where is envy and strife, there is unsteadfastness and all shrewd work.

<sup>17</sup> But wisdom that is from above, first it is chaste, afterward peaceable, mild, able to be counselled [*or persuadable*], consenting to good things, full of mercy and of good fruits, deeming without feigning.

<sup>18</sup> And the fruit of rightwiseness is sown in peace, to men that make peace.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Whereof *be* battles and chidings among you? Whether not of your covetings, that fight in your members?

<sup>2</sup> Ye covet, and ye have not; ye slay, and ye have envy, and ye may not get. Ye chide, and make battle; and ye have not, for that ye ask not.

<sup>3</sup> Ye ask, and ye receive not; for that ye ask evil, as ye show openly in your covetings.

<sup>4</sup> Adulterers, know not ye, that the friendship of this world is enemy [*or enmity*] to God? Therefore whoever will be the friend of this world, is made the enemy of God.

<sup>5</sup> Whether ye guess, that the scripture saith vainly, The spirit that dwelleth in you, coveteth to envy?

<sup>6</sup> But he giveth the more grace; for which thing he saith, God withstandeth proud men, but to meek men he giveth grace.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore be ye subject to God; but withstand ye the devil, and he shall flee from you.

<sup>8</sup> Nigh ye to God, and he shall nigh to you. Ye sinners, cleanse ye the hands, and ye double in soul [*or ye double of will*], purge ye the hearts.

<sup>9</sup> Be ye wretches, and wail ye [*or weep ye*]; your laughing be turned into weeping, and [*your*] joy into sorrow of heart.

<sup>10</sup> Be ye meeked in the sight of the Lord, and he shall enhance you.

<sup>11</sup> My brethren, do not ye backbite each other. He that backbiteth his brother, either that deemeth his brother, backbiteth the law, and deemeth the law. And if thou deemest the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a doomsman.

<sup>12</sup> But one is Maker of the law, and Judge, that may lose and deliver. And who art thou, that deemest thy neighbour?

<sup>13</sup> Lo! now ye, that say, Today either tomorrow we shall go into that city, and there we shall dwell a year, and we shall make merchandise, and we shall make winning;

<sup>14</sup> which know not, what is to you in the morrow. For what is your life? A smoke [*or A vapour*] appearing at a little time, and afterward it shall be wasted.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore that ye say, If the Lord will, and if we live, we shall do this thing, either that thing.

<sup>16</sup> And now ye make full out joy in your prides; every such joying is wicked.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore it is sin to him, that knoweth to do good, and doeth not.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Do now, ye rich men, weep ye, yelling in your wretchednesses that shall come to you.

<sup>2</sup> Your riches be rotten, and your clothes be eaten of moths.

<sup>3</sup> Your gold and silver hath rusted, and the rust of them shall be to you into witnessing, and shall eat your flesh, as fire. Ye have treasured to you wrath in the last days.

<sup>4</sup> Lo! the hire of your workmen, that reaped your fields, which is defrauded of you, crieth; and the cry of them hath entered into the ears of the Lord of hosts.

<sup>5</sup> Ye have eaten on the earth, and in your lecheries ye have nourished your hearts. In the day of slaying

<sup>6</sup> ye brought, and slew the just Man, and he against-stood not you. [*ye led to, and slew the just man, and he withstood you not.*]

<sup>7</sup> Therefore, brethren, be ye patient, till to the coming of the Lord. Lo! an earth-tiller abideth [*the*] precious fruit of the earth, patiently suffering, till he receive timeful and lateful fruit.

<sup>8</sup> And be ye patient, and confirm ye your hearts, for the coming of the Lord shall nigh.

<sup>9</sup> Brethren, do not ye be sorrowful [*or do not ye be scornful*] each to other, that ye be not deemed. Lo! the judge standeth nigh before the gate.

<sup>10</sup> Brethren, take ye ensample of evil going out, and of long abiding, and travail, [*or and of long abiding of travail*], and of patience, the prophets, that spake to you in the name of the Lord.

<sup>11</sup> Lo! we bless them that suffered. Ye have heard the patience of Job, and ye saw the end of the Lord, for the Lord is merciful, and doing mercy.

<sup>12</sup> Before all things, my brethren, do not ye swear, neither by heaven, neither by earth, neither by whatever other oath. But be your word Yea, yea, Nay, nay, that ye fall not under doom.

<sup>13</sup> And if any of you is sorrowful, [*or heavy*], pray he with patient soul, and say he a psalm.

<sup>14</sup> If any of you is sick, lead he in priests of the church, and pray they for him, and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord;

<sup>15</sup> and the prayer of faith shall save the sick man [*or shall save the sick*], and the Lord shall make him light; and if he be in sins, they shall be forgiven to him.

<sup>16</sup> Therefore acknowledge ye each to other your sins, and pray ye each for other, that ye be saved. For the continual prayer of a just man is much worth.

<sup>17</sup> Elijah was a deadly man like us, and in prayer he prayed, that it should not rain on the earth, and it rained not three years and six months.

<sup>18</sup> And again he prayed, and heaven gave rain, and the earth gave his fruit.

<sup>19</sup> And, brethren, if any of you erreth from truth, and any converteth him,

<sup>20</sup> he oweth to know, that he that maketh a sinner to be turned from the error of his way, shall save the soul of him from death, and covereth the multitude of sins. [*Amen.*]

## 1ST PETER

<sup>1</sup> Peter, apostle of Jesus Christ, to the chosen men, to the comelings of scattering abroad, [*for the chosen guests, or comelings, of dispersion, or the scattering abroad*], of Pontus, of Galatia, of Cappadocia, of Asia, and of Bithynia,

<sup>2</sup> by the before-knowing [*for the prescience*] of God, the Father, in hallowing of Spirit, by obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ, grace and peace be multiplied to you.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed *be* God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which by his great mercy begat us again into living hope, by the again-rising of Jesus Christ from death,

<sup>4</sup> into heritage uncorruptible, and undefouled, and that shall not fade, that is kept in heavens for you,

<sup>5</sup> that in the virtue of God be kept by the faith into health, and is ready to be showed in the last time.

<sup>6</sup> In which ye shall make joy, though it behooveth now a little to be sorry in diverse temptations;

<sup>7</sup> that the proving of your faith be much more precious than gold, that is proved by fire; and be found into praising, and glory, and honour, in the revelation of Jesus Christ.

<sup>8</sup> Whom when ye have not seen, ye love; into whom also now ye not seeing, believe; but ye that believe shall have joy, and gladness that may not be told out, and ye shall be glorified,

<sup>9</sup> and have [*or bring again*] the end of your faith, the health of your souls.

<sup>10</sup> Of which health prophets sought [*out*], and searched into, that prophesied of the grace to coming in you [*or the grace to come into you*],

<sup>11</sup> and sought which either what manner time the Spirit of Christ signified in them, and before-told those passions that be in Christ, and the latter glories.

<sup>12</sup> To which it was showed, for not to themselves, but to you they ministered those things, that now be told to you by them that preached to you by the Holy Ghost, sent from heaven, into whom angels desire to behold.

<sup>13</sup> For which thing be ye gird the loins of your soul, sober, perfect, *and* hope ye into that grace that is proffered to you by the showing of Jesus Christ,

<sup>14</sup> as sons of obedience, not made like to the former desires of your unknowingness [*or your ignorance*],

<sup>15</sup> but like him that hath called you holy; that also yourselves be holy in all living;

<sup>16</sup> for it is written, Ye shall be holy, for I am holy.

<sup>17</sup> And if ye inwardly call him Father, which deemeth without acception of persons by the work of each man, live ye in dread in the time of your pilgrimage [*in earth*];

<sup>18</sup> witting that not by corruptible gold, either silver, ye be bought again of your vain living of fathers' tradition,

<sup>19</sup> but by the precious blood as of the lamb undefouled and unspotted, Christ Jesus,

<sup>20</sup> that was known before the making of the world, but he is showed in the last times, for you

<sup>21</sup> that by him be faithful in God; that raised him from death, and gave to him everlasting glory, that your faith and hope were in God.

<sup>22</sup> And make ye chaste your souls in obedience of charity, in love of brotherhood; of simple heart love ye together more busily.

<sup>23</sup> *And be ye* born again, not of corruptible seed, but [*of*] uncorrupt-ible, by the word of living God, and dwelling into without end.

<sup>24</sup> For each flesh *is* hay, and all the glory of it *is* as the flower of hay; the hay dried up, and his flower felled down;

<sup>25</sup> but the word of the Lord dwelleth [*into*] without end. And this is the word, that is preached to you.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> Therefore put ye away all malice, and all guile, and feignings [*or simulations*], and envies, and all backbitings [*or detractions*];

<sup>2</sup> as now born young children, reasonable, without guile, covet ye milk [*of full teaching*], that in it ye wax into health;

<sup>3</sup> if nevertheless ye have tasted, that the Lord is sweet.

<sup>4</sup> And nigh ye to him, that is a living stone, and reprov'd of men, but chosen of God, and honoured;

<sup>5</sup> and ye yourselves as quick stones, be ye above builded into spiritual houses, and an holy priesthood, to offer spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

<sup>6</sup> For which thing the scripture saith, Lo! I shall set [*or put*] in Zion the highest cornerstone, chosen and precious; and he that shall believe in him, shall not be confounded.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore honour to you that believe; but to men that believe not, the stone whom the builders reprov'd, this is made into the head of the corner;

<sup>8</sup> and the stone of hurting, and the stone of stumbling, to them that offend to the word, neither believe *it*, in which they be set.

<sup>9</sup> But ye *be* a chosen kin [*or ye be a kind chosen*], a kingly priesthood, holy folk, a people of purchasing, that ye tell the virtues of him, that called you from darkneses into his wonderful light.

<sup>10</sup> Which sometime were not a people of God, but now ye be the people of God; which had not mercy, but now ye have mercy.

<sup>11</sup> Most dear, I beseech you, as comelings [*or as guests*], and pilgrims, to abstain you from fleshly desires, that fight against the soul;

<sup>12</sup> and have ye your conversation [*or your life*] good among heathen men, that in that thing that they backbite of you, as of mis-doers, they behold you of good works, and glorify God in the day of visitation.

<sup>13</sup> Be ye subject to each creature of man, for God; either to the king, as to him that is higher [*or is more worthy*] in state,

<sup>14</sup> either to dukes, as to those that be sent of him to the vengeance of mis-doers, and to the praising of good men [*or of good deeds*].

<sup>15</sup> For so is the will of God, that ye do well, and make the unknowing-ness of unprudent [*or unwise*] men to be dumb.

<sup>16</sup> As free men, and not as having freedom the covering of malice, but as the servants of God.

<sup>17</sup> Honour ye all men, love ye brotherhood, dread ye God, honour ye the king.

<sup>18</sup> Servants, be ye subject in all dread to lords, not only to good and to mild, but also to tyrants.

<sup>19</sup> For this is grace, if for conscience of God any man suffereth heavinesses [*or sorrows*], and suffereth unjustly.

<sup>20</sup> For what grace is it, if ye sin, and be buffeted, and suffer? But if ye do well, and suffer patiently, this is grace with God.

<sup>21</sup> For to this thing ye be called. For also Christ suffered for us, and left ensample to you, that ye follow the steps of him.

<sup>22</sup> Which did not sin, neither guile was found in his mouth.

<sup>23</sup> And when he was cursed, he cursed not; when he suffered, he menaced not; but he betook himself to him, that deemed him unjustly.

<sup>24</sup> And he himself bare [*or suffered*] our sins in his body on a tree, that we be dead to sins, and live to rightwiseness, by whose wane wound ye be healed.

<sup>25</sup> For ye were as sheep erring, but ye be now turned to the shepherd [*or but ye be converted now to the shepherd*], and bishop of your souls.

### CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Also women be they subject to their husbands; that if any man, *that is, husbands*, believe not to the word, by the conversation of women they be won without word.

<sup>2</sup> And behold ye in dread your holy conversation.

<sup>3</sup> Of whom be there not without-forth curious adorning of hair, either doing about of gold, either adorning of clothing;

<sup>4</sup> but that that is the hid man of heart, in uncorruption, and of mild spirit, [*or in uncorruptibility of quiet and mild spirit*], which is rich in the sight of God.

<sup>5</sup> For so sometime holy women hoping in God adorned themselves, and were subject to their own husbands.

<sup>6</sup> As Sarah obeyed to Abraham, and called him lord; of whom ye be daughters well-doing, and not dreading any perturbation.

<sup>7</sup> Also men dwell together, and by knowing [*or science*], give ye honour to the woman's frailty, [*or to her vessel*], as to the more feeble, and as to even-heirs of grace and of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

<sup>8</sup> And in faith all of one will, in prayer be ye each suffering with other, lovers of brotherhood, merciful, mild, meek; [*Forsooth in faith all of one understanding, or will, in prayer be ye compassionate, or each suffering with other; lovers of fraternity, merciful, mild, meek;*]

<sup>9</sup> not yielding evil for evil, neither cursing for cursing, but on the contrary blessing; for in this thing ye be called, that ye wield blessing by heritage.

<sup>10</sup> For he that will love life, and see good days, constrain his tongue from evil, and his lips, that they speak not guile [*or that they speak no guile*].

<sup>11</sup> And bow he from evil, and do good; seek he peace, and perfectly follow it.

<sup>12</sup> For the eyes of the Lord *be* on just men, and his ears on the prayers of them; but the cheer [*or the face*] of the Lord is on men that do evils.

<sup>13</sup> And who is it that shall annoy you, if ye be pursuers and lovers of goodness?

<sup>14</sup> But also if ye suffer anything for rightwiseness, ye be blessed; but dread ye not the dread of them, that ye be not disturbed [*or distroubled*].

<sup>15</sup> But hallow ye the Lord Christ in your hearts, and evermore be ye ready to [*do*] satisfaction to each man asking



you reason of that faith and hope that is in you, but with mildness, and dread,

<sup>16</sup> having good conscience; that in that thing that they backbite of you, they be confounded, which challenge falsely your good conversation in Christ.

<sup>17</sup> For it is better that ye do well, and suffer, if the will of God will, than doing evil. [*Soothly it is better, if the will of God will, ye well-doing, to suffer, than evil-doing.*]

<sup>18</sup> For also Christ once died for our sins, he just for unjust, that he should offer to God us [*or should offer us to God*], made dead in flesh, but made quick in Spirit.

<sup>19</sup> For which thing he came in Spirit, and also to them that were enclosed together in prison;

<sup>20</sup> which were sometime unbelieve-ful, when they abided the patience of God in the days of Noah, when the ship [*or the ark*] was made, in which a few, that is to say, eight souls were made safe by water.

<sup>21</sup> And so baptism of like form maketh us safe; not the putting away of the filths of flesh, but the asking of a good conscience in God, by the again-rising of our Lord Jesus Christ,

<sup>22</sup> that is in the right half of God, and swalloweth death, that we should be made heirs of everlasting life. He went into heaven, and angels, and powers, and virtues be made subject to him.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Therefore for Christ suffered in flesh, be ye also armed by the same thinking; for he that suffered in flesh ceased from sins,

<sup>2</sup> that that is left now of time in flesh live not now to the desires of men, but to the will of God.

<sup>3</sup> For the time that is passed is enough to the will of heathen men to be ended, which walked in lecheries, and lusts, in much drinking of wine, in unmeasurable [*or oft*] eatings, and drinkings, and unleaveful worshipping of maumets [*or of idols*].

<sup>4</sup> In which now they be astonied, in which thing they wonder, for ye run not together into the same confusion of lechery, and blaspheme.

<sup>5</sup> And they shall give reason to him, that is ready to deem the quick and the dead.

<sup>6</sup> For why for this thing it is preached [*or it is evangelized*] also to dead men, that they be deemed by men in flesh, and that they live by God in Spirit.

<sup>7</sup> For the end of all things shall nigh. Therefore be ye prudent, and wake ye in prayers;

<sup>8</sup> before all things have ye charity each to other in yourselves always lasting; for charity covereth the multitude of sins.

<sup>9</sup> Hold ye hospitality together with-out grutching;

<sup>10</sup> each man as he hath received grace, ministering it into each other [*or ministering each to other*], as good dispensers of the manyfold grace of God.

<sup>11</sup> If any man speaketh, *speak he* as the words of God; if any man ministereth, as of the virtue which God ministereth; that God be honoured in all things by Jesus Christ our Lord, to whom is glory and lordship into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>12</sup> Most dear *brethren*, do not ye go in pilgrimage in fervour, that is made to you to temptation, as if any new thing befall to you;

<sup>13</sup> but commune ye with the passions of Christ, and have ye joy, that also ye be glad, and have joy in the revelation of his glory.

<sup>14</sup> If ye be despised for the name of Christ, ye shall be blessed; for that that is of the honour, and of the glory, and of the virtue of God, and the Spirit that is his, shall rest on you.

<sup>15</sup> But no man of you suffer as a manslayer, either a thief, either curser, either a desirer of other men's goods [*or things*];

<sup>16</sup> but if *he suffer* as a christian man, shame he not, but glorify he God in this name.

<sup>17</sup> For time is, that doom begin at God's house; and if *it begin* first at us, what end *shall be* of them, that believe not to the gospel?

<sup>18</sup> And if a just man scarcely shall be saved, where shall the unfaithful man and the sinner appear?

<sup>19</sup> Therefore and they that suffer by the will of God, betake their souls in good deeds to the faithful Maker of nought.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Therefore I, an even-elder man, and a witness of Christ's passions, which also *am* a communer of that glory, that shall be showed in time to come; beseech the elder men, that be among you,

<sup>2</sup> feed ye the flock of God, that is among you, and purvey ye, not as constrained, but willfully, by God; not for love of foul winning, but willfully,

<sup>3</sup> neither as having lordship in the clergy, but that ye be made ensample to the flock, of will [*or by intent*].

<sup>4</sup> And when the prince of shepherds shall appear, ye shall receive the crown of glory, that may never fade.

<sup>5</sup> Also, ye young men, be ye subject to elder men, and all show ye together meekness; for the Lord withstandeth proud men, but he giveth grace to meek men.

<sup>6</sup> Therefore be ye meeked under the mighty hand of God, that he raise you in the time [*or in the day*] of visitation,

<sup>7</sup> and cast ye all your busyness into him, for to him is care of you.

<sup>8</sup> Be ye sober, and wake ye, for your adversary, the devil, as a roaring lion goeth about, seeking whom he shall devour.

<sup>9</sup> Whom against-stand ye, strong in the faith, witting that the same passion is made to that brotherhood of you, that is in the world.

<sup>10</sup> And God of all grace, that called you into his everlasting glory, you suffering a little [*in Christ Jesus*], he shall perform, and shall confirm, and shall make firm.

<sup>11</sup> To him *be* glory and lordship, into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>12</sup> By Silvanus, [*a*] faithful brother to you as I deem, I wrote shortly; beseeching, and witnessing that this is the very grace of God, in which ye stand.

<sup>13</sup> The church that is gathered in Babylon, and Marcus, my son, greeteth you well.

<sup>14</sup> Greet ye well together in holy kiss. Grace *be* to you all that be in Christ. Amen.

## 2ND PETER

<sup>1</sup> Simon Peter, servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have taken with us the even-faith, in the rightwiseness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ,

<sup>2</sup> grace and peace be [*full*]-filled to you, by the knowing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>3</sup> How all things of his god-like virtue, that be to life and piety, be given to us, by the knowing of him, that called us for his own glory and virtue.

<sup>4</sup> By whom he gave to us most precious promises; that by these things ye shall be made fellows of God's kind, and flee the corruption of that covetousness, that is in the world.

<sup>5</sup> And bring ye in all busyness, and minister in your faith virtue, and in virtue knowing [*or science*];

<sup>6</sup> in knowing [*or in science*], abstinence, in abstinence patience, in patience piety;

<sup>7</sup> in piety, love of brotherhood, and in love of brotherhood charity.

<sup>8</sup> For if these be with you, and overcome, [*or be plenteous*], they shall not make you void, neither without fruit, in the knowing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>9</sup> But to whom these be not ready, he is blind, and gropeth with his hand, and forgetteth the purging of his old trespasses.

<sup>10</sup> Wherefore, brethren, be ye more busy, that by good works ye make your calling and choosing certain; for ye doing these things, shall not do sin any time [*or shall not sin any time*].

<sup>11</sup> For thus the entering into [*the*] everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, shall be ministered to you plenteously.

<sup>12</sup> For which thing I shall begin to admonish you evermore of these things; and I will, that ye be know ing, and confirmed in this present truth.

<sup>13</sup> Forsooth I deem justly [*or I deem just*], as long as I am in this taber-nacle, to raise you in admonishing;

<sup>14</sup> and I *am* certain, that the putting away [*or the putting off*] of my tabernacle is swift, by this that our Lord Jesus Christ hath showed to me.

<sup>15</sup> But I shall give busyness, that oft after my death ye have mind of these things.

<sup>16</sup> For we not pursuing unwise tales, have made known to you the virtue and the before-knowing [*or the prescience*] of

our Lord Jesus Christ; but we were made beholders of his greatness.

<sup>17</sup> For he took of God the Father honour and glory, by such manner voice slid down to him from the great glory, This is my loved Son, in whom I have pleased to me; hear ye him.

<sup>18</sup> And we heard this voice brought from heaven, when we were with him in the holy hill.

<sup>19</sup> And we have a firmer word of prophecy, to which ye giving attention do well, as to a lantern that giveth light in a dark place, till the day begin to give light, and the day star spring in your hearts.

<sup>20</sup> And first understand ye this thing, that each prophecy of scripture is not made by proper, [*or own*], interpretation;

<sup>21</sup> for prophecy was not brought any time by man's will, but the holy men of God inspired with the Holy Ghost spake.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> But also false prophets were in the people, as in you shall be masters liars, that shall bring in sects of perdition; and they deny that Lord that bought them, and bring on them-selves hasty perdition [*or damnation*].

<sup>2</sup> And many shall pursue their lecheries, by whom the way of truth shall be blasphemed;

<sup>3</sup> and they shall make merchandise of you in covetousness by feigned words. To whom doom now a while ago ceaseth not, and the perdition of them nappeth not.

<sup>4</sup> For if God spared not angels sinning, but betook them to be tormented, and to be drawn down with bonds of hell into hell, to be kept into doom;

<sup>5</sup> and spared not the first world, but kept Noah, the eighth man, the before-goer of rightwiseness, and brought in the great flood [*or the deluge*] to the world of unfaithful men;

<sup>6</sup> and he drove into powder the cities of men of Sodom and of men of Gomorrah, and condemned by turn-ing upside-down, and put them the ensample of them that were to doing evil [*or were doing unpioulsly*];

<sup>7</sup> and delivered the just Lot, oppressed of the wrong, and of the lecherous conversation of cursed men;

<sup>8</sup> for in sight and hearing he was just, and dwelled amongst them that from day into day tormented with wicked works a just soul.

<sup>9</sup> For the Lord knoweth how to deliver pious men from temptation, and keep wicked men into the day of doom, to be tormented;

<sup>10</sup> but more them that walk after the flesh, in coveting of uncleanness, and despise lordshipping, and be bold,

pleasing themselves, and dread not to bring in sects, blaspheming;

<sup>11</sup> where angels, when they be more in strength and virtue, bear not the execrable doom [*for the cursed judgement*] against them.

<sup>12</sup> But these *be* as unreasonable beasts, kindly, into taking, and into death, blaspheming in these things that they know not, and shall perish in their corruption,

<sup>13</sup> and receive the hire of unright-wiseness. And they guess delights of defouling and of wem, to be likings of the day, flowing in their feasts with delights, doing lechery with you,

<sup>14</sup> and have eyes full of adultery, and unceasing trespass, deceiving unsteadfast souls, and have the heart exercised to covetousness; the sons of cursing,

<sup>15</sup> that forsake the right way, and erred, pursuing the way of Balaam of Bosor, which loved the hire of wickedness.

<sup>16</sup> But he had reproving [*or correction*] of his madness; a dumb beast under yoke, that spake with voice of man, that forbade the un wisdom of the prophet.

<sup>17</sup> These be wells without water, and mists driven with whirlwinds [*or clouds driven with whirling winds*], to whom the thick mist of darkneses is reserved.

<sup>18</sup> And they speak in pride of vanity, and deceive in desires of flesh of lechery them, that escape a little. Which live in error,

<sup>19</sup> and promise freedom [*or liberty*] to them, when they be servants of corruption. For of whom any man is overcome, of him also he is servant.

<sup>20</sup> For if men forsake the unclean-nesses of the world, by the knowing of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and again be enwrapped in these, and be overcome, the latter things be made to them worse than the former.

<sup>21</sup> For it was better to them to not know the way of rightwiseness, than to turn again after the knowing, from that holy commandment that was betaken to them.

<sup>22</sup> For that very proverb befelled to them, The hound turned again to his vomit, *or casting*, and a sow is washed in wallowing in fen [*or in clay*].

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> Lo! ye most dearworthy brethren, I write to you this second epistle, in which I stir your clear soul by admonishing together,

<sup>2</sup> that ye be mindful of those words, that I before-said of the holy prophets, and of the commandments of the holy apostles of the Lord and Saviour.

<sup>3</sup> First know ye this thing, that in the last days deceivers [*or scorners*] shall come in deceit, going after their own covetings,

<sup>4</sup> saying, Where is the promise, or the coming of him? for since the fathers died [*or slept*], all things last from the beginning of creature.

<sup>5</sup> But it is hid from them willing this thing, that heavens were before [*or first*], and the earth of water was standing by water, by God's word;

<sup>6</sup> by which that same world cleansed, then by water perished.

<sup>7</sup> But the heavens that now be, and the earth, be kept by the same word, and be reserved to fire into the day of doom, and perdition of wicked men.

<sup>8</sup> But, ye most dear, this one thing be not hid to you [*or be not unknown*], that one day with God is as a thousand years, and a thousand years *be* as one day.

<sup>9</sup> The Lord tarrieth not his promise, as some guess, but he doeth patiently for you, and will not that any man perish [*or not willing any to perish*], but that all turn again to penance.

<sup>10</sup> For the day of the Lord shall come as a thief, in which heavens with great rush, [*or fierceness*], shall pass, and elements shall be dissolved by heat, and the earth, and all the works that be in it, shall be burnt.

<sup>11</sup> Therefore when all these things shall be dissolved, what manner men behooveth it you to be in holy livings and piety,

<sup>12</sup> abiding and hieing into the coming of the day of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom heavens burning shall be dissolved, and elements shall fail by burning [*or heat*] of fire.

<sup>13</sup> Also we abide by his promises new heavens and new earth, in which rightwiseness dwelleth.

<sup>14</sup> For which thing, ye most dear, abiding these things, be ye busy to be found to him in peace, unspotted and undefouled.

<sup>15</sup> And deem ye long abiding of our Lord Jesus Christ your health, as also our most dear brother Paul wrote to you, by wisdom given to him.

<sup>16</sup> As and in all his epistles he speaketh in them of these things; in which be some hard things to under-stand, which unwise [*or untaught*] and unstable men deprave, as also they do other scriptures, to their own perdition.

<sup>17</sup> Therefore ye, brethren, before-witting keep yourselves, lest ye be deceived [*or over-led*] by error of unwise men, and fall away from your own firmness.

<sup>18</sup> But wax ye in the grace and the knowing of our Lord Jesus Christ and our Saviour; to him be glory now and into the day of everlastingness. Amen.



## 1ST JOHN

<sup>1</sup> That thing that was from the beginning, which we heard, which we saw with our eyes, which we beheld, and our hands touched, of the word of life;

<sup>2</sup> and the life is showed. And we saw, and witness, and tell to you the everlasting life, that was with the Father, and appeared to us.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore that thing, that we saw, and heard, we tell to you, that also ye have fellowship with us, and our fellowship be with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

<sup>4</sup> And we write this thing to you, that ye have joy, and that your joy be full.

<sup>5</sup> And this is the telling, that we heard of him, and tell to you, that God is light, and there be no darkneses in him.

<sup>6</sup> If we say, that we have fellowship with him, and we wander in darkneses, we lie, and do not truth.

<sup>7</sup> But if we walk in light, as also he is in light, we have fellowship together; and the blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleanseth us from all sin.

<sup>8</sup> If we say, that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and truth is not in us.

<sup>9</sup> If we acknowledge our sins, he is faithful and just, that he forgive to us our sins, and cleanse us from all wickedness.

<sup>10</sup> And if we say, that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> My little sons, I write to you these things, that ye sin not. But if any man sinneth, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ [*just*],

<sup>2</sup> and he is the forgiveness [*or helping*] for our sins; and not only for our *sins*, but also for *the sins* of all the world.

<sup>3</sup> And in this thing we know, that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

<sup>4</sup> He that saith that he knoweth God, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and truth is not in him.

<sup>5</sup> But the charity of God is perfect verily in him, that keepeth his word, [*or Forsooth who keepeth his word, verily in him is perfect charity*]. In this thing we know, that we be in him, if we be perfect in him.

<sup>6</sup> He that saith, that he dwelleth in him, he oweth to walk, as he walked.

<sup>7</sup> Most dear *brethren*, I write to you, not a new commandment, but the old commandment, that ye had from

the beginning. The old commandment is the word, that ye heard.

<sup>8</sup> Again I write to you a new commandment, that is true both in him and in you; for darkneses be passed, and very light shineth now.

<sup>9</sup> He that saith, that he is in light, and hateth his brother, is in darkneses yet.

<sup>10</sup> He that loveth his brother, dwelleth in light, and cause of stumbling is not in him.

<sup>11</sup> But he that hateth his brother, is in darkneses, and wandereth in darkneses, and knoweth not whither he goeth; for darkneses have blinded his eyes.

<sup>12</sup> Little sons, I write to you, that your sins be forgiven to you for his name.

<sup>13</sup> Fathers, I write to you, for ye have known him, that is from the beginning. Young men, I write to you, for ye have overcome the wicked. I write to you, young children [*or infants*], for ye have known the Father.

<sup>14</sup> I write to you, brethren, for ye have known him, that is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, for ye be strong, and the word of God dwelleth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked.

<sup>15</sup> Do not ye love the world, nor those things that be in the world. If any man loveth the world, the charity of the Father is not in him.

<sup>16</sup> For all thing that is in the world, is covetousness of flesh, and covetousness of eyes, and pride of life, which is not of the Father, but it is of the world.

<sup>17</sup> And the world shall pass, and the covetousness of it; but he that doeth the will of God, dwelleth [*into*] without end.

<sup>18</sup> My little sons, the last hour is; and as ye have heard, that antichrist cometh, now many antichrists be made; wherefore we know, that it is the last hour.

<sup>19</sup> They went forth from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they had dwelt with us; but that they be known, that they be not all of us.

<sup>20</sup> But ye have anointing [*or unction*] of the Holy Ghost, and know all things.

<sup>21</sup> I wrote not to you, as to men that know not the truth, but as to men that know it, and for each leasing is not of truth.

<sup>22</sup> Who is a liar, but this that denieth that Jesus is not Christ? This is antichrist, that denieth the Father, and the Son.

<sup>23</sup> For each that denieth the Son, hath not the Father; but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath also the Father.

<sup>24</sup> That thing that ye heard at [*or from*] the beginning, dwell it in you; for if that thing dwelleth in you, which ye heard at the beginning, ye shall dwell in the Son and in the Father.

<sup>25</sup> And this is the promise, that he promised to us, everlasting life.

<sup>26</sup> I wrote these things to you, of them that deceive you,

<sup>27</sup> and that the anointing which ye received of him, dwell in you. And ye have not need, that any man teach you, but as his anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and it is not leasing; and as he taught you, dwell ye in him.

<sup>28</sup> And now, ye little sons, dwell ye in him, that when he shall appear, we have trust, and be not confounded of him in his coming.

<sup>29</sup> If ye know that he is just, know ye that also each that doeth rightwiseness, is born of him.

### CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> See ye what manner charity the Father gave to us, that we be named the sons of God, and be *his sons*. For this thing the world knew not us, for it knew not him.

<sup>2</sup> Most dear *brethren*, now we be the sons of God, and yet it appeared not, what we shall be. We know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

<sup>3</sup> And each man that hath this hope in him, maketh himself holy, as he is holy.

<sup>4</sup> Each man that doeth sin, doeth also wickedness, and sin is wickedness.

<sup>5</sup> And ye know, that he appeared to do away sins, and sin is not in him.

<sup>6</sup> Each man that dwelleth in him, sinneth not; and each that sinneth, seeth not him, neither knew him.

<sup>7</sup> Little sons, no man deceive you; he that doeth rightwiseness, is just, as also he is just.

<sup>8</sup> He that doeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. In this thing the Son of God appeared, that he undo the works of the devil.

<sup>9</sup> Each man that is born of God, doeth not sin; for the seed of God dwelleth in him, and he may not do sin, for he is born of God.

<sup>10</sup> In this thing the sons of God be known, and the sons of the fiend. Each man that is not just, is not of God, and he that loveth not his brother [*is not of God*].

<sup>11</sup> For this is the telling, that ye heard at the beginning, that ye love each other;

<sup>12</sup> not as Cain, that was of the devil, and slew his brother. And for what thing slew he him? for his works were evil, and his brother's just.

<sup>13</sup> Brethren, do not ye wonder, if the world hateth you.

<sup>14</sup> We know, that we be translated from death to life, for we love brethren. He that loveth not, dwelleth in death.

<sup>15</sup> Each man that hateth his brother, is a manslayer; and ye know, that each manslayer hath not everlasting life dwelling in him.

<sup>16</sup> In this thing we have known the charity of God, for he put his life for us, and we owe to put our lives for our brethren.

<sup>17</sup> He that hath the chattel [*or the substance*] of this world, and seeth that his brother hath need, and closeth his entrails from him, how dwelleth the charity of God in him?

<sup>18</sup> My little sons, love we not in word, neither in tongue, but in work and truth.

<sup>19</sup> In this thing we know, that we be of truth, and in his sight we admonish our hearts.

<sup>20</sup> For if our heart reproveth us, God is more than our heart, and knoweth all things.

<sup>21</sup> Most dear *brethren*, if our heart reproveth not us, we have trust to God;

<sup>22</sup> and whatever we shall ask, we shall receive of him, for we keep his commandments, and we do those things that be pleasant before him.

<sup>23</sup> And this is the commandment of God, that we believe in the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and that we love each other, as he gave behest to us.

<sup>24</sup> And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him. And in this thing we know, that he dwelleth in us, by the Spirit, whom he gave to us.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> Most dear *brethren*, do not ye believe to each spirit, but prove ye the spirits, if they be of God; for many false prophets went out into the world.

<sup>2</sup> In this thing the Spirit of God is known; each spirit that acknowl-edgeth that Jesus Christ hath come in flesh, is of God;

<sup>3</sup> and each spirit that undoeth Jesus, is not of God. And this is antichrist, of whom ye have heard, that he cometh; and right now he is in the world.

<sup>4</sup> Ye, little sons, be of God, and ye have overcome him; for he that is in you is more, than he that is in the world.

<sup>5</sup> They be of the world, therefore they speak of the world, and the world heareth them.

<sup>6</sup> We be of God; he that knoweth God, heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us. In this thing we know the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

<sup>7</sup> Most dear *brethren*, love we together, for charity is of God; and each that loveth his brother, is born of God, and knoweth God.

<sup>8</sup> He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is charity.

<sup>9</sup> In this thing, the charity of God appeared in us, for God sent his one begotten Son into the world, that we live by him.

<sup>10</sup> In this thing is charity, not as we had loved God, but for he first loved us, and sent his Son forgiveness [*for helping*] for our sins.

<sup>11</sup> Ye most dear *brethren*, if God loved us, we owe to love each other.

<sup>12</sup> No man saw ever God; if we love together, God dwelleth in us, and the charity of him is perfect in us.

<sup>13</sup> In this thing we know, that we dwell in him, and he in us; for of his Spirit he gave to us.

<sup>14</sup> And we saw, and witness, that the Father sent his Son Saviour of the world.

<sup>15</sup> Whoever acknowledgeth, that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

<sup>16</sup> And we have known, and believe to the charity, that God hath in us. God is charity, and he that dwelleth in charity, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

<sup>17</sup> In this thing is the perfect charity of God with us [*for in us*], that we have trust in the day of doom; for as he is, also we be in this world.

<sup>18</sup> Dread is not in charity, but perfect charity putteth out dread; for dread hath pain. But he that dreadeth, is not perfect in charity.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore love we God, for he loved us before [*for he former loved us*].

<sup>20</sup> If any man saith, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar. For he that loveth not his brother, whom he seeth, how may he love God, whom he seeth not?

<sup>21</sup> And we have this commandment of God, that he that loveth God, love also his brother.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> Each man that believeth that Jesus is Christ, is born of God; and each man that loveth him that engendered [*or that engendereth*], loveth him that is born of him.

<sup>2</sup> In this thing we know, that we love the children of God, when we love God, and do his commandments.

<sup>3</sup> For this is the charity of God, that we keep his commandments; and his commandments be not heavy [*or grievous*].

<sup>4</sup> For all thing that is born of God, overcometh the world; and this is the victory that overcometh the world, our faith.

<sup>5</sup> And who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

<sup>6</sup> This is Jesus Christ, that came by water and blood; not in water only, but in water and blood. And the Spirit is he that witnesseth, that Christ is [*the*] truth.

<sup>7</sup> For three be, that give witnessing in heaven, the Father, the Son [*or the Word*], and the Holy Ghost; and these three be one.

<sup>8</sup> And three be, that give witnessing in earth, the Spirit, water, and blood; and these three be one.

<sup>9</sup> If we receive the witnessing of men, the witnessing of God is more; for this is the witnessing of God, that is more, for he witnessed of his Son.

<sup>10</sup> He that believeth in the Son of God, hath the witnessing of God in him. He that believeth not to the Son, maketh him a liar; for he believeth not in the witnessing that God witnessed of his Son.

<sup>11</sup> And this is the witnessing, for God gave to you [*or to us*] everlasting life, and this life is in his Son.

<sup>12</sup> He that hath the Son of God, hath also life; he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

<sup>13</sup> I write to you these things, that ye know, that ye have everlasting life, which believe in the name of God's Son.

<sup>14</sup> And this is the trust which we have to God [*or that we have in God*], that whatever thing we ask after his will, he shall hear us.

<sup>15</sup> And we know, that he heareth us, whatever thing we [*shall*] ask; we know, that we have the askings, that we ask of him.

<sup>16</sup> He that knoweth that his brother sinneth a sin not to death, ask he, and life shall be given to him that sinneth not to death. There is a sin to death; not for it I say, that any man pray.

<sup>17</sup> Each wickedness is sin, and there is [*a*] sin to death.

<sup>18</sup> We know, that each man that is born of God, sinneth not; but the generation of God keepeth him, and the wicked toucheth him not.

<sup>19</sup> We know, that we be of God, and all the world is set in evil.

<sup>20</sup> And we know, that the Son of God came in flesh, and gave to us wit, that we know him very God, and be in the very Son [*Jesus*] of him. This is very God, and everlasting life.

<sup>21</sup> My little sons, keep ye you from maumets [*or from simulacra*]. My little sons, keep away from idols. [*Amen.*]

## 2ND JOHN

<sup>1</sup> The elder *man*, to the chosen lady, and to her children, which I love in truth; and not I alone, but also all men that know truth;

<sup>2</sup> for the truth that dwelleth in you, and with you shall be without end.

<sup>3</sup> Grace be with you, mercy, and peace of God the Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and charity.

<sup>4</sup> I joyed full much, for I found of thy sons going in truth, as we received commandment of the Father.

<sup>5</sup> And now I pray thee, lady, not as writing a new commandment to thee, but that that we had from the beginning, that we love each other.

<sup>6</sup> And this is charity, that we walk after his commandments. For this is the commandment, that as ye heard at the beginning, walk ye in him.

<sup>7</sup> For many deceivers went out into the world, which acknowledge not that Jesus Christ hath come in flesh; this is a deceiver and antichrist.

<sup>8</sup> See ye yourselves, lest ye lose the things that ye have wrought, that ye receive full meed;

<sup>9</sup> witting that each man that goeth before [*or that goeth away*], and dwelleth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God. He that dwelleth in the teaching [*of Christ*], hath both the Son and the Father.

<sup>10</sup> If any man cometh to you, and bringeth not this teaching, do not ye receive him into *your* house, neither say to him, Hail.

<sup>11</sup> For he that saith to him, Hail, communeth with his evil works. Lo! I before-said to you, that ye be not confounded in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>12</sup> I have more things to write to you, and I would not by parchment and ink; for I hope that I shall come to you, and speak mouth to mouth, that our joy be full.

<sup>13</sup> The sons of thy chosen sister greet thee well. The grace of God *be* with thee. Amen.



## 3RD JOHN

<sup>1</sup> The elder *man* to Gaius, most dear *brother*, whom I love in truth.

<sup>2</sup> Most dear *brother*, of all things I make prayer, that thou enter, and fare wealfully, as thy soul doeth wealfully.

<sup>3</sup> I joyed greatly, for brethren came, and bare witnessing to thy truth, as thou walkest in truth.

<sup>4</sup> I have not more grace of these things, than that I hear that my sons walk in truth.

<sup>5</sup> Most dear *brother*, thou doest faithfully, whatever thou workest in brethren, and that into pilgrims,

<sup>6</sup> which yielded witnessing to thy charity, in the sight of the church; which thou ledest forth, and doest well-worthily to God.

<sup>7</sup> For they went forth for his name, and took nothing of heathen men.

<sup>8</sup> Therefore we owe to receive such, that we be even-workers of truth.

<sup>9</sup> I had written peradventure to the church, but this Diotrephes, that loveth to bear primacy, [*for chief places*], in them, receiveth not us.

<sup>10</sup> For this thing, if I shall come, I shall admonish his works, which he doeth, chiding [*for chattering*] against us with evil words. And as if these things suffice not to him, neither he receiveth brethren, and forbiddeth them that receive, and putteth out of the church.

<sup>11</sup> Most dear *brother*, do not thou pursue evil thing, but that that is good thing. He that doeth well, is of God; he that doeth evil, seeth not God.

<sup>12</sup> Witnessing is yielded to Deme-trius of all men, and of truth itself; but also we bear witnessing, and thou knowest, that our witnessing is true.

<sup>13</sup> I had many things to write to thee, but I would not write to thee by ink and pen.

<sup>14</sup> For I hope soon to see thee, and we shall speak mouth to mouth. Peace *be* to thee. Friends greet thee well. Greet thou well friends by name. *Amen*.

## JUDE

<sup>1</sup> Judas, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to these that be loved, that be in God the Father, and to them that be called and kept of Jesus Christ,

<sup>2</sup> mercy, and peace, and charity be [*full*]-filled to you.

<sup>3</sup> Most dear *brethren*, I doing all busyness to write to you of your common health, had need to write to you, and pray to strive strongly for the faith that is once taken to saints.

<sup>4</sup> For some unfaithful men privily entered, that sometime were before-written into this doom, and overturn the grace of our God into lechery, and deny him that is only a Lord, our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>5</sup> But I will admonish you once, that know all things, that Jesus saved his people from the land of Egypt, and the second time lost them that believed not.

<sup>6</sup> And he reserved under darkness angels, that kept not their prince-hood, but forsook their house, into the doom of the great God, into everlasting bonds.

<sup>7</sup> As Sodom, and Gomorrah, and the nigh coasted cities, that in like manner did fornication, and went away after other flesh, and be made ensample, suffering pain of everlasting fire.

<sup>8</sup> In like manner also these that defoul the flesh, and despise lordship, and blaspheme majesty.

<sup>9</sup> When Michael, [*the*] archangel, disputed with the devil, and strove of Moses' body, he was not hardy to bring in doom of blasphemy, but said, The Lord command to thee.

<sup>10</sup> But these men blaspheme, what-ever things they know not. For what-ever things they know kindly as dumb beasts, in these they be corrupt.

<sup>11</sup> Woe to them that went the way of Cain, and that be shed out by error of Balaam for meed, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

<sup>12</sup> These be in their meats, feasting together to filth, without dread feeding themselves. *These be* clouds without water, that be borne about of winds; harvest trees without fruit, twice dead, drawn up by the root;

<sup>13</sup> waves of the mad sea, foaming out their confusions, [*or waves of the wild sea, frothing out their confusions*]; erring stars, to which the tempest of darknesses is kept [*into*] without end.

<sup>14</sup> But Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, and said, Lo! the Lord cometh with his holy thousands,

<sup>15</sup> to do doom against all men, and to reprove all unfaithful men of all the works of the wickedness of them, by which they did wickedly, and of all the hard words, that wicked sinners have spoken against God.

<sup>16</sup> These be grutchers full of com-plaints, wandering after their desires;

and the mouth of them speaketh pride, worshipping persons, because of winning.

<sup>17</sup> And ye, most dear *brethren*, be mindful of the words which be before-said of [*the*] apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ;

<sup>18</sup> which said to you, that in the last times there shall come beguilers [*or scornors*], wandering after their own desires, not in piety.

<sup>19</sup> These be, which separate them-selves, beastly men, not having Spirit.

<sup>20</sup> But ye, most dear *brethren*, above build yourselves on your most holy faith, and pray ye in the Holy Ghost,

<sup>21</sup> and keep yourselves in the love of God, and abide ye the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ into life ever-lasting.

<sup>22</sup> And reprove ye these men that be deemed,

<sup>23</sup> but save ye them, and take ye [*or ravish*] them from the fire. And do ye mercy to other men, in the dread of God, and hate ye also that defouled coat, which is fleshly.

<sup>24</sup> But to him that is mighty to keep you without sin, and to ordain before the sight of his glory you unwemmed, in full out joy,

<sup>25</sup> in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, to God alone our Saviour, by Jesus Christ our Lord, *be* glory, and magnifying, empire, and power, before all worlds, and now, and into all worlds of worlds. Amen.

## APOCALYPSE OF JOHN

<sup>1</sup> Apocalypse of Jesus Christ [*or The revelation of Jesus Christ*], which God gave to him to make open to his servants, which things it behooveth to be made soon. And he signified, sending by his angel to his servant John,

<sup>2</sup> which bare witnessing to the word of God, and witnessing of Jesus Christ, in these things, whatever things he saw.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed is he that readeth, and he that heareth the words of this prophecy, and keepeth those things that be written in it; for the time is nigh.

<sup>4</sup> John to the seven churches, that be in Asia, grace and peace to you, of him that is, and that was, and that is to coming [*or is to come*]; and of the seven spirits, that be in the sight of his throne;

<sup>5</sup> and of Jesus Christ, that is a faithful witness, the first begotten of dead men, and prince of kings of the earth; which loved us, and washed us from our sins in his blood,

<sup>6</sup> and made us a kingdom, and priests to God and to his Father; to him *be* glory and empire into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>7</sup> Lo! he cometh with clouds, and each eye shall see him, and they that pricked him; and all the kindreds of the earth shall bewail themselves on him. Yea, Amen!

<sup>8</sup> I am alpha and omega, the beginning and the end, saith the Lord God, that is, and that was, and that is to coming [*or is to come*], almighty.

<sup>9</sup> I, John, your brother, and partner in tribulation, and kingdom, and patience in Christ Jesus, was in an isle, that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the witnessing of Jesus.

<sup>10</sup> I was in Spirit in the Lord's day [*or in the Sunday*], and I heard behind me a great voice, as of a trump,

<sup>11</sup> saying *to me*, Write thou in a book that thing that thou seest, and send to the seven churches that be in Asia; to Ephesus, to Smyrna, and to Pergamum, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea.

<sup>12</sup> And I turned, that I should see the voice that spake with me; and I turned, and I saw seven candlesticks of gold,

<sup>13</sup> and in the middle of the seven golden candlesticks one like to the Son of man, clothed with a long garment, and girded at the teats with a golden girdle.

<sup>14</sup> And the head of him and his hairs were white, as white wool, and as snow; and the eyes of him as flame of fire,

<sup>15</sup> and his feet like to latten [*or like the dross of gold*], as in a burning chimney; and the voice of him as the voice of many waters.

<sup>16</sup> And he had in his right hand seven stars, and a sword sharp on ever either side [*or on both sides*] went out of his mouth; and his face as the sun shineth in his virtue.

<sup>17</sup> And when I had seen him, I felled down at his feet, as dead. And he putted his right hand on me, and said, Do not thou dread; I am the first and the last;

<sup>18</sup> and I am alive, and I was dead; and lo! I am living into worlds of worlds, and I have the keys of death and of hell.

<sup>19</sup> Therefore write thou which things thou hast seen, and which be, and which it behooveth to be done after these things.

<sup>20</sup> The sacrament [*or The mystery*] of the seven stars, which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks; the seven stars be [*the*] angels of the seven churches, and the seven candlesticks be [*the*] seven churches.

## CHAPTER 2

<sup>1</sup> And to the angel of the church of Ephesus write thou, These things saith he, that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, which walketh in the middle [*or in the midst*] of the seven golden candlesticks.

<sup>2</sup> I know thy works, and thy travail [*or thy toil*], and thy patience, and that thou mayest not suffer evil men; and thou hast assayed them that say that they be apostles, and be not, and thou hast found them liars;

<sup>3</sup> and thou hast patience, and thou hast suffered [*or sustained*] for my name, and failedest not.

<sup>4</sup> But I have against thee a few things, that thou hast left thy first charity.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore be thou mindful from whence thou hast fallen, and do penance, and do the first works; or else, I shall come soon to thee, and I shall move thy candlestick from his place, but thou do penance.

<sup>6</sup> But thou hast this good thing, that thou hatedest the deeds of Nicolaitans, which also I hate.

<sup>7</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh, I shall give to eat of the tree of life, that is in the paradise of my God.

<sup>8</sup> And to the angel of the church of Smyrna write thou, These things saith the first and the last, that was dead, and liveth.

<sup>9</sup> I know thy tribulation, and thy poverty, but thou art rich; and thou art blasphemed of them, that say, that they be Jews, and be not, but be the synagogue of Satan.

<sup>10</sup> Dread thou nothing of these things, which thou shalt suffer. Lo! the devil shall send some of you into prison, that ye be tempted [*or ye be proved*]; and ye shall have tribulation ten days. Be thou faithful to the death, and I shall give to thee a crown of life.

<sup>11</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches. He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

<sup>12</sup> And to the angel of the church of Pergamum, write thou, These things saith he, that hath the sword sharp on either side [*or on each side*].

<sup>13</sup> I know where thou dwellest, where the seat of Satan is; and thou holdest my name, and deniedest not my faith. And in those days *was* Antipas, my faithful witness, that was slain at you, where Satan dwelleth.

<sup>14</sup> But I have against thee a few things; for thou hast there men holding the teaching of Balaam, which taught Balak to send cause of stumbling before the sons of Israel, to eat of sacrifices of idols, and to do fornication;

<sup>15</sup> so also thou hast men holding the teaching of Nicolaitans.

<sup>16</sup> Also do thou penance; if anything less, I shall come soon to thee, and I shall fight with them with the sword of my mouth.

<sup>17</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh I shall give angel meat hid [*or manna*]; and I shall give to him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, but he that taketh.

<sup>18</sup> And to the angel of the church of Thyatira write thou, These things saith the Son of God, that hath eyes as flame of fire, and his feet like latten.

<sup>19</sup> I know thy works, and faith, and charity, and thy service, and thy patience, and thy last works more than the former.

<sup>20</sup> But I have against thee a few things; for thou sufferest the woman Jezebel, which saith that she is a prophetess, to teach and deceive my servants, to do lechery, and to eat of things offered to idols.

<sup>21</sup> And I gave to her time, that she should do penance, and she would not do penance of her fornication.

<sup>22</sup> And lo! I send her into a bed, and they that do lechery with her shall be in most tribulation, but they do penance of her works.

<sup>23</sup> And I shall slay her sons into death, and all churches shall know, that I am searching reins and hearts; and I shall give to each man of you after his works.

<sup>24</sup> And I say to you, and to others that be at Thyatira, whoever have not this teaching, and that knew not the highness of Satan, how they say, I shall not send on you another charge;

<sup>25</sup> nevertheless hold ye that that ye have, till I come.

<sup>26</sup> And to him that shall overcome, and that shall keep till into the end my works, I shall give power on folks,

<sup>27</sup> and he shall govern them in an iron rod; and they shall be broken altogether, as a vessel of a potter, as also I received of my Father;

<sup>28</sup> and I shall give to him a morrow star.

<sup>29</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches.

## CHAPTER 3

<sup>1</sup> And to the angel of the church of Sardis write thou, These things saith he, that hath the seven spirits of God, and the seven stars. I know thy works, for thou hast a name, that thou livest, and thou art dead.

<sup>2</sup> Be thou waking, and confirm thou other things, that were to dying; for I find not thy works full before my God.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore have thou in mind, how thou receivedest, and heardest; and keep, and do penance. Therefore if thou wake not, I shall come as a night thief to thee, and thou shalt not know in what hour I shall come to thee.

<sup>4</sup> But thou hast a few names in Sardis, which have not defouled their clothes; and they shall walk with me in white clothes, for they be worthy.

<sup>5</sup> He that overcometh, shall be clothed thus with white clothes; and I shall not do away his name from the book of life, and I shall acknowledge his name before my Father, and before his angels.

<sup>6</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches.

<sup>7</sup> And to the angel of the church of Philadelphia write thou, These things saith the holy and true, that hath the key of David; which openeth, and no man closeth, he closeth, and no man openeth.

<sup>8</sup> I know thy works, and lo! I gave before thee a door opened, which no man may close; for thou hast a little virtue, and hast kept my word, and deniedest not my name.

<sup>9</sup> Lo! I shall give to thee of the synagogue of Satan, which say that they be Jews, and be not, but lie. Lo! I shall make

them, that they come, and worship before thy feet; and they shall know, that I loved thee,

<sup>10</sup> for thou kepest the word of my patience. And I shall keep thee from the hour of temptation, that is to coming [*or to come*] into all the world, to tempt men that dwell in earth.

<sup>11</sup> Lo! I come soon; hold thou that that thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

<sup>12</sup> And him that shall overcome, I shall make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall no more go out; and I shall write on him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, of the new Jerusalem, that cometh down from heaven of my God, and my new name.

<sup>13</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches.

<sup>14</sup> And to the angel of the church of Laodicea write thou, These things saith Amen, the faithful witness and true, which is beginning of God's creature.

<sup>15</sup> I know thy works, for neither thou art cold, neither *thou art* hot; I would that thou were cold, either hot;

<sup>16</sup> but for thou art lukewarm, and neither cold, neither hot, I shall begin to cast [*or to vomit*] thee out of my mouth.

<sup>17</sup> For thou sayest, That I am rich, and full of goods, and have need of nothing; and thou knowest not, that thou art a wretch, and wretchedful [*or wretched*], and poor, and blind, and naked.

<sup>18</sup> I counsel thee to buy of me burnt gold, that thou be made rich, and be clothed with white clothes, that the confusion [*or the shame*] of thy nakedness be not seen; and anoint thine eyes with a collyrium, *that is, a medicine for eyes, gathered of diverse herbs*, that thou see.

<sup>19</sup> I reprove, and chastise whom I love; therefore pursue thou *good men*, and do penance.

<sup>20</sup> Lo! I stand at the door, and knock; if any man heareth my voice, and openeth the gate to me, I shall enter to him, and sup with him, and he with me.

<sup>21</sup> And I shall give to him that shall overcome, to sit with me in my throne, as also I overcame, and sat with my Father in his throne.

<sup>22</sup> He that hath ears, hear he, what the Spirit saith to the churches.

## CHAPTER 4

<sup>1</sup> After these things I saw, and lo! a door was opened in heaven. And the first voice that I heard, *was* as of a trump speaking with me, and said, Go thou up hither, and I shall



show to thee which things it behooveth to be done soon after these things.

<sup>2</sup> And anon I was in Spirit, and lo! a seat was set in heaven, and upon the seat *one* sitting.

<sup>3</sup> And he that sat, was like the sight of a stone jasper, and to sardine; and a rainbow was in [*the*] compass of the seat, like the sight of emerald.

<sup>4</sup> And in the compass of the seat *were* four and twenty small seats; and above [*or upon*] the thrones four and twenty elder men sitting, covered about with white clothes, and in the heads of them golden crowns.

<sup>5</sup> And lightnings, and voices, and thunderings came out of the throne; and seven lamps burning before the throne, which be the seven spirits of God.

<sup>6</sup> And before the seat as a sea of glass, like crystal, and in the middle of the seat, and in the compass of the seat, [*were*] four beasts, full of eyes before and behind.

<sup>7</sup> And the first beast like a lion; and the second beast like a calf; and the third beast having a face as of a man; and the fourth beast like an eagle flying.

<sup>8</sup> And the four beasts had each of them six wings; and all about and within they were full of eyes; and they had not rest day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, the Lord God almighty, that was, and that is, and that is to coming [*or is to come*].

<sup>9</sup> And when those four beasts gave glory, and honour, and blessing to him that sat on the throne, that liveth into worlds of worlds,

<sup>10</sup> the four and twenty elder men fell down before him that sat on the throne, and worshipped him that liveth into worlds of worlds. And they cast their crowns before the throne, and said,

<sup>11</sup> Thou, Lord our God, art worthy to take glory, and honour, and virtue; for thou madest of nought all things, and for thy will those were, and be made of nought.

## CHAPTER 5

<sup>1</sup> And I saw in the right hand of the sitter on the throne, a book written within and without, and sealed with seven seals.

<sup>2</sup> And I saw a strong angel, preaching with a great voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to undo the seals of it?

<sup>3</sup> And none [*or no man*] in heaven, neither in earth, neither under earth, might open the book, neither behold it.

<sup>4</sup> And I wept much, for none [*or no man*] was found worthy to open the book, neither to see it.

<sup>5</sup> And one of the elder men said to me, Weep thou not; lo! a lion of the lineage of Judah, the root of David, hath overcome to open the book, and to undo the seven seals of it.

<sup>6</sup> And I saw, and lo! in the middle of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the middle of the elder men, a lamb standing as slain, that had seven horns, and seven eyes, which be [*the*] seven spirits of God, sent into all the earth.

<sup>7</sup> And he came, and took of the right hand of the sitter in the throne the book.

<sup>8</sup> And when he had opened the book, the four beasts and the four and twenty elder men fell down before the lamb; and had each of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which be the prayers of saints.

<sup>9</sup> And they sung a new song, and said, Lord our God, thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals of it; for thou were slain, and again-boughtest us to God in thy blood, of each lineage, and tongue, and people, and nation;

<sup>10</sup> and madest us a kingdom, and priests to our God; and we shall reign on earth.

<sup>11</sup> And I saw, and heard the voice of many angels all about the throne, and of the beasts, and of the elder men. And the number of them was thousands of thousands,

<sup>12</sup> saying with a great voice, The lamb that was slain, is worthy to take virtue, and Godhead [*or Divinity*], and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

<sup>13</sup> And each creature that is in heaven, and *that is on* [*the*] earth, and under earth, and the sea, and which things be in it, I heard all saying, To him that sat in the throne, and to the lamb, blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, into worlds of worlds.

<sup>14</sup> And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elder men fell down on their faces, and worshipped him that liveth into worlds of worlds.

## CHAPTER 6

<sup>1</sup> And I saw, that the lamb had opened one of the seven seals. And I heard one of the four beasts saying, as a voice of thunder, Come thou, and see.

<sup>2</sup> And I saw, and lo! a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given to him. And he went out overcoming, that he should overcome.

<sup>3</sup> And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast saying, Come thou, and see.

<sup>4</sup> And an other red horse went out; and it was given to him that sat on him, that he should take peace from the earth, and that they slay together themselves; and a great sword was given to him.

<sup>5</sup> And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast saying, Come thou, and see. And lo! a black horse; and he that sat on him had a balance in his hand.

<sup>6</sup> And I heard as a voice in the middle of the four beasts, saying, A bilibre, *that is, a weight of two pounds*, of wheat for a penny, and three bilibres of barley for a penny; and hurt thou not wine, nor oil.

<sup>7</sup> And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard a voice of the fourth beast saying, Come thou, and see.

<sup>8</sup> And lo! a pale horse; and the name *was* Death to him that sat on him, and hell pursued him. And power was given to him on four parts of the earth, to slay with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with beasts of the earth.

<sup>9</sup> And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of men slain for the word of God, and for the witnessing that they had.

<sup>10</sup> And they cried with a great voice, and said, How long thou, Lord, that art holy and true, deemest [*thou*] not, and avengest not our blood of these that dwell in the earth?

<sup>11</sup> And white stoles, for each soul a stole, were given to them; and it was said to them, that they should rest yet a little time, till the number of their fellows and of their brethren be fulfilled, that be to be slain, as also they [*were*].

<sup>12</sup> And I saw, when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo! a great earth-moving was made; and the sun was made black, as a sackcloth of hair, and all the moon was made as blood.

<sup>13</sup> And the stars of heaven felled down on the earth, as a fig tree sendeth his unripe figs, when it is moved of a great wind.

<sup>14</sup> And heaven went away, as a book wrapped in [*or enfolded*]; and all the mountains and isles were moved from their places.

<sup>15</sup> And the kings of the earth, and princes, and tribunes, and rich, and strong, and each bondman, and free man, hid them in dens and stones of hills.

<sup>16</sup> And they say to hills and to stones, Fall ye on us, and hide ye us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the lamb;

<sup>17</sup> for the great day of their wrath cometh, and who shall be able to stand?

## CHAPTER 7

<sup>1</sup> After these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding *[the]* four winds of the earth, that they blew not on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

<sup>2</sup> And I saw another angel ascending or going up from the rising of the sun, that had a sign of the living God. And he cried with a great voice to the four angels, to which it was given to annoy the earth, and the sea,

<sup>3</sup> and said, Do not ye annoy the earth, and the sea, neither *[to]* trees, till we mark the servants of our God in the foreheads of them.

<sup>4</sup> And I heard the number of men that were marked, an hundred thousand and four and forty thousand marked, of every lineage of the sons of Israel;

<sup>5</sup> of the lineage of Judah, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Reuben, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Gad, twelve thousand marked;

<sup>6</sup> of the lineage of Aser, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Nephthalim, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Manasses, twelve thousand marked;

<sup>7</sup> of the lineage of Simeon, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Levi, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Issachar, twelve thousand marked;

<sup>8</sup> of the lineage of Zebulon, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Joseph, twelve thousand marked; of the lineage of Benjamin, twelve thousand marked.

<sup>9</sup> After these things I saw a great people, whom no man might number, of all folks, and lineages, and peoples, and languages *[or tongues]*, standing before the throne, in the sight of the lamb; *and they were* clothed with white stoles, and palms *were* in the hands of them.

<sup>10</sup> And they cried with a great voice, and said, Health to our God, that sitteth on the throne, and to the lamb.

<sup>11</sup> And all the angels stood all about the throne, and of the elder men, and the four beasts. And they fell down in the sight of the throne, on their faces, and worshipped God,

<sup>12</sup> and said, Amen! blessing, and clearness, and wisdom, and doing of thankings, and honour, and virtue, and strength to our God, into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>13</sup> And one of the elder men answered, and said to me, Who be these, that be clothed with white stoles? and from whence came they?

<sup>14</sup> And I said to him, My lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These be they, that came from great tribulation, and

washed their stoles, and made them white in the blood of the lamb.

<sup>15</sup> Therefore they be before the throne of God, and serve to him day and night, in his temple. And he that sitteth in the throne, dwelleth on them.

<sup>16</sup> They shall no more hunger, neither thirst, neither [*the*] sun shall fall on them, nor any heat.

<sup>17</sup> For the lamb, that is in the middle of the throne, shall govern them, and shall lead forth them [*or lead them forth*] to the wells of waters of life; and God shall wipe away each tear from the eyes of them.

## CHAPTER 8

<sup>1</sup> And when he had opened the seventh seal, a silence [*or silence*] was made in heaven, as half an hour.

<sup>2</sup> And I saw seven angels standing in the sight of God, and seven trumps were given to them.

<sup>3</sup> And another angel came, and stood before the altar, and had a golden censer; and many incenses were given to him, that he should give of the prayers of all saints on the golden altar, that is before the throne of God.

<sup>4</sup> And the smoke of the incenses of the prayers of the holy men ascended or went up from the angel's hand before God.

<sup>5</sup> And the angel took the censer, and filled it of the fire of the altar, and cast [*it*] into the earth. And thunders, and voices, and lightnings were made, and a great earth-moving.

<sup>6</sup> And the seven angels, that had the seven trumps, made them ready, that they should trump.

<sup>7</sup> And the first angel trumped; and hail was made, and fire mingled together in blood; and it was sent into the earth. And the third part of the earth was burnt, and the third part of trees was burnt, and all the green grass was burnt.

<sup>8</sup> And the second angel trumped; and as a great hill burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea was made blood,

<sup>9</sup> and the third part of creature was dead, that had lives in the sea, and the third part of [*the*] ships perished.

<sup>10</sup> And the third angel trumped; and a great star burning as a little brand, fell from heaven; and it fell into the third part of floods, and into the wells of waters.

<sup>11</sup> And the name of the star is said Wormwood. And the third part of waters was made into wormwood; and many men were dead of the waters, for those were made bitter.

<sup>12</sup> And the fourth angel trumped; and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of [*the*] stars, so that the third part of them

was darked, and the third part of the day shined not, and also of the night.

<sup>13</sup> And I saw, and heard the voice of an eagle flying by the middle of heaven, and saying with a great voice, Woe! woe! woe! to men that dwell in earth, of the other voices of the three angels, that shall trump after.

## CHAPTER 9

<sup>1</sup> And the fifth angel trumped; and I saw, that a star had fallen down from heaven into earth; and the key of the pit of deepness was given to it.

<sup>2</sup> And it [*or he*] opened the pit of deepness, and a smoke of the pit went up, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun was darked, and the air, of the smoke of the pit.

<sup>3</sup> And locusts went out of the smoke of the pit into earth; and power was given to them, as scorpions of the earth have power.

<sup>4</sup> And it was commanded to them, that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only men, that have not the sign [*or the mark*] of God in their foreheads.

<sup>5</sup> And it was given to them, that they should not slay them, but that they should be tormented five months; and the tormenting of them, as the tormenting of a scorpion, when he smiteth a man.

<sup>6</sup> And in those days men shall seek death, and they shall not find it; and they shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

<sup>7</sup> And the likeness of locusts *be* like horses made ready into battle; and on the heads of them as crowns like gold, and the faces of them as the faces of men.

<sup>8</sup> And they had hairs, as the hairs of women; and the teeth of them were as the teeth of lions.

<sup>9</sup> And they had habergeons, as iron habergeons, and the voice of their wings as the voice of chariots of many horses running to battle.

<sup>10</sup> And they had tails like scorpions, and pricks were in the tails of them; and the might of them was to annoy men five months.

<sup>11</sup> And they had on them a king, the angel of deepness, to whom the name in Hebrew is Abaddon, but by Greek Apollyon, and by Latin he hath a name Exterminus, *that is, Destroyer*.

<sup>12</sup> One woe is passed, and lo! yet come two woes.

<sup>13</sup> After these things also the sixth angel trumped; and I heard a voice from the four corners of the golden altar, that is before the eyes of God,

<sup>14</sup> and said to the sixth angel that had a trump, Unbind thou [*the*] four angels, that be bound in the great flood Euphrates.

<sup>15</sup> And the four angels were unbound, which were ready into hour, and day, and month, and year, to slay the third part of men.

<sup>16</sup> And the number of the host of horsemen was twenty thousand times ten thousand. And I heard the number of them.

<sup>17</sup> And so I saw horses in vision; and they that sat on them had fiery habergeons, and of jacinth, and of brimstone. And the heads of the horses were as [*the*] heads of lions; and fire, and smoke, and brimstone, cometh forth of the mouth of them.

<sup>18</sup> Of these three plagues the third part of men was slain, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, that came out of the mouth of them.

<sup>19</sup> For the power of the horses is in the mouth of them, and in the tails of them; for the tails of them *be* like to serpents, having heads, and in them they annoy.

<sup>20</sup> And the other men, that were not slain in these plagues, neither did penance of the works of their hands, that they worshipped not devils, and simulacra of gold, and of silver, and of brass, and of stone, and of tree, which neither may see, neither hear, neither wander;

<sup>21</sup> and [*they*] did not penance of their manslayings, neither of their witchcrafts, neither of their fornication, neither of their thefts, *were slain*.

## CHAPTER 10

<sup>1</sup> And I saw another strong angel coming down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and the rainbow on his head; and the face of him was as the sun, and the feet of him as a pillar of fire.

<sup>2</sup> And he had in his hand a little book opened; and he set his right foot on the sea, and the left foot on the earth.

<sup>3</sup> And he cried with a great voice, as a lion when he roareth; and when he had cried, the seven thunders spake their voices.

<sup>4</sup> And when the seven thunders had spoken their voices, I was to write. And I heard a voice from heaven, saying, Mark thou what things the seven thunders spake, and do not thou write them.

<sup>5</sup> And the angel whom I saw standing above the sea, and above the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

<sup>6</sup> and swore by him that liveth into worlds of worlds, that made of nought heaven, and those things that be in it, and

the earth, and those things that be in it, and the sea, and those things that be in it, that time shall no more be.

<sup>7</sup> But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to trump, the mystery of God shall be ended [*or be fulfilled*], as he preached by his servants prophets.

<sup>8</sup> And I heard a voice from heaven again speaking with me, and saying, Go thou, and take the book, that is opened, from the hand of the angel, that standeth above the sea, and on the land.

<sup>9</sup> And I went to the angel, and said to him, that he should give me the book. And he said to me, Take the book, and devour it; and it shall make thy womb to be bitter, but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey.

<sup>10</sup> And I took the book of the angel's hand, and devoured it, and it was in my mouth as sweet [*as*] honey; and when I had devoured it, my womb was bitter.

<sup>11</sup> And he said to me, It behooveth thee again to prophesy to heathen men, and to peoples, and languages [*or tongues*], and to many kings.

## CHAPTER 11

<sup>1</sup> And a reed like a rod was given to me, and it was said to me, Rise thou, and mete the temple of God, and the altar, and men that worship in it.

<sup>2</sup> But cast thou out the foreyard [*or the porch*], that is without the temple, and mete not it; for it is given to heathen men, and they shall defoul the holy city by forty months and twain.

<sup>3</sup> And I shall give to my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand days two hundred and sixty, and [*they*] shall be clothed with sackcloths.

<sup>4</sup> These be two olives, and two candlesticks, and they stand in the sight of the Lord of the earth.

<sup>5</sup> And if any man will annoy them, fire shall go out of the mouth of them, and shall devour their enemies. And if any [*man*] will hurt them, thus it behooveth him to be slain.

<sup>6</sup> These have power to close [*or to shut up*] heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy; and they have power on waters, to turn them into blood; and to smite the earth with every plague, and as oft as they will.

<sup>7</sup> And when they shall end their witnessing, the beast that ascendeth or goeth up from deepness [*or the depth*], shall make battle against them, and shall overcome them, and shall slay them.



<sup>8</sup> And the bodies of them shall lie in the streets of the great city, that is called ghostly Sodom, and Egypt, where the Lord of them was crucified.

<sup>9</sup> And some of the lineages, and of peoples, and of languages, and of heathen men, shall see the bodies of them by three days and an half; and they shall not suffer the bodies of them to be put in burials.

<sup>10</sup> And men inhabiting the earth shall have joy on them; and they shall make merry, and shall send gifts together, for these two prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth.

<sup>11</sup> And after three days and an half, the spirit of life of God entered into them; and they stood on their feet, and great dread fell on them that saw.

<sup>12</sup> And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying to them, Come up hither. And they ascended [*or went up*] into heaven in a cloud, and the enemies of them saw them.

<sup>13</sup> And in that hour a great earth-moving was made, and the tenth part of the city fell down; and the names of men seven thousand were slain in the earth-moving; and the others were sent into dread, and gave glory to God of heaven.

<sup>14</sup> The second woe is gone, and lo! the third woe shall come soon.

<sup>15</sup> And the seventh angel trumped, and great voices were made in heaven, and said, The realm of this world is made of our Lord or our Lord's, and of Christ [*or Christ's*], his Son; and he shall reign into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>16</sup> And the four and twenty elder men, that sat in their seats in the sight of the Lord, fell on their faces, and worshipped God,

<sup>17</sup> and said, We do thankings to thee, Lord God almighty, which art, and which were, and which art to coming [*or to come*]; which hast taken thy great virtue, and hast reigned.

<sup>18</sup> And folks be wroth, and thy wrath came, and time of dead men to be deemed, and to yield meed to thy servants, and prophets, and hallows, and dreading thy name, to small and to great, and to destroy them that corrupted the earth.

<sup>19</sup> And the temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark of his testament was seen in his temple; and lightnings were made, and voices, and thunders, and earth-moving, and great hail.

## CHAPTER 12

<sup>1</sup> And a great sign appeared in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and in the head of her a crown of twelve stars.

<sup>2</sup> And she had [*child*] in womb, [*or being with child*], and she cried, travailing of child, and is tormented, that she bear child.

<sup>3</sup> And another sign was seen in heaven; and lo! a great red dragon, that had seven heads, and ten horns, and in the heads of him seven diadems.

<sup>4</sup> And the tail of him drew the third part of [*the*] stars of heaven, and sent them into the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman, that was to bearing child, that when she had born child, he should devour her child.

<sup>5</sup> And she bare a man child, that was to ruling all folks in an iron rod; and her son was ravished to God, and to his throne.

<sup>6</sup> And the woman flew into wilderness, where she hath a place made ready of God, that he feed her there a thousand days two hundred and sixty.

<sup>7</sup> And a great battle was made in heaven, and Michael and his angels fought with the dragon. And the dragon fought, and his angels;

<sup>8</sup> and they had not might, neither the place of them was found more in heaven.

<sup>9</sup> And that dragon was cast down, the great old serpent, that is called the Devil, and Satan, that deceiveth all the world; he was cast down into the earth, and his angels were sent with him.

<sup>10</sup> And I heard a great voice in heaven, saying, Now is made health, and virtue, and kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before the sight of our God day and night.

<sup>11</sup> And they overcame him for the blood of the lamb, and for the word of his witnessing; and they loved not their lives [*or their souls*] till to the death.

<sup>12</sup> Therefore, ye heavens, be ye glad, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the earth, and to the sea; for the fiend is come down to you, and hath great wrath, witting that he hath little time.

<sup>13</sup> And after that the dragon saw, that he was cast down into the earth, he pursued the woman, that bare the man child.

<sup>14</sup> And two wings of a great eagle were given to the woman, that she should fly [*or should flee*] into desert, into her place, where she is fed by time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

<sup>15</sup> And the serpent sent out of his mouth after the woman water as a flood, that he should make her to be drawn of the flood.

<sup>16</sup> And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened his mouth, and sopped up the flood, that the dragon sent [*out*] of his mouth.

<sup>17</sup> And the dragon was wroth against the woman, and he went to make battle with others of her seed, that keep the commandments of God, and have the witnessing of Jesus Christ.

<sup>18</sup> And he stood on the gravel of the sea.

## CHAPTER 13

<sup>1</sup> And I saw a beast going up of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns; and on his horns ten diadems, and on his heads the names [*or the name*] of blasphemy.

<sup>2</sup> And the beast whom I saw, was like a [*leo*] pard, and his feet as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion; and the dragon gave his virtue and great power to him.

<sup>3</sup> And I saw one of his heads, as slain into death; and the wound of his death was cured [*or healed*]. And all the earth wondered after the beast.

<sup>4</sup> And they worshipped the dragon, that gave power to the beast; and they worshipped the beast, and said, Who is like to the beast, and who shall be able to fight with it?

<sup>5</sup> And a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies, was given to it; and power was given to it, to do two and forty months.

<sup>6</sup> And it opened his mouth into blasphemies to God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

<sup>7</sup> And it was given to him to make battle with saints, and to overcome them; and power was given to him into each lineage, and people, and language, and folk.

<sup>8</sup> And all men worshipped it, that dwell in earth, whose names be not written in the book of life of the lamb, that was slain from the beginning of the world.

<sup>9</sup> If any man hath ears, hear he.

<sup>10</sup> He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity; he that slayeth with sword, it behooveth him to be slain with sword. This is the patience and the faith of saints.

<sup>11</sup> And I saw another beast going up from the earth, and it had two horns, like the lamb; and it spake as the dragon,

<sup>12</sup> and [*it*] did all the power of the former beast, in his sight. And it made the earth, and men dwelling in it, to worship the first beast, whose wound of death was cured [*or healed*].

<sup>13</sup> And it did great signs, that also it made fire to come down from heaven to the earth, in the sight of all men.

<sup>14</sup> And it deceiveth men, that dwell in earth, for signs which be given to it to do in the sight of the beast; saying to men that dwell in earth, that they make an image of the beast, that hath the wound of *[a]* sword, and lived.

<sup>15</sup> And it was given to him, that he should give *[a]* spirit to the image of the beast, and that the image of the beast speak. And he shall make, that whoever honour not the image of the beast, be slain.

<sup>16</sup> And he shall make all, small and great, rich and poor, free men and bondmen, to have a character, *either mark*, in their right hand, either in their foreheads;

<sup>17</sup> that no man may buy, either sell, but they have the character, either the name of the beast, either the number of his name.

<sup>18</sup> Here is wisdom; he that hath understanding, account the number of the beast; for it is the number of man, and his number is six hundred sixty and six.

## CHAPTER 14

<sup>1</sup> And I saw, and lo! a lamb stood on the mount of Zion *[or on the mount Zion]*, and with him an hundred thousand and four and forty thousand, having his name, and the name of his Father written in their foreheads.

<sup>2</sup> And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder; and the voice which I heard, *was* as of many harpers harping in their harps.

<sup>3</sup> And they sung as a new song before the seat of God, and before the four beasts, and the elder men. And no man might say the song, but those hundred thousand and four and forty thousand, that be bought from the earth.

<sup>4</sup> These it be, that be not defouled with women; for they be virgins. These pursue the lamb, whither ever he shall go; these be bought of all men, the first fruits to God, and to the lamb;

<sup>5</sup> and in the mouth of them leasing is not found; for they be without wem before the throne of God.

<sup>6</sup> And I saw another angel, flying by the middle of heaven, having an everlasting gospel *[or the everlasting gospel]*, that he should preach *[or evangelize]* to men sitting on the earth, and on each folk, and lineage, and language, and people;

<sup>7</sup> and said with a great voice, Dread ye the Lord, and give ye to him honour, for the hour of his doom cometh; and worship ye him, that made heaven and earth, the sea, and all things that be in them, and the wells of waters.

<sup>8</sup> And another angel pursued, saying, That great *[city]* Babylon fell down, fell down, which gave drink to all folks of the wine of *[the]* wrath of her fornication.

<sup>9</sup> And the third angel pursued them, and said with a great voice, If any man worship the beast, and the image of it, and taketh the character in his forehead, either in his hand,

<sup>10</sup> this shall drink of the wine of God's wrath, that is mingled with clear wine in the cup of his wrath, and *[he]* shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the sight of *[the]* holy angels, and before the sight of the lamb.

<sup>11</sup> And the smoke of their torments shall ascend or go up into the worlds of worlds; neither they have rest day and night, which worship the beast and his image, and if any take the character of his name.

<sup>12</sup> Here is the patience of saints, which keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

<sup>13</sup> And I heard a voice from heaven, saying to me, Write thou, Blessed *be* dead men, that die in the Lord; from henceforth now the Spirit saith, that they rest of their travails; for the works of them pursue them.

<sup>14</sup> And I saw, and lo! a white cloud, and above the cloud a sitter *[or one sitting]*, like the son of man, having in his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

<sup>15</sup> And another angel went out of the temple, and cried with great voice to him that sat on the cloud, Send thy sickle, and reap, for the hour cometh, that it be reaped; for the corn of the earth is ripe.

<sup>16</sup> And he that sat on the cloud, sent his sickle into the earth, and reaped the earth.

<sup>17</sup> And another angel went out of the temple, that is in heaven, and he also had a sharp sickle.

<sup>18</sup> And another angel went out from the altar, that had power on fire; and he cried with a great voice to him that had the sharp sickle, and said, Send thy sharp sickle, and cut away *[or cut off]* the clusters of the vineyard of the earth, for the grapes of it be ripe.

<sup>19</sup> And the angel sent his sickle into the earth, and gathered grapes of the vineyard of the earth, and sent into the great pit of God's wrath.

<sup>20</sup> And the pit was trodden without the city, and the blood went out of the pit, till to the horses' bridles, by furlongs a thousand and six hundred.

## CHAPTER 15

<sup>1</sup> And I saw another sign in heaven, great and wonderful; seven angels having the seven last vengeance *[or plagues]*, for the wrath of God is ended in them.

<sup>2</sup> And I saw as a glassen sea mingled with fire, and them that overcame the beast, and his image, and the number of his name, standing above the glassen sea, having the harps of God;

<sup>3</sup> and singing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the lamb, and said, Great and wonderful be thy works, Lord God almighty; thy ways be just and true, Lord, king of worlds.

<sup>4</sup> Lord, who shall not dread thee, and magnify thy name? for thou alone art merciful *[or pious]*; for all folks shall come, and worship in thy sight, for thy dooms be open.

<sup>5</sup> And after these things I saw, and lo! the temple of the tabernacle of witnessing was opened in heaven;

<sup>6</sup> and seven angels having *[the]* seven plagues, went out of the temple, and were clothed with a stole clean and white, and were before-girded with golden girdles about the breasts.

<sup>7</sup> And one of the four beasts gave to the seven angels seven golden vials, full of the wrath of God, that liveth into worlds of worlds.

<sup>8</sup> And the temple was filled with smoke of the majesty of God, and of the virtue of him; and no man might enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were ended.

## CHAPTER 16

<sup>1</sup> And I heard a great voice from heaven, saying to the seven angels, Go ye, and shed out the seven vials of God's wrath into the earth.

<sup>2</sup> And the first angel went, and shedded out his vial into the earth; and a wound fierce and worst was made on all that had the character *[or the mark]* of the beast, and on them that worshipped the beast, and his image.

<sup>3</sup> And the second angel shedded out his vial into the sea, and the blood was made, as of a dead thing; and each man living was dead in the sea.

<sup>4</sup> And the third angel shedded out his vial on the floods, and on the wells of waters, *[and blood is made]*,

<sup>5</sup> and said *[or and I heard the angel of waters saying]*, Just art thou, Lord, that art, and that were holy, that deemest these things;

<sup>6</sup> for they shedded out the blood of hallows, and prophets, and thou hast given to them blood to drink; for they be worthy.

<sup>7</sup> And I heard another [*angel*] saying, Yea! Lord God almighty, true and just *be* thy dooms.

<sup>8</sup> And the fourth angel shedded out his vial into the sun, and it was given to him to torment men with heat and fire.

<sup>9</sup> And men sweltered with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God having power on these plagues, neither they did penance, that they should give glory to him.

<sup>10</sup> And the fifth angel shedded out his vial on the seat of the beast, and his kingdom was made dark; and they ate together their tongues for sorrow,

<sup>11</sup> and they blasphemed God of heaven, for sorrows of their wounds [*or for sorrows and their wounds*]; and they did not penance of their works.

<sup>12</sup> And the sixth angel shedded out his vial into that great flood Euphrates, and dried the water of it, that [*the*] way were made ready to kings from the sun rising.

<sup>13</sup> And I saw three unclean spirits by the manner of frogs go out of the mouth of the dragon, and of the mouth of the beast, and of the mouth of the false prophet.

<sup>14</sup> For they be spirits of devils, making signs, [*or wonders*], and they go forth to kings of all earth, to gather them into [*a*] battle, to the great day of almighty God.

<sup>15</sup> Lo! I come, as a night thief. Blessed is he that waketh, and keepeth his clothes, that he wander not naked, and that they see not the filthhood of him.

<sup>16</sup> And he shall gather them [*or And he gathered them*] into a place, that is called in Hebrew Armageddon.

<sup>17</sup> And the seventh angel shedded out his vial into the air, and a great voice went out of heaven from the throne, and said, It is done.

<sup>18</sup> And lightnings were made, and voices, and thunders; and a great earth-moving was made, which manner never was, since men were on earth, such earth-moving so great.

<sup>19</sup> And the great city was made [*or was broken*] into three parts, and the cities of heathen men felled down; and great Babylon came into mind before God, to give to it the cup of wine of the indignation of his wrath.

<sup>20</sup> And each isle flew away, and hills be not found.

<sup>21</sup> And a great hail as a talent came down from heaven into men; and men blasphemed God, for the plague of hail, for it was made full great.

## CHAPTER 17

<sup>1</sup> And one of the seven angels came, that had seven vials, and spake with me, and said, Come thou, I shall show to thee the damnation of the great whore, that sitteth on many waters,

<sup>2</sup> with which kings of the earth did fornication; and they that dwell in the earth be made drunk of the wine of her lechery.

<sup>3</sup> And he took me [*away*] into desert in Spirit. And I saw a woman sitting on a red beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

<sup>4</sup> And the woman was environed with purple, and red, and over-gilded with gold, and precious stone, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and uncleanness of her fornication.

<sup>5</sup> And a name written in the forehead of her, Mystery, Babylon the great, mother of fornications, and of abominations of the earth.

<sup>6</sup> And I saw a woman drunken of the blood of saints, and of the blood of martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I wondered with great wondering.

<sup>7</sup> And the angel said to me, Why wonderest thou? I shall say to thee the sacrament, *that is, privy signification*, of the woman, and of the beast that beareth her, that hath seven heads and ten horns.

<sup>8</sup> The beast which thou seest [*or thou sawest*], was, and is not; and she shall ascend or go up from [*the*] deepness, and she shall go into perishing. And men dwelling in earth shall wonder, whose names be not written in the book of life from the making of the world, seeing the beast, that was, and is not.

<sup>9</sup> And this is the wit, who that hath wisdom. The seven heads be seven hills, on which the woman sitteth,

<sup>10</sup> and kings seven be [*or and be seven kings*]. Five have felled down, and one is, and another cometh not yet. And when he shall come, it behooveth him to dwell a short time.

<sup>11</sup> And the beast that was, and is not, and she is the eighth, and is of the seven, and shall go into perishing.

<sup>12</sup> And the ten horns which thou hast seen, be ten kings, that yet have not taken kingdom; but they shall take power as kings, one hour after the beast.

<sup>13</sup> These have one counsel, and shall betake their virtue and power to the beast.

<sup>14</sup> These shall fight with the lamb, and the lamb shall overcome them; for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that be with him, *be* called, [*and*] chosen, and faithful.



15 And he said to me, The waters which thou hast seen, where the whore sitteth, be peoples, and folks, and languages.

16 And the ten horns that thou hast seen in the beast, these shall [*hate the fornicary woman, or whore, and shall*] make her desolate and naked, and shall eat the fleshs of her, and shall burn altogether her with fire [*or shall burn her altogether with fire*].

17 For God gave into the hearts of them, that they do that that is pleasant to him [*or before him*], that they give their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God be ended.

18 And the woman whom thou hast seen, is the great city, that hath kingdom on the kings of the earth.

## CHAPTER 18

1 And after these things I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened [*or lighted*] of his glory.

2 And he cried with a strong voice, saying, Great Babylon felled down, felled down, and is made the habitation of devils, and the keeping of each unclean spirit, and the keeping of each unclean fowl, and hateful.

3 For all folks drunk of the wrath of the fornication of her, and kings of the earth, and merchants of the earth, did fornication with her; and they be made rich of the virtue of [*the*] delights of her.

4 And I heard another voice of heaven, saying, My people, go ye out of it, and be ye not partners of the trespasses of it, and ye shall not receive of the wounds [*or the plagues*] of it.

5 For the sins of it came unto heaven, and the Lord had mind of the wickedness of it.

6 Yield ye to it, as she yielded to you; and double ye double things, after her works; in the drink that she meddled to you, meddle or mingle ye double to her.

7 As much as she glorified herself, and was in delights, so much torment give ye to her, and wailing, [*or weeping, or mourning*]; for in her heart she saith, I sit a queen, and I am not a widow, and I shall not see wailing, [*or weeping, or mourning*].

8 And therefore in one day her wounds [*or her plagues*] shall come, death, and mourning, and hunger; and she shall be burnt in fire, for God is strong, that shall deem her.

9 And the kings of the earth shall bewep, and bewail themselves on her, which did fornication with her, and lived in delights, when they shall see the smoke of the burning of it;

<sup>10</sup> standing afar, for dread of the torments of it, saying, Woe! woe! that great city Babylon, and that strong city; for in one hour thy doom cometh.

<sup>11</sup> And merchants of the earth shall weep on it, and mourn, for no man shall buy more the merchandise of them;

<sup>12</sup> the merchandise of gold, and of silver, and of precious stone, and of pearl, and of bis, and of purple, and of silk, and of cotton, and of each tree thiyne, and all vessels of ivory, and all vessels of precious stone, and of brass, and of iron, and of marble.

<sup>13</sup> and of cinnamon, and of sweet smelling things, and ointments, and of incense, and of wine, and of oil, and of flour, and of wheat, and of work beasts, and of sheep, and of horses, and of chariots, and of servants, and of other lives of men.

<sup>14</sup> And thine apples of the desire of thy life, [*or thine apples, the desires of thy life*], went away from thee, and all fatted things, and full clear perished from thee.

<sup>15</sup> And merchants of these things shall no more find those things [*or these goods*]. They that be made rich of it, shall stand [*a*] far, for dread of torments of it, weeping, and mourning,

<sup>16</sup> and saying, Woe! woe! that great city, that was clothed with bis, and purple, and red scarlet, and was over-gilded with gold, and precious stone, and margarites,

<sup>17</sup> for in one hour so many riches be destitute, *either done away*. And each governor, and all that sail by ship into place, and mariners, and they that work in the sea, stood far,

<sup>18</sup> and cried, seeing the place of the burning of it, saying, What [*city*]is like this great city?

<sup>19</sup> And they cast powder on their heads, and cried, weeping, and mourning, and saying, Woe! woe! that great city, in which all that have ships in the sea be made rich of the prices of it; for in one hour it is desolate.

<sup>20</sup> Heaven, and holy apostles, and prophets, make ye full out joy on it, for God hath deemed your doom on it.

<sup>21</sup> And one strong angel took up a stone, as a great millstone, and cast into the sea, and said, In this force [*or this fierceness*] that great city Babylon shall be sent, and now it shall no more be found.

<sup>22</sup> And the voice of harps, and of men of music, and singing with pipe and trump, shall no more be heard in it. And each craftsman, and each craft, shall no more be found in it. And the voice of a millstone shall no more be heard in thee,

<sup>23</sup> and the light of [*the*] lantern shall no more shine in thee, and the voice of the husband and of the wife shall no more be heard in thee; for thy merchants were princes of the earth. For in thy witchcrafts all folks erred.

<sup>24</sup> And the blood of prophets and of saints is found in it, and of all men that be slain in earth.

## CHAPTER 19

<sup>1</sup> After these things I heard as a great voice of many trumps in heaven, saying, Alleluia; praising, and glory, and virtue is to our God;

<sup>2</sup> for true and just be the dooms of him, which deemed the great whore, that defouled [*or corrupted*] the earth in her lechery, and avenged the blood of his servants, of the hands of her.

<sup>3</sup> And again they said, Alleluia. And the smoke of it goeth up, into the worlds of worlds.

<sup>4</sup> And the four and twenty elder men and the four beasts felled down, and worshipped God sitting on the throne, and said, Amen, Alleluia.

<sup>5</sup> And a voice went out of the throne, and said, All the servants of our God, say ye praisings to our God, and ye that dread God, small and great.

<sup>6</sup> And I heard a voice [*as*] of a great trump, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of great thunders, saying, Alleluia; for our Lord God almighty hath reigned.

<sup>7</sup> Joy we, and make we mirth, [*or Joy we withinforth, and glad we withoutforth*], and give glory to him; for the weddings of the lamb came, and the wife of him made ready herself.

<sup>8</sup> And it was given to her, that she cover her [*self*] with white bissyn shining; for why bissyn is the justifyinges of saints.

<sup>9</sup> And he said to me, Write thou, Blessed *be* they that be called to the supper of the weddings of the lamb. And he said to me, These words of God be true.

<sup>10</sup> And I felled down before his feet, to worship him. And he said to me, See thou, that thou do not; I am a servant with thee, and of thy brethren, having the witnessing of Jesus; worship thou God. For the witnessing of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

<sup>11</sup> And I saw heaven opened, and lo! a white horse, and he that sat on him was called Faithful and soothfast; and with rightwiseness he deemeth, and fighteth.

<sup>12</sup> And his eyes were as flame of fire, and in his head many diadems; and he had a name written, which no man knew, but he.

<sup>13</sup> And he was clothed in a cloth sprinkled with blood; and the name of him was called The Son of God [*or The Word of God*].

<sup>14</sup> And the hosts that be in heaven, pursued him on white horses, clothed with bissyn, white and clean.

<sup>15</sup> And a sword sharp on either side [*or on each side*] came forth of his mouth, that with it he smite folks; and he shall rule them with an iron rod. And he treadeth the presser of wine of strong vengeance of the wrath of almighty God.

<sup>16</sup> And he hath written in his cloth, and in the hip [*or in his hem*], King of kings and Lord of lords.

<sup>17</sup> And I saw an angel, standing in the sun; and he cried with a great voice, and said to all birds that flew by the middle of heaven, Come ye, and be ye gathered [*together*] to the great supper of God,

<sup>18</sup> that ye eat the flesh of kings, and [*the*] flesh of tribunes, and [*the*] flesh of strong men, and flesh of horses, and of those that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men and of bondmen, and of small and of great.

<sup>19</sup> And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and the hosts of them gathered, to make battle with him, that sat on the horse, and with his host.

<sup>20</sup> And the beast was caught, and with her the false prophet, that made signs before her; in which he deceived them that took the character [*or the mark*] of the beast, and that worshipped the image of it. These two were sent quick into the pool of fire, burning with brimstone.

<sup>21</sup> And the others were slain with the sword of him that sat on the horse, that cometh forth of the mouth of him; and all birds were [*full*]-filled with the flesh of them.

## CHAPTER 20

<sup>1</sup> And I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key of deepness, and a great chain in his hand.

<sup>2</sup> And he caught the dragon, the old serpent, that is the Devil and Satan; and he bound him by a thousand years.

<sup>3</sup> And he sent him into deepness, and enclosed, and marked [*or sealed*] on him, that he deceive no more the folks, till a thousand years be [*ful*]-filled. After these things it behooveth him to be unbound a little time.

<sup>4</sup> And I saw seats, and they sat on them, and doom was given to them. And the souls of men beheaded for the witnessing of Jesus, and for the word of God, and them that worshipped not the beast, neither the image of it, neither took the character of it in their foreheads, neither in their

hands. And they lived, and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

<sup>5</sup> And others of dead men lived not, till a thousand years were ended. This is the first again-rising.

<sup>6</sup> Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first again-rising. In these men the second death hath not power [*or no power*]; but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and they shall reign with him a thousand years.

<sup>7</sup> And when a thousand years shall be ended, Satan shall be unbound of his prison;

<sup>8</sup> and he shall go out, and shall deceive folks, that be on four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog. And he shall gather them [*together*] into battle, whose number is as the gravel of the sea.

<sup>9</sup> And they went up on the broadness of the earth, and environed the castles of saints, and the loved city. And fire came down of God from heaven, and devoured them.

<sup>10</sup> And the devil, that deceived them, was sent into the pool of fire and brimstone, where both the beast and false prophets shall be tormented day and night, into worlds of worlds. Amen.

<sup>11</sup> And I saw a great white throne, and one sitting on it, from whose sight earth fled [*or flew away*], and heaven; and the place is not found of them.

<sup>12</sup> And I saw dead men, great and small, standing in the sight of the throne; and books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life; and dead men were deemed of these things that were written in the books, after the works of them.

<sup>13</sup> And the sea gave his dead men, that were in it; and death and hell gave their dead, that were in them. And it was deemed of each, after the works of them.

<sup>14</sup> And hell and death were sent into the pool of fire. This is the second death.

<sup>15</sup> And he that was not found written in the book of life, was sent into the pool of fire.

## CHAPTER 21

<sup>1</sup> And I saw new heaven and new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth went away, and the sea is not now.

<sup>2</sup> And I, John, saw the holy city Jerusalem, new, coming down from heaven, made ready of God, as a wife adorned to her husband.

<sup>3</sup> And I heard a great voice from the throne, saying, Lo! the tabernacle of God is with men, and he shall dwell with

them; and they shall be his people, and he God with them shall be their God.

<sup>4</sup> And God shall wipe away each tear from the eyes of them; and death shall no more be, neither mourning, neither crying, neither sorrow, shall be over; which first things went away.

<sup>5</sup> And he said, that sat in the throne, Lo! I make all things new. And he said to me, Write thou, for these words be most faithful and true.

<sup>6</sup> And he said to me, It is done; I am alpha and omega, the beginning and the end. I shall give freely of the well of quick water to him that thirsteth.

<sup>7</sup> He that shall overcome, shall wield these things; and I shall be God to him, and he shall be son to me.

<sup>8</sup> But to fearedful men, and unbelieveful, and cursed, and man-quellers, and fornicators, and to witches, and to worshippers of idols, and to all liars, the part of them shall be in the pool burning with fire and brimstone, that is the second death.

<sup>9</sup> And one came of the seven angels, having vials full of the seven last vengeance *[or the seven last plagues]*. And he spake with me, and said, Come thou, and I shall show to thee the spouses, the wife of the lamb.

<sup>10</sup> And he took me up in Spirit into a great hill and high; and he showed to me the holy city of Jerusalem, coming down from heaven of God,

<sup>11</sup> having the clarity of God; and the light of it like *[to]* a precious stone, as the stone jasper, as crystal.

<sup>12</sup> And it had a wall great and high, having twelve gates, and in the gates of it twelve angels, and names written in, that be the names of *[the]* twelve lineages of the sons of Israel;

<sup>13</sup> from the east three gates, and from the north three gates, and from the south three gates, and from the west three gates.

<sup>14</sup> And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them, the twelve names of the twelve apostles, and of the lamb.

<sup>15</sup> And he that spake with me, had a golden measure of a reed, that he should mete the city, and the gates of it, and the wall.

<sup>16</sup> And the city was set in square; and the length of it is so much, as much as is the breadth. And he meted the city with the reed, by furlongs twelve thousands. And the height, and the length and the breadth of it, be even.

<sup>17</sup> And he meted the walls of it, of an hundred and forty and four cubits, by measure of man, that is, of the angel.

<sup>18</sup> And the building of the wall thereof was of the stone jasper. And the city itself was clean gold, like *[to]* clean glass.

<sup>19</sup> And the foundations of the wall of the city *were* adorned with all precious stone. The first foundation, jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald;

<sup>20</sup> the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolyte; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprase; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst.

<sup>21</sup> And the twelve gates be twelve margarites, by each; and each gate was of each margarite. And the streets of the city *were* clean gold, as of glass full shining.

<sup>22</sup> And I saw no temple in it, for the Lord God almighty and the lamb, is the temple of it.

<sup>23</sup> And the city hath no need of the sun, neither moon, that they shine in it; for the clarity of God shall lighten *[or shall light]* it; and the lamb is the lantern of it.

<sup>24</sup> And folks shall walk in the light of it; and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory and honour into it.

<sup>25</sup> And the gates of it shall not be closed by day; and night shall not be there.

<sup>26</sup> And they shall bring the glory and honour of folks into it.

<sup>27</sup> Neither any man *[or anything]* defouled, and doing abomination and leasing, shall enter into it; but they that be written in the book of life of the lamb.

## CHAPTER 22

<sup>1</sup> And he showed to me a flood of quick water, shining as crystal, coming forth of the seat of God, and of the lamb,

<sup>2</sup> in the middle of the street of it. And on each side of the flood, the tree of life, bringing forth twelve fruits, yielding his fruit by each month; and the leaves of the tree *be* to health of folks.

<sup>3</sup> And each cursed thing shall no more be; but the seats of God and of the lamb shall be in it. And the servants of him shall serve him.

<sup>4</sup> And they shall see his face, and his name *[shall be]* in their foreheads.

<sup>5</sup> And night shall no more be, and they shall not have need to the light of a lantern, neither to light of the sun; for the Lord God shall lighten *[or shall light]* them, and they shall reign into worlds of worlds.

<sup>6</sup> And he said to me, These words be most faithful and true. And the Lord God of spirits of prophets sent his angel,

to show to his servants, what things it behooveth to be done soon.

<sup>7</sup> And lo! I come swiftly. Blessed is he, that keepeth the words of prophecy of this book.

<sup>8</sup> And I *am* John, that heard and saw these things. And after that I had heard and seen, I felled down, to worship before the feet of the angel, that showed to me these things.

<sup>9</sup> And he said to me, See thou, that thou do not; for I am a servant with thee, and of thy brethren, prophets, and of them that keep the words of prophecy of this book; worship thou God.

<sup>10</sup> And he said to me, Sign, *or seal*, thou not the words of prophecy of this book; for the time is nigh.

<sup>11</sup> He that annoyeth, annoy he yet; and he that is in filths, wax he foul yet; and a just man, be [*he*] justified yet; and the holy, be [*he*] hallowed yet.

<sup>12</sup> Lo! I come soon, and my meed with me, to yield to each man after his works.

<sup>13</sup> I am alpha and omega, the first and the last, beginning and end.

<sup>14</sup> Blessed *be* they, that wash their stoles, that the power of them be in the tree of life, and enter by the gates into the city.

<sup>15</sup> For withoutforth [*shall be shut*] hounds, and witches, and unchaste men, and man-quellers, and serving to idols, and each that loveth and maketh leasing *or lies*.

<sup>16</sup> I Jesus sent mine angel, to witness to you these things in churches. I am the root and kin of David, and the shining morrow star.

<sup>17</sup> And the Spirit and the spouses [*or the wife*] say, Come thou. And he that heareth, say, Come thou; and he that thirsteth, come; and he that will, take he freely the water of life.

<sup>18</sup> And I witness to each man hearing the words of prophecy of this book, if any man shall put to these things, God shall put on him the vengeance [*or the plagues*] written in this book.

<sup>19</sup> And if any man [*shall*] do away of the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away the part of him from the book of life, and from the holy city, and from these things that be written in this book.

<sup>20</sup> He saith, that beareth witnessing of these things, Yea, Amen. [*Lo!*] I come soon. Amen. Come thou, Lord Jesus.

<sup>21</sup> The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.